

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO




3 1761 01437148 8





PRIMITIVE PATERNITY

VOLUME I



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

The Folk-Lore Society

FOR COLLECTING AND PRINTING

RELICS OF POPULAR ANTIQUITIES, &c.

ESTABLISHED IN
THE YEAR MDCCCLXXVIII.



Alter et Idem

PUBLICATIONS
OF
THE FOLK-LORE SOCIETY

[LXV.]

[1909]

PRIMITIVE PATERNITY

THE MYTH OF SUPERNATURAL
BIRTH IN RELATION TO THE
HISTORY OF THE FAMILY

BY
EDWIN SIDNEY HARTLAND
F.S.A.
AUTHOR OF "THE LEGEND OF PERSEUS," ETC.

VOLUME I

101431
—
184110

LONDON : DAVID NUTT
AT THE SIGN OF THE PHOENIX
57-59 LONG ACRE

1909



GR
450
H3
v.1

PREFACE

IN the year 1894, in the first volume of a study of *The Legend of Perseus* (3 vols., London, D. Nutt, 1894-5-6), I examined the world-wide story-incident of Supernatural Birth. Summing up the results of the inquiry, I suggested that the incident and the actual practices and superstitions corresponding to it originated in the imperfect recognition, or rather the non-recognition, in early times of the physical relation between father and child. At that time I was not in a position to carry the conjecture further. It remained, however, in my mind as a subject for investigation. During the period that has since elapsed large contributions have been made by explorers, missionaries, and scientific anthropologists to our knowledge of savage and barbarous peoples in many parts of the world. In the light of these contributions I now venture to lay before the reader the case for the conjecture I made sixteen years ago.

The beliefs, customs, and institutions of tribes in a low degree of civilisation are our only clue to those of a more archaic condition no longer extant. They are evolved from them, and are in the last resort the outgrowth of ideas which underlay them. When, therefore, we find a belief, a custom, or an institution—still more when we find a connected series of beliefs, customs, and institutions—overspreading the lower culture we

may reasonably infer its root in ideas common to mankind and native to the primitive ancestral soil. The inference is greatly strengthened if vestigial forms are also found embedded in the culture of the higher races. It is raised to a certainty if unambiguous expression of the ideas themselves can be discovered to-day among the lower races. The advance of even the most backward from primeval savagery has been so great that a large harvest of these ideas is not to be expected. But the researches of the last few years have yielded enough, it is hoped, to afford a satisfactory solution of, among others, the problem under consideration in these volumes.

The Legend of Perseus has been out of print for several years. Consequently I have not hesitated to make use of the material comprised in the first volume. The myth of Supernatural Birth is now admitted to be in one form or another practically universal, and I have deemed it enough to present as the starting-point of the inquiry a mere summary of the stories. Of the other material I have made larger use; but its presentation has been revised, and much new and important matter has been included. The chapters that succeed, occupying the remainder of the first and the whole of the second volume, are intended to exhibit the argument from institutions and customs. Incidentally they traverse conclusions arrived at by some distinguished anthropologists on the subject of the conjugal relations of early man. But this is beside their chief object, and I have abstained from controversy.

HIGHGARTH,
GLOUCESTER,
August, 1909.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

THE STORIES

The subject proposed. Stories of supernatural birth defined. Birth as a result of eating or drinking. Birth from absorption of some portion of a dead man. Birth from smell or from simple contact with a magical substance. Mediæval and other fancies as to the Annunciation. Impregnation by wind, by bathing, by rain or sunshine, by a glance, by a wish

Pp. 1-29

CHAPTER II

MAGICAL PRACTICES TO OBTAIN CHILDREN

It is still thought possible to obtain children in the manner described in the stories. Use of vegetable substances. The Mandrake. Use of animal substances. Use of minerals. Sacred wells. Use of water and other liquids. Ceremonies to obtain a transfer of fecundity or of the life of another. Bathing or sprinkling. Puberty rites and taboos of girls considered as means to obtain, or for the moment to avoid, conception. Conception by sun, moon, stars, fire. Midsummer fires. The Luperci. Discussion of the meaning of the blows by the Luperci, and similar practices in Europe and elsewhere. Conception by the foot. The attempt to share the fecundity of another. The virtue of sacred vestments. Amulets. Contact with sacred stones, images, and other substances. Marriage rites. Jumping over a stone, broomstick, or other object. Votive offerings and the throwing of stones. Vows. Simulation. Belief in fecundation by the eye and ear and by wind. The stories beliefs and practices disclose an ancient and widespread belief that pregnancy was caused otherwise than by sexual intercourse

Pp. 30-155

CHAPTER III

TRANSFORMATION AND METEMPSYCHOSIS

Birth is often a new manifestation of a previously existing personage. Ballads and stories in which the dead manifest themselves as trees. Corresponding beliefs and practices. Transformation after death into brute-form. The converse transformation of brutes and vegetables into human beings by birth. Buddhist doctrine of Transmigration. Celtic doctrine. New birth of human beings. Belief in multiple souls. Rites to ascertain which of the ancestors has returned. Naming a child after a deceased member of the family. Rites to secure a transfer of life. Australian beliefs in re-birth. Warehouse of children. Relation between Transformation and Transmigration

Pp. 156-252

CHAPTER IV

MOTHERRIGHT

Ignorance in the lower culture on the physiology of birth. Such ignorance was once greater and more widespread than now. For many ages the social organisation of mankind would not have necessitated the concentration of thought on the problem of paternity. Descent was and by many peoples still is reckoned exclusively through the mother. The social organisation implied by motherright. Kinship is founded on a community of blood actual or imputed. The Blood-Covenant. The father not recognised in motherright as belonging to the kin. His alien position and its consequences. The Nâyars. Combat between father and son. The Blood-feud. Children the property of the kin. The *potestas* in motherright. Evolution of the family. The mutual rights and duties of the children and their mother's brother. Father a wholly subordinate person. The origin of motherright not to be found in uncertainty of paternity. Paternity in patrilineal societies

Pp. 253-325

CHAPTER I

THE STORIES

2
The subject proposed. Stories of supernatural birth defined. Birth as a result of eating or drinking. Birth from absorption of some portion of a dead man. Birth from smell or from simple contact with a magical substance. Mediæval and other fancies as to the Annunciation. Impregnation by wind, by bathing, by rain or sunshine, by a glance, by a wish.

STORIES of supernatural birth may be said to have a currency as wide as the world. Everywhere heroes (and what nation has not such heroes?) of extraordinary achievement or extraordinary qualities have been of extraordinary birth. The wonder or the veneration they inspired seems to demand that their entrance upon life, as well as their departure from the earth, should correspond with the total impression left by their career. Moreover women desirous of offspring are everywhere found to make use of means to produce conception analogous to and often identical with the means attributed to the mothers of those heroes: means that in any case are equally remote from the operations of nature. To examine these phenomena, so extended if not universal in their range, and to determine if possible alike the origin of the stories and of the customs, is the object of the following pages.

The attempts of savage and barbarous peoples to explain the existence of the universe as they conceive it, or of mankind, abound in tales of personages in human form, though often monstrous in proportions, who because they are the beginnings of the race cannot be described as issuing from birth. Thus, to give a familiar example, the giant Ymir, in the Scandinavian mythology, was produced by the melting of the primæval ice; from his sweat other beings were produced who became the progenitors of the Frost-giants; subsequently the first man and woman were formed from two pieces of wood. Cosmogonical myths of this kind are not within the scope of the present inquiry. As little have we to do with heroes who were the result of amours between women and beings of supernatural order, whether in human form or that of the lower animals. Such heroes were indeed born. As the children of gods like Zeus or Apollo they boasted a supernatural parentage. But though their fathers were no ordinary mortals the manner of their generation was regarded as taking the normal course.

Our concern is with children whose mothers gave them birth without sexual intercourse, and as the result of impregnation by means which we now know to be impossible. It will not be necessary to treat the stories at length. A summary sufficient to mark the salient points will enable us to enter upon the inquiry as to the ground of the belief which they embody. Stories which include the incident of supernatural birth may be divided into two kinds: *Märchen*, or stories told for mere pleasure without any serious credence being attached to them; and sagas, or

stories believed in as recording actual events. Between these two classes there is often no clear line of demarcation. Especially in the lowest stages of culture it is often difficult to say whether a story is regarded as a narrative of facts or not. In either case we expect to find marvels. In either case the realm in which the personages of the story live and move and have their being is beyond the realm of nature as we understand it. It is a fantastic world where magic reigns, where shape-shifting is an ordinary incident; but it is the world in which the savage dwells. For him it is hardly too much to say the laws of nature do not exist: everything depends on the volition and the might of beings conceived, whatever their outward form, in the terms of his own consciousness. In such a world events happen that we know to be impossible. The conviction of their impossibility however is arrived at only gradually; and not until intellectual evolution has reached a much higher stage can we distinguish with certainty between the *märchen* and the saga. Even then when marvels are rejected as matters of everyday occurrence they are often held to have occurred in exceptional persons, and they form the subject of many a saga sacred or profane.

In this brief account of the stories therefore I shall confine myself in the main to those I have called sagas. They are as widespread as the *märchen*; they rest upon the same foundation; they result from the same view of the universe; many of them are a part of the religious tradition of the peoples who tell them. I hope the selection which follows will present typical specimens and enable the reader to judge of the world-

wide distribution of the stories and their inexhaustible wealth.

We will take first the stories in which pregnancy is attributed to eating or drinking. Heitsi-eibib, the divine ancestor of the Hottentots, owed his birth to this cause. In one of the legends a young girl picks a kind of juicy grass, chews it, and swallows the sap. Thence becoming pregnant she gives birth to the hero. In another legend it is a cow that eats of a certain grass, and Heitsi-eibib is consequently born as a bull-calf.¹ The quasi-divine hero of the tribes of British Columbia, Yehl, was many times born. His ordinary proceeding was to transform himself into a spear of cedar, a blade of grass, a pebble, or even a drop of water. In this form he was swallowed by the lady who was destined to bear him.² The Sia, a pueblo-people of the south-west of North America, relate that their hero Poshaiyänne, was born at the pueblo of Pecos, New Mexico, of a virgin who became pregnant from eating two piñon-nuts.³ According to the sacred legends of the Hopi, another pueblo-people, a horned *Katcina*, a mythological personage, appeared in a time of religious laxity and of distress to the oldest woman of the Pátki tribe, and directed that the oldest man should go and procure a certain root and that she and a young virgin of the clan should eat of it. After a time the old woman, he said, would give birth to a son who would marry the virgin and their offspring would redeem the people. The *Katcina* was obeyed,

¹ Hahn, *Tsunigoam*, 69, 68.

² Bancroft, iii. 99, apparently quoting Holmberg, *Ethn. Sketch.*; Niblack, *Nat. Mus. Rep.* 1888, 379. The incident is very common in stories of the North-West.

³ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 59.

and the old woman brought into the world a son with two horns upon his head. But the design of the supernatural power was frustrated by the people, who called the child a monster and killed it. The virgin also gave birth later to a daughter, whose offspring, twins, were sacred beings known as *Alósaka*. They however in their turn were put to death, and the miseries of the people continued.¹

Fo-hi, the founder of the Chinese Empire, was the child of a virgin named Ching-mon, who ate a certain flower found on her garment after bathing.² The ancestry of the present or Manchu dynasty is traced to a similar adventure on the part of a heavenly maiden who found on the skirt of her raiment after bathing a red fruit, placed there by a magpie, and having eaten it was delivered of a son ordained by heaven "to restore order to disturbed nations."³ The story in one form or other is in fact quite common in the east of Asia. Not less common is it in India. Of the birth of Rájâ Rasálû, the hero of the Panjâb, we are told that Rânî Lonân, one of the two wives of Rájâ Sâlbâhan of Siâlkot, fell in love with her stepson Pûran and because he did not return her passion traduced him to her husband, who cut off his hands and feet and threw him into a well. Pûran however survived this treatment, and being rescued by the Guru Gorakhnâth, a Brahman of great sanctity, became a celebrated fakir. Not knowing who he really was

¹ Fewkes, *Amer. Anthr. N.S.*, i. 536.

² De Charencey, 204, citing Barrow's *Voyage to China*.

³ James, 31 note, citing a Chinese chronicle; De Charencey, 185, citing Köppen, *Die Religion des Buddha*; and 195, citing Amyot, *Ambassade mémorable à l'Empereur du Japon*. The story, however, is not Japanese.

the rânî and her husband desirous of offspring came to him to pray for a son. He induced her to confess her crime ; then revealing himself he gave her a grain of rice to eat and told her she would bear a son who would be learned and brave and holy. That son was Râjâ Rasâlû, a monarch identified with the historical Sri Syâlapati Deva.¹ The birth of an older but equally famous hero, Visvámitra, is attributed by the *Vishnu Purana* to a similar cause.² Gûgâ Pîr, the Mahratta saint, was born of a mother whose husband had deserted her, but who received from Gorakhnâth some resin to be eaten mixed with milk. Her father's mare Lillî, licking round the basin of resin and milk, also became pregnant and foaled the winged stallion Lîlá, afterwards Gûgâ's steed. We need not pursue Gûgâ's wonderful career in detail. Suffice it to say that this mode of propagating the species was a family specialty. His mother's sister brought into the world two sons from two barleycorns given her by the Gurû Gorakhnâth ; and he himself was childless until his guardian deity bestowed upon him a similar gift, by means of which he obtained from his wife a son and from his favourite mare the famous steed Javâdiyâ.³ The traditions of the Malayan Minangkabau population of the Highlands of Sumatra speak of a particular kind of cocoa-nut called *niver balai* that had the property of causing pregnancy without fleshly intercourse. The hero Tjindoer Matö was thus called in allusion to this immaculate generation.⁴

¹ Temple, *Leg. Panj.* i. 1 ; Steel, 247.

² Wilson, *V. P.* 399 (*l. iv. c. 7*).

³ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* iii. 96 (par. 205) ; Elliot, *N. W. Prov.* i. 256 ; Crooke, *F. L. N. Ind.* i. 211.

⁴ Van der Toorn, *Bijdragen*, xxxix. 78.

Such marvellous tales are not confined to transactions of the distant past. Mabâ' Seyôn is a saint whose deeds are related in an Ethiopic manuscript of the fifteenth century, probably written very shortly after his death. His miracles were numerous. A barren woman came to him one day for help, promising that if the Lord gave her a son she would dedicate him as an offering to the commemoration of the Redeemer. The saint "gave her some of the bread of the commemoration of the Redeemer, and she ate it," and the saint blessed her. So successful was the performance that in two years she returned with two children.¹ A satiric poet of the court of Earl Eric Hakonsson, a Norse ruler who assisted in the conquest of England by Sweyn and Cnut, recounts in one of his lampoons that a nameless lady ate "a fish like a stone-perch, soft of flesh," which "came ashore with a tide on the sand." The outward and visible signs of her resulting pregnancy are described with gusto. She gave birth to a boy, "a currish morsel."² This lampoon, if not based on actual gossip respecting the persons intended to be satirised, is at all events evidence that such a birth was not then reckoned impossible. A story current in Iceland in the middle of the last century witnesses to the same belief. It is that a lady of rank who desired to have a child laid herself down at a brook, on the advice of three women who appeared to her in a dream, and drank from it. In so doing she contrived

¹ *Lady Meux Manuscript No. 1. The Lives of Mabâ' Seyôn and Gabra Krastôs.* The Ethiopic Texts edited with an English translation by E. A. Wallis Budge, M.A. Litt.D. (London, 1898, 64.)

² *Corp. Poet. Bor.* ii. 109.

that a trout came swimming straight into her mouth. She swallowed the fish and her wish was by that means fulfilled.¹ The three women of the lady's dream are obviously mythological figures of pre-Christian antiquity. In the modern European *märchen* belonging to the cycle of Perseus, one of the favourite agencies of conception is a fish. The typical story comes from Brittany, and is called the King of the Fishes. A poor and childless fisherman once caught in his net a fish whose scales shone like gold. It prayed for life, which was granted and the fisherman obtained a bountiful catch in exchange. But the fisherman's wife desired to eat the King of the Fishes; and when her husband again caught it he was not to be moved by its supplications. The fish then directed its captor to give its head to his wife to eat, and to throw the scales into a corner of his garden and cover them with earth, promising that his wife should give birth to three beautiful boys with stars on their foreheads, and that from its scales should grow three rose-trees corresponding to the three children. One of the rose-trees was to belong to each of the boys and to become his life-token, so that when he should be in danger of death his tree should wither.² In some variants parts of the fish are to be given to the fisherman's mare and his bitch, which accordingly bring forth young to the number of the children. Beyond the limits of Europe the Tupis of Brazil in one of their sacred legends represent a supernatural being as fertilising a young virgin by the gift of a mysterious fish;³ and in

¹ Bartels, *Zeits. Ethnol.* xxxii. 54, citing Arnason.

² Sébillot, *Contes Pop.* i. 124 (Story No. 18).

³ Denis, 94.

Samoa a similar incident occurs.¹ Flesh-meat is more common as a fecundating substance in North American tradition.² It is significant in this connection that the ordinary mode of wooing in many of the North American tribes was by gift of the produce of the chase.

In Ireland the legends of supernatural birth date back to heathen times although not put into writing until after Christianity had become the dominant religion. We have space only for one or two. In the saga entitled "Bruden da Derga," Etáin, the daughter of a more famous heroine of the same name, was married to Cormac, King of Ulaid. Being barren she applied to her mother, who made her some pottage. She ate it; but the result was not wholly satisfactory, for she gave birth to a daughter, whereas Cormac desired a son. No other child was born; consequently he forsook her.³ The births both of Conchobar and his sister's son Cuchulainn were ascribed to their mothers having drunk water and swallowed worms in the draught.⁴ Of another sister of Conchobar it is quaintly said that she "suffered from hesitation of

¹ von Bulow, *Internat. Arch.* xii. 67.

² Boas, *Kathlamet Texts*, 155; Kroeber, *Univ. Cal. Pub.* iv. Amer. Arch. 199, 243; Catlin, i. 179 (*cf.* Will and Spenden, *Peabody Mus. Papers*, iii. 139, 142).

³ The Sack of Dá Derga's Hostel. Translated by Prof. Whitley Stokes, *Rev. Celt.* xxii. 18.

⁴ *Rev. Celt.* vi. 179; D'Arbois de Jubainville, *Épopée Celt.* 16; both translating MSS. of the fourteenth century now in the library of the Royal Irish Academy; *Rev. Celt.* ix. 12; D'Arbois, *op. cit.*, 37, translating *Leabhar nah Uidhre* (Book of the Dun Cow), MS. dating back to about the year 1100. According to one account however, Dechtire, Conchobar's sister, succeeded in vomiting the creature forth "and thus becoming virgin again." She then conceived in the ordinary course.

offspring, so that she bore no children." A certain Druid, however, promised her offspring if his fee were good enough. On her accepting the terms, he fared with her to the well and there he "sang spells and prophecies over the spring. And he said: 'Wash thyself therewith and thou will bring forth a son; and no child will be less pious than he to his mother's kin to wit, the Connaught-men.' Then the damsel drank a draught out of the well, and with the draught she swallowed a worm, and the worm was in the hand of the boy [*sc.* whom she thereby conceived] as he lay in his mother's womb, and it pierced the hand and consumed it." The boy was Conall Cernach.¹ As Irish civilisation advanced, however, such incidents were frequently softened into mere dreams. Thus the Irish life of Saint Molasius of Devenish preserved to us in a manuscript written probably from dictation in the sixteenth century presents the holy man's mother as dreaming "that she got seven fragrant apples and the last apple of them that she took into her hand her grasp could not contain it for its size; gold (as it seemed to her) was not lovelier than the apple." Her husband interprets the dream of "an offspring excellent and famous, with which the mouths of all Ireland shall be filled:" an interpretation justified of course by the saint's birth. We can hardly doubt that as the story was originally told Molasius was the direct result of his mother's eating an apple. The same manuscript indeed contains an account of his blessing a cup of water and giving it to a childless woman to drink with

¹ Nutt, *Bran*, ii. 74, quoting translation in Whitley Stokes' *Irische Texte* of an eleventh-twelfth century work.

intent that she should thereby become pregnant ; and "the very noble bishop Finnacha" was the result.¹

But not merely animal and vegetable substances, even stones have been described as fructifying women. We have already found an instance of this in the traditions of the north-western tribes of Canada. The Aztecs too attributed the birth of their famous god Quetzalcoatl to a precious green stone, identified by Captain Bourke with the turquoise, but perhaps rather jade, which his mother Chimalma found one day and swallowed.² A pearl fell into the bosom of a girl and she swallowed it, as the Chinese tell, with the result that a boy was born (according to one version, from her breast) who afterwards became the great emperor Yu.³ In the extreme north-east of Asia in a lower stage of culture than the Chinese or the Aztecs, the Koryaks report similar incidents. For example, two incautious ladies, we are told, found an arrow and ate it. Thereafter one of them gave birth to a son with five fingers, and the other to a daughter with only three.⁴ In India the Jain *Kathākoṣa*, or Treasury of Stories, relates that a female servant who had become a devout convert having died, "her soul was conceived again" by Jayā the wife of King Vijaya-varman. "At that moment the Queen saw a flaming fire enter her mouth. The next morning she told the King, who said: 'Queen, you will have a truly

¹ *Silva Gad.* ii. 19, 23, translating MS. in the British Museum. Stories of dreams of this kind are common as an alternative to the more materialistic concept. The dreams of Athelstan's mother and Cyrus' mother are the best-known examples of a numerous class.

² *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* ix. 590, quoting Mendieta.

³ De Charencey, 202.

⁴ Jochelson, *Jesup Exped.* vi. 214.

remarkable son.'” And the epithet was certainly justified by the account which follows of that son's adventures in the process of securing a harem.¹ The Celtic saint Aidan or Maedoc was born of a star which fell into his mother's mouth while she slept.²

In various parts of the world stories have been told of women who have been fertilised by semen imbibed through the mouth or even through the nose. An Irish manuscript of the beginning of the fifteenth century tells us that Cred the daughter of Ronán, King of Leinster, gathered cress on which the *sperma genitale* of a certain robber Findach by name had just fallen and ate it, “and thereof was born the ever-living Boethín.”³ We need not dwell on this unsavoury subject. Let it suffice to say that stories containing this incident are found among the Salish of North America, among the ancient Peruvians, and repeatedly in India. The Gipsies of Southern Hungary tell a tale of a woman who was transformed into a fish as a punishment for repulsing Saint Nicholas when he appeared to her as a beggar. She was condemned to remain in that form until impregnated by her husband. This was effected by devouring a leaf on which some of his spittle had fallen.⁴

The drinking of water or some other liquid is a frequent cause of impregnation. The birth of Zoroaster is attributed in a Parsee work of the ninth century A.D. to his mother's drinking of homa-juice and

¹ Tawney, *Kathákoça*, 64.

² *Rev. Celt.* v, 275.

³ Prof. Whitley Stokes, *Rev. Celt.* ii. 199, translating the *Leabhar breac*, a MS. now in the Royal Irish Academy.

⁴ von Wlislöcki, *Volksdicht*, 300.

cow's-milk infused with his guardian spirit and glory.¹ The mother of Nanabozho, the culture-hero of the Lenape of the Delaware, became pregnant in consequence of drinking out of a creek.² One rainy autumnal night a woman of Annam put an earthen vessel to receive the drippings of her roof and saw a star fall into the vessel. She drank the water and became pregnant. She was delivered of three eggs from which three serpents were hatched. They were heavenly genii, and two of them are still worshipped as the tutelary divinities of the village in which they were born.³

Almost any portion of a human body may be possessed of fructifying power. The *märchen* attribute it variously to a hermit's heart cooked and eaten, to the gratings of a bone found in the churchyard or to the ashes of a burnt skull. According to a manuscript in the Khedivial Library at Cairo a bone crushed in the hand of a man and thrown on the dunghheap grew up into so fine a tree that no one had ever seen the like. His daughter desired to see this tree. Drawing nigh to it she embraced it and kissing it took a leaf in her mouth. As she chewed it she found the taste sweet and agreeable and accordingly swallowed it. At the same instant she conceived by the will of God.⁴ The analogy of other stories leads to the belief that the tree here is neither more nor less than a transformation of the man from whose bone it grew. The oldest known story wherein transformation of this kind forms an incident is the Egyptian tale of the Two

¹ *Sacred Books*, v. 187. See a curious tradition concerning the birth of St. John the Baptist, cited by Saintyves, *Les Vierges Mères*, 263.

² Brinton, *Lenape*, 131.

³ Landes, *Annam.*, 12.

⁴ Oestrup, 26.

Brothers. The manuscript now in the British Museum was written by the scribe Enna, or Ennana, and belonged to the monarch Seti II., of the nineteenth dynasty, before he came to the throne. We have the story therefore in the shape it bore about the earlier half of the thirteenth century before Christ. It is long, and I have only space for the material points. Bata, the hero, is betrayed by his wife, who becomes the King's mistress and by her advice causes the king to put her husband to death. Bata's brother, however, restores him to life, and he assumes the form of a great bull with all the sacred marks. In this form he obtains an opportunity to make himself known to his wife. She for her part was by no means pleased to see him; and having wheedled an oath out of the king that he would grant her whatsoever she asked, she demanded the bull's liver to eat. As he was being slain two drops of his blood fell upon the King's two door-posts, and forthwith grew up two mighty persea-trees. One of these trees spoke to the King's mistress, accusing her of her crimes and declaring: "I am Bata, I am living still, I have transformed myself." She persuaded the King to cut the trees down; but while she stood by to watch, a splinter flew off and entering her mouth rendered her pregnant. In due time she gave birth to a son, who was none other than a new manifestation of Bata. When at the King's death he succeeded to the throne he summoned the nobles and councillors; his wife was brought to him and he had a reckoning with her.¹

¹ *Records of the Past*, ii. 137; Maspero, 3; Le Page Renouf, *Proc. Soc. Bibl. Arch.* xi. 184. Bata and his brother were worshipped at Cynopolis. The former, whose name means "the soul

Bata's metamorphoses are parallel to a long series of similar adventures found in *märchen* and saga all over the world. For the present we confine ourselves to a few examples in which birth is occasioned by a woman's consumption of some portion of a dead human body. The twin heroes of the Bakairi of Central Brazil owed their origin to a woman who was married to a jaguar. In her husband's house she found many finger-bones; for the jaguar was accustomed to kill and eat Bakairi and to make his arrow-heads from their finger-bones. Two of these bones she swallowed; and the story expressly says that it was from them and not from her husband that she became pregnant.¹ Among the legends current in classical times of the birth of Bacchus was one that claimed him as the son of Jupiter and Proserpine. According to this story he was torn in pieces by the Titans, but his heart was pounded up and given by Jove in a drink to Semele, whence he was born again of her.² The story with some slightly different details was told in connection with the Orphic mysteries in order to identify Zagreus and Dionysus but it is probably in origin independent of them and was only seized upon and adapted to their requirements as stories have been in all ages and by all religions. At all events, as Prof. Jevons observes, the incident "in which some one by swallowing a portion of the bodily substance of the hero becomes the parent of the hero in one of his re-births . . . must have been familiar to the average Greek, else it would not have proved so successful as

of the loaves," seems to have been identified with Osiris, and the latter with Anubis (*Rev. Hist. Rel.* lvii. 89).

¹ von den Steinen, 372.

² Hyginus, fab. 167.

an explanation of the fundamental identity of Zagreus and Dionysus.”¹ The relics of Christian saints and martyrs have a special procreative virtue. A Nestorian legend edited from a Syriac text by Dr. Wallis Budge relates that a certain man whose name was Zedkôï of the village of Perâth was deprived of the blessing of children. He came with his wife to Rabban Bar ‘Idtâ and with bitter and sorrowful tears besought his help. On the promise if she have three sons to give one of them to the holy man, the latter says to the woman: “My daughter, take these three little cakes of martyr’s dust and go to thy house in faith, and each day take one little cake.” Her compliance is rewarded by the birth of a son, whom she sets apart in payment of her vow, and by the subsequent birth of two more boys.² In a Breton legend the Apostle Philip is burnt to death in obeying a command of the Saviour to set fire to a chapel. “Poor Philip!” says the Saviour; “but let us see if we cannot find any remains of him, any piece of calcined bone.” He finds a piece of bone which has the shape of a soup-spoon, and puts it in his pocket. That evening He comes with Peter and John to a farmer’s house. They are well received; but there are only two spoons. The Saviour produces the bone and asks the servant-maid if the soup is good. “I think so,” she replies. “But have you tasted it?” “No.” “Then take a spoonful to see.” And He gave her a spoonful of soup, but she swallowed the bone-spoon and all. “Good God!” she exclaimed, “I have swallowed the spoon. I don’t know how that happened.” Of that spoon she became pregnant,

¹ Jevons, *Introd.* 356.

² Budge, *Rabban Hormuzd*, ii. 262.

and was turned out of the house. In a stable on the straw she gave birth to a magnificent boy who was no other than Saint Philip born again.¹

In tales of both hemispheres women are represented as conceiving by smell or by simple contact of the magical substance. When from the blood of the mutilated Agdestis a pomegranate-tree sprang up, Nana the nymph gathered and laid in her bosom some of the fruit wherewith it was laden, and hence in the belief of the Greeks, Attis was born.² Danae conceived Perseus through the shower of gold. The ancestress of one of the clans of the Lyingams in the Khasi Hills of Assam was conceived by the touch of a flower which fell on her mother as she slept.³ A legend of the island of Tanah-Papua relates that the hero Konori owed his birth to a marisbon-fruit flung on the breast of a maiden.⁴ Coatlicue, the serpent-skirted, was the mother of Huitzilopochtli, one of the great Aztec deities. A little ball of feathers floated down to her through the air. She caught it and hid it in her bosom; nor was it long before she found herself pregnant.⁵ Further north, in a Wichita tale, a man of extraordinary powers contrives that a maiden shall pick up and put in her bosom a small bone-cylinder or pipe-bone, such as used to be worn round the neck. It disappears and she becomes pregnant without

¹ Luzel, *Lég. Chrét.* i. 44.

² Arnobius, *Adv. Gentes*, v. 6; Pausanias, vii. 17 (5). According to the latter the tree was an almond-tree.

³ Gurdon, 195.

⁴ Bastian, *Indonesien*, ii. 35; cf. Featherman, *Papuo-Mel.* 43.

⁵ Bancroft, iii. 296, quoting Torquemada; Brinton, *Essays*, 94; G. Raynaud, *Rev. Hist. Rel.* xxxviii. 279, 280, quoting a hymn preserved by Sahagun.

having been embraced by a man.¹ In a Hopi story a young woman is fecundated by wet clay while she is kneading and trampling it to prepare it for making pottery.² Servius commenting on the *Æneid* has preserved the legend that Cæculus the founder of Præneste, was conceived by a spark that leaped into his mother's bosom. In India we hear of a woman who was fertilised by happening to sit down on a rock on which the childless Rajá Bhishma had lain and slept.³

More direct masculine action is sometimes invoked. The Buddhist Birth-stories comprise a narrative to which we shall have occasion to refer in another connection, wherein a childless queen is impregnated by a divine being by means of the touch of his thumb.⁴ Sagas from New Guinea and British Columbia represent impregnation as effected by the finger.⁵ The saliva of the lynx in a tale told by the Indians of Thompson River falling on a girl's navel causes conception.⁶ The Todas tell how an eagle fertilised a woman by sitting on her head. In another story a Toda divinity knocks a woman on the head with an iron stick which he habitually carries, and at once she becomes pregnant.⁷ In a Balochi tale a remarkable boy is begotten, as he himself subsequently assures his mother's husband, by the shadow of Ali, of whom the Balochis are devoted followers. The lady's husband was away at Delhi with his army. As she was one day washing her head a shadow passed in

¹ Dorsey, *Wichita*, 172.

² Voth, 155.

³ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* iii. 141 (par. 297).

⁴ *Jātaka*, v. 144 (Story No. 531).

⁵ *J. A. I.* xix. 465; Boas, *Ind. Sag.* 198.

⁶ Teit, 37

⁷ Rivers, 196, 191.

front of her and disappeared ; from that shadow the child was born.¹

Conception takes place sometimes by the hand or the foot. Hun Ahpu and Xbalanque, the twin divinities honoured by the Quiché of Central America, were born in consequence of the head of their murdered father spitting into a maiden's hand.² A similar incident is told by the people of Annam concerning an historical personage who was put to death in the year 1443 of our era.³ In China the *Shih-King* relates of Hâu-Ki, the ancestor of the kings of Kân, that his mother Kiang-Yüan was childless until she trod on a toe-print made by God. That instant she felt moved ; she conceived and at length gave birth to a son. The poet does not mention her husband, and the common Chinese tradition represents her as a virgin.⁴

Impregnation by an unusual part of the body is in fact by no means a rare incident in sacred and historical traditions. During the Middle Ages it seems to have been seriously believed—at all events the idea was current—respecting the conception of Jesus Christ. The Fathers had dwelt upon the physiological details of the Incarnation with prurient rudeness. They were as familiar with at least the negative results of the miracle, as minute and positive

¹ Dames, 138.

² *Popol Vuh*, 89. ; *Journ. Am. F. L.*, xx. 148.

³ Landes, *Annam*. 63. In two Yana myths from California a child originates directly from masculine spittle without female intervention (Curtin, *Creation Myths*, 300, 348).

⁴ *Sacred Books*, iii. 396. There seems some ambiguity in the word translated God (see *Rev. Hist. Rel.* xli. 111 ; xliii. 137). The historian Se-ma-thsien, who flourished in the middle of the second century B.C., relates that Kiang Yüan became pregnant by walking on the footsteps of a giant (De Charencey, 199).

in their descriptions, as if they had made an obstetrical examination. In their zeal for the virginity of the Saviour's mother they insisted that he was conceived and born without any physical changes in the body that bore him.¹ This naturally led to speculation on the manner of this conception. Grave divines like Saint Augustine asserted that "God spake by the angel and the Virgin was impregnated through the ear."² The hymn of Saint Bonaventura phrases it :

Gaude Virgo, mater Christi,
Quæ per aurem concepisti,
Gabriele nuntio.

Painters represented the Holy Ghost as entering at Mary's ear in the shape of a dove, or hovering over her while a ray of light along which the babe is descending passes from his beak to her ear.³ Other opinions, however, seem to have contended for popularity with this. In the chapel of the Palazzo Pubblico at Siena, for example, are benches carved by Domenico di Niccolò, the backs of which are inlaid with intarsia work illustrating the Nicene Creed. One of them shows the Annunciation with a full-formed babe descending in rays from the Father's outstretched finger. The Church of the Magdalen at Aix in Provence contains a picture, attributed to

¹ Lucius, *Anfänge*, 427. The context of the passage just cited from the *Shih King* asserts the same phenomenon of Hâu Kî's birth: "There was no bursting nor rending, no injury, no hurt; showing how wonderful he would be."

² Several passages from the Fathers are collected by Maury, *Lég. Pieuses*, 179 note.

³ Lecky, *Rationalism*, i. 232; Elworthy, *Evil Eye*, 322. The hymn was popular, whether written by the gentlest or the most arrogant of mediæval saints.

Albert Dürer, wherein waves of glory descend from God the Father, and in the midst of them a microscopic babe floats down upon the Virgin. These works of art leave the precise channel of impregnation vague. They embody an opinion which seems to have been common in the fifteenth century, namely, that Our Lord entered already completely formed into the Virgin's womb—an opinion which orthodox theologians in their perfect acquaintance with the divine arrangements were able summarily to pronounce heretical. A picture by Fra Filippo Lippi, painted for Cosmo de' Medici and now in the National Gallery, exhibits the Virgin seated in a chair with her Book of Hours in her hand. The angel bows before her. Above is a right hand surrounded with clouds. A dove, cast from the hand amid circling floods of glory, is making for the Virgin's navel and is about to enter it; while she, bending forward, curiously surveys it. So Buddha in the form of a white elephant entered his mother's right side.¹ The parallel is instructive. Mohammedan tradition, it may be added, ascribes the miraculous conception by the Virgin to Gabriel's having opened the bosom of her shift and breathed upon her womb.² In like manner one of the variant legends of the birth of the Aztec divinity, Quetzalcoatl, relates that the Lord of Existence, Tonacatecutli appeared to Chimalma and breathed upon her,

¹ *Sacred Books*, xix. 2; Rhys Davids, *Birth Stories*, 63, translating the *Nidāna Kathā*; Id. *Buddhism*, 183. In the earlier accounts the incident appears only as a dream; later it is soberly related as a fact. A similar story is told in China of Laotzü; but it is probably borrowed from Buddhist tradition.

² Sale, *Koran*, note on ch. xix. citing Arab authors.

thereby quickening life within her, so that she bore Quetzalcoatl.¹

Wind has been deemed sufficient to cause the birth of gods and heroes. The examples most familiar to us are those of Hera, who conceived Hephaistos without male concurrence by simply inhaling the wind, and of the maiden (in Longfellow's poem called *Wenonah*) who was quickened by the west wind and bore Michabo, the Algonkin hero better known to us as Hiawatha. The incident appears in the mythology of more than one American people. In the Finnish *Kalevala* the virgin Ilmatar is fructified by the east wind and gives birth to the wizard Väinämöinen.² The Minahassers of Celebes claim to be descended from a girl in primæval days who was fecundated by the west wind.³ According to the tradition current in the Luang-Sermata group of islands in the Moluccas the earth and the sky were once nearer together than they are now. The sky was then inhabited, but not the earth. One day, however, a sky-woman climbed down along a rotan-palm-tree whose root is still shown turned to stone on the island of Nolawna. Arrived on earth she was impregnated by the south wind and bore many children, who had access to the sky, until the Lord Sun, as the result of strife with them, cut the rotan in two.⁴ In a

¹ Brinton, *Amer. Hero-Myths*, 90; Bancroft, iii. 271; both citing the Mexican Codex in the Vatican and the Codex Telleriano-Remensis. See also Preuss, *Globus*, lxxxvi. 362, who claims that according to Mexican belief the masculine breath was necessary to conception.

² *Kalevala*, runes i. xlv.; cf. Abercromby, *Finns*, i. 316, 318, 322.

³ J. A. T. Schwarz, *Int. Arch.* xviii. 59.

⁴ Riedel, 312.

Samoa tale a snipe is fecundated in this manner, and bears a daughter.¹

Stories of conception by bathing have been seriously believed alike in the Old and New worlds. A Zulu saga represents a king's daughters as bathing in a pool in the river. The youngest, a mere child, comes out with breasts swollen as large as a woman's. By the counsel of the old men she is driven away. After wandering from place to place she gives birth to a boy who grows up a wise doctor. From what is said of his beneficent deeds it has been conjectured that we have here a corrupted account of Our Lord's birth, derived possibly from the Portuguese.² There is however no evidence to support this improbable suggestion: the story in all its details is purely native. The Black Kirghiz of Central Asia asserted that their great foremother was a princess who became pregnant by bathing in a foam-covered lake.³ Some of the Algonkins traced the lineage of mankind from two young squaws who swimming in the sea were impregnated by the foam and produced a boy and girl.⁴ Virtually the same incident appears not infrequently in North American tradition. The Yurupari of South America relate a story of some women who were forbidden by an old wizard to bathe in a certain holy pool. They disobey and are fertilised by his semen which is mingled with the water.⁵ The same incident was part of the religious belief of the ancient Persians. Three drops of the seed of Zoroaster, we are told in

¹ *Int. Arch.* xvi. 90.

² Callaway, *Tales*, 335.

³ De Charencey, 184, citing Girard de Rialle, *Mémoire sur l'Asie Centrale*.

⁴ Featherman, *Aoneo-Mar.* 80.

⁵ Ehrenreich, 47.

their sacred books, fell from him. They are preserved by the agency of angels and at the appointed time a maid bathing in the lake Kâsava will come in contact with it, will conceive by it and bring forth Saoshyant, the Saviour who is to reduce all peoples under the yoke of the true religion and prepare the world for the general resurrection.¹ In the twelfth century the Moorish philosopher Averrhoes of Cordova related, as having actually occurred, a case of a woman who became pregnant in a bath by attracting the semen of a man bathing near. In Christian Europe, it is needless to say, parthenogenesis was long held possible. Controversy on the subject was lively even in the seventeenth century.

Rain has begotten children too. Montezuma, the culture-hero of the Pueblos of New Mexico, was the son of a maiden of exquisite beauty but fastidious and coy. When the drought fell on her people she opened her granaries and fed them out of her abundance. "At last with rain fertility returned to the earth; and on the chaste Artemis of the Pueblos its touch fell too. She bore a son to the thick summer shower, and that son was Montezuma."² The Pimas of California, the Mojave of the Rio Colorado in Arizona, and the Apaches all tell the same story.³ According to the Chinese historian Ma-twan-lin, the founder of the kingdom of the Fou-yu was the wonderful son

¹ Indeed she will be thrice fecundated and bear three sons; or three maidens will be thus successively fecundated. *Sacred Books*, iv. lxxix; v. 143 note, 144; xxiii. 195, 226. See also Tavernier, *Six Voyages*, l. iv. c. viii; E. Blochet, *Rev. Hist. Rel.* xxxviii. 61.

² Bancroft, iii. 175 note; De Charencey, 235; Cushing, *Zuñi F. T.*

³ Payne, i. 414 note; *Journ. Am. F. L.* ii. 178.

of a woman on whom, so she said, a vapour about the size of an egg descended from the sky and caused her pregnancy.¹

So also the rays of the sun fertilise women. Perhaps this was the original form of the story of Danae : the incident appears in several modern European *märchen* which are variants of that story. In China impregnation by the sun seems to have been a common fate of the mothers of distinguished emperors.² A Japanese legend tells of a poor maiden, into whose body as she slept by the shore of a lagoon the rays of the sun drove like the shafts from a celestial bow and caused her to be pregnant. She was delivered of a red jewel which, acquired at length by the chief's son, was changed into a fair girl and became his wife.³ A Siamese legend reported by a Jesuit father in the seventeenth century attributes the birth of the deity Sommonocodon (an obvious form of Buddha) to the same cause.⁴ The Admiralty Islanders deduce the descent of mankind from a woman who was fecundated by the sun.⁵ The Samoan saga of the invention of the fish-hook relates that a woman was fructified by the rays of the rising sun and directed by a sunbeam to call the child Aloaloalela.⁶ Among the Pueblo peoples of North America the tale recurs more than once. In all cases the offspring are twins, who are benefactors of their tribe.⁷ The Kwakiutl

¹ De Charencey, 188, citing the Marquis d'Hervey-Saint-Denis.

² Instances are collected by De Charencey, 208, 203.

³ *Rev. Hist. Rel.* lii. 43 note, 46 note.

⁴ *Second Voyage du Père Tachard*, 247.

⁵ *Anthropos*, ii. 938.

⁶ *Int. Arch.* xv. 170.

⁷ Matthews, *Navaho Leg.* 105, 231; Fewkes, *Journ. Am. F. L.* viii. 132; Cushing, *Zuñi F. T.* 431; *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 43.

Phaethon named Born-to-be-the-Sun was begotten by the sun's suddenly shining on the small of a woman's back.¹ A hero of the Skidi Pawnee of the plains was the offspring not of the sun but of a passing meteor that flashed upon a maiden at night while her father and mother were standing on guard beside her.² In Egypt Apis, the sacred bull of Memphis, was believed to have been begotten by a blaze of light descending from heaven (according to Plutarch, from the moon) upon the cow which was to become his dam.³

Analogous to this method of impregnation is the glance of a divine or quasi-divine being. To this cause in Kirghiz tradition was ascribed the birth of the famous Genghis Khan.⁴ According to orthodox belief in India Parvati, the consort of Siva, was conceived by a look and spit forth upon the world. The Brahmans have a legend whereby the Musahar, a Dravidian jungle-tribe in the eastern part of the United Provinces, descend from a maiden who waited on a certain hermit. Siva visited the hermit in disguise and his eye fell on the girl. From that glance she became pregnant, and the twin children, boy and girl, whom she bore were the ancestors of the Musahar.⁵ Similar incidents are reported in legends from Further India and the Marquesas.⁶ The culture-

¹ Boas and Hunt, *Jesup Exped.* x. 80.

² Dorsey, *Skidi Pawnee*, 307.

³ Herod. iii. 28; Mela, i. 9; Ælian, *De Nat. Anim.* xi. 10; Plut. *De Iside*, 43.

⁴ Radloff, iii. 82.

⁵ Crooke, *Tribes and Castes*, iv. 16, quoting *Calcutta Rev.* lxxxvi. 15.

⁶ De Charencey, 210, citing Father Giov. Fil. Marini; Southey, *Commonpl. Book*, iv. 41, quoting Picart; Ellis, *Polyn. Res.* i. 262.

hero and creator (or rather transformer) of the Hupa of California fertilised two women by his look. The incident is related not merely in the sacred narrative, but also in a charm used to facilitate childbirth.¹ The Yana, another Californian tribe, tell of two sisters each of whom gave birth to a boy in consequence of the chicken-hawk's son's looking at them through his fingers.² At Rome the birth of Servius Tullius was by tradition imputed to a look. His mother, Ocrisia, was a slave of Tanaquil the wife of Tarquinius Priscus. The likeness of a phallus appeared on the hearth; and she, who was sitting before it, arose pregnant of the future king. The household Lar was deemed his father, in confirmation of which a lambent flame was seen about the child's head as he lay asleep.³

Numerous *märchen* found throughout the continent of Europe belonging to the cycle of the Lucky Fool, represent conception as the result of the utterance of a wish by a man. The power to wish with effect is bestowed sometimes by a supernatural being, sometimes by one of the lower animals. But in a story from Damascus a supernatural being himself is by this means the father of the child.⁴ So in a saga of the Wishosk of California a supernatural being bearing the euphonious name of Gudatrigakwitl, who was as near an approach to a savage creator as can be found, seems to have formed everything by a wish.

¹ Goddard, *Hupa*, 126, 279.

² Curtin, *Creation Myths*, 348.

³ Pliny, *Nat. Hist.* xxxvi. 70. Ovid (*Fasti*. vi. 629) and Arnobius (*Adv. Gent.* v. 18) regard Ocrisia as not quite so innocent. According to the former, Vulcan it was who was the father. Livy (i. 39) rationalises the tale; Dionysius of Halicarnassus and Plutarch add pomp and circumstance.

⁴ Oestrup, 57 (Story No. 3).

Afterwards he went about and when he saw a woman and wished her to be pregnant, forthwith she conceived.¹ Sometimes a wish uttered by the woman herself has the same effect. Dr. Paton reports two Greek tales from the Ægean, in one of which a woman wishes for a child "were it but a laurel-berry," in the other for "a son even though he were a donkey." In both the wish is granted literally.² The might of a curse or any other verbal charm is one of the commonplaces of folklore. It is deeply rooted in savage belief, where the mere expression or even the formation without expression of a wish is sufficient to obtain the result. Assyrian tablets and Egyptian hieroglyphs yield incantations without number. The repetition of these formulæ is supposed to produce the effect desired. Virtue, or to use a Melanesian term *mana*, goes out from the speaker or the chanter, or the person who wills the event; and the object is attained. Stories of pregnancy caused by a wish are merely examples of incantation employed for a particular purpose. The power which animates the form of words is magical, that is to say, supranormal; it is *mana*.

The tales of Supernatural Birth are practically inexhaustible. In the foregoing pages I have done no more than select and summarise a few belonging to various types within the limit of our inquiry, namely, narratives of births independent of sexual intercourse but the result of means we now know to be inadequate and inappropriate for the reproduction of mankind. It is not too much to say that the myth of Supernatural Birth as thus defined is worldwide. Efforts have often

¹ Kroeber, *Journ. Am. F. L.* xviii. 96.

² *F. L.* xi. 339; xii. 320.

been made to prove that it has travelled from one centre and thence become diffused throughout the earth. Such efforts are generally connected with a desire to uphold the truth of divine revelation, and consequently to trace the tale to a corrupted form of Hebrew-Christian tradition. They are doomed to failure. The myth is too far-spread—what is more important, it is much too deeply rooted in the savage belief and practices of both hemispheres—to be accounted for by the plain and easy theory of borrowing. This I shall proceed to show in the next chapter.

CHAPTER II

MAGICAL PRACTICES TO OBTAIN CHILDREN

It is still thought possible to obtain children in the manner described in the stories. Use of vegetable substances. The Mandrake. Use of animal substances. Use of minerals. Sacred wells. Use of water and other liquids. Ceremonies to obtain a transfer of fecundity or of the life of another. Bathing or sprinkling. Puberty rites and taboos of girls considered as means to obtain, or for the moment to avoid, conception. Conception by sun, moon, stars, fire. Midsummer fires. The Lupercal. Discussion of the meaning of the blows by the Luperci, and similiar practices in Europe and elsewhere. Conception by the foot. The attempt to share the fecundity of another. The virtue of sacred vestments. Amulets. Contact with sacred stones, images, and other substances. Marriage rites. Jumping over a stone, broomstick, or other object. Votive offerings and the throwing of stones. Vows. Simulation. Belief in fecundation by the eye and ear and by wind. The stories, beliefs, and practices disclose an ancient and widespread belief that pregnancy was caused otherwise than by sexual intercourse.

SINCE then, amid all differences of race and culture, birth has thus been held, broadly speaking over the whole world, to have been caused on various occasions in the marvellous ways enumerated in the foregoing chapter, it is natural to ask whether it has also been thought possible still to make effectual use of such means to produce pregnancy in barren women. The

answer is, that it has been, and still is, thought possible. In other words, the traditions of past miracles are organically connected in the popular mind with practices expressly calculated to produce repetitions of those miracles. It will be observed, however, that parthenogenesis is often spoken of in the stories; whereas, for the most part, the object of the practices I am about to describe is to promote conception by women who are in the habit of having sexual intercourse. The distinction is often immaterial. In the stage of civilisation, whether among a barbarous or savage people, or among the more backward classes of modern Europe, wherein the stories are told and the practices obtain, medicine and surgery are not as yet separated from magic, nor is there any clear boundary in the mind between the natural and the supernatural. We cannot, therefore, speak positively as to the meaning and intention of all the practices. But it is clear that a large number of them, as well as of the stories, imply, if we are not told in so many words, that the origin of the child afterwards born is not the semen received in the act of coition, but the drug or the magical potency of the ceremony or the incantation. In the stories, especially those that have reached us from a comparatively developed civilisation, this is often emphasised by the allegation of the mother's virginity. Among savages and very commonly among peoples whose civilisation is low, though they may be above the status of actual savagery, virginity is of little account, and maidenhood, except of mere infants, is practically unknown. But the fact that the failure of the ordinary means of reproduction in these circumstances leads to the trial of other methods presupposes

a faith in the latter as an efficient means to the end. And such means are used not merely in combination with, but in many cases independently of, sexual intercourse.

One of the favourite methods of supernatural impregnation in the stories is by eating some fruit or herb. Nor is this method by any means neglected in practice. The maxim attributed to the Druids leaps to the mind, namely, that the powder of mistletoe makes women fruitful. In this form it is perhaps apocryphal; but Pliny records their belief that a decoction of mistletoe gives fecundity to all barren animals; and in the book of medical recipes deemed to be derived from the ancient Physicians of Myddfai in Carmarthenshire and printed in the year 1861 from a Welsh manuscript bearing date in 1801, we find it stated that such a decoction causes fruitfulness of body and the getting of children.¹ The same virtue is ascribed to the plant by the Ainu of Japan, who hold it in peculiar veneration and among whom barren women have been known to eat it in order to bear children.² We are not called upon to decide whether in the Welsh book, the virtues of the magical plant have faded into merely natural efficacy. Two manuscripts are printed in the volume. The earlier includes two recipes for the cure of sterility in women, apparently regarded as a disease to be dealt with by ordinary medicaments.³ On the other hand, in the

¹ Pliny, xvi. 95; *Meddygon Myddfai*, 269. The Physicians of Myddfai were of supernatural descent, and their knowledge and skill were attributed in the first instance to their fairy ancestress. Both MSS. comprised in the volume sadly need careful reprinting and proper editing.

² Batchelor, 222.

³ *Meddygon Myddfai*, 7, 27, 45, 76.

later manuscript something more than the light of common day still glorifies the rosemary. Among other things we are told that to carry a piece of this plant is to keep every evil spirit at a distance, and that it has all the virtues of the stone called jet. It was because it was obnoxious to evil spirits that it was used at funerals. But it was not only used at funerals. There is a story told by an old writer of a widower who wished to be married again on the day of his former wife's funeral, because the rosemary employed at the funeral could be used for the wedding also. For its use at weddings there was an additional reason which may be inferred from the Welsh manuscript, where it is prescribed as a remedy for barrenness.¹ For the same purpose it was administered elsewhere by physicians in the seventeenth century with grains of mastic,² and it appears to have a reputation still in some parts of Belgium.³

We turn to less ambiguous proceedings. Among the ancient Medes, Persians and Bactrians the juice of the sacred soma was prescribed to procure for unproductive women fair children and a pure succession.⁴ Thus the birth of Zoroaster himself was, as we have seen, believed to have been caused.⁵ One of the rules for the performance of the Vedic domestic ceremonies,

¹ *Meddygon Myddfai*, 263; Friend, 113, 124, 581. Compare the parallel uses of rue (i. *Arch. Religionsw.* 108; Höfler, *Volksmed.* 104).

² Ploss, *Weib*, i. 434. Some of the many similar prescriptions by physicians and in folk-medicine are given in the context. A Gipsy charm quoted by Leland from Dr. von Wislocki prescribes oats to be given to a mare out of an apron or gourd, with an incantation expressly bidding her "Eat, fill thy belly with young!" (*Gip: Sorc.* 84).

³ *Am Urquell*, vi. 218.

⁴ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 431, citing Duncker.

⁵ *Supra*, p. 12.

given in the *Grihya-Sûtras*, directs the householder who does not study the *Upanishad* treating of the rules for securing conception, the male gender of the child, and so forth, to give his wife in the third month of her pregnancy, after she has fasted, in curds from a cow which has a calf of the same colour as the dam, two beans and a barleycorn for each handful of curds. Then he is to ask her: "What dost thou drink?" To which she is to reply: "Generation of a male child." When the curds and the question and response have been thrice repeated, he is to insert into her right nostril the sap of a herb which is not withered.¹ One can hardly doubt that this is a ceremony to procure offspring, though according to the rubric not performed until after conception has taken place. Modern Hindu women adopt various means for this purpose. "The most approved plan," says Mr. Crooke, "is to visit a shrine with a reputation for healing this class of malady. There the patient is given a cocoa-nut (which is a magic substance), a fruit or even a barleycorn from the holy of holies." A cocoa-nut in particular "is the symbol of fertility, and all through Upper India is kept in shrines and presented by the priest to women who desire children."² Every morning at the shrine of Siva an offering of milk, honey and small cakes is made. "A woman who eats these offerings is preserved from sterility"—that is, she is blessed with issue.³ In Bombay a woman who wishes for a child, especially a son,

¹ Sacred Books, xxix. 180; cf. 395.

² Crooke, *F. L. N. Ind.* i. 227; ii. 106.

³ *Mél*, viii. 109. A number of prescriptions of vegetable and animal substances from old pharmaceutical and magical sources have been collected by M. Tuchmann, *Id.* vii. 159, *sqq.*

observes the fourth lunar day of every dark fortnight as a fast and breaks her fast only after seeing the moon, generally before nine or ten o'clock in the evening. A dish of twenty-one balls of rice like marbles having been prepared, in one of which is put some salt, it is then placed before her; and if she first lay her hand on the ball containing salt, she will be blessed with a son. In this case no more is eaten; otherwise she goes on until she takes the salted ball. This is a ceremony which may only be observed a limited number of times; once, five, seven, eleven or twenty-one times. If she fail altogether to pick out the salted ball first, she is doomed to barrenness.¹ At the festival of Ráhu, the tribal god of the Dosádhs of Behar and Chota Nagpur, the priest distributes to the crowd tulsī-leaves which heal diseases else incurable, and flowers which have the virtue of causing barren women to conceive;² but whether they are to be eaten or (more probably) worn does not appear.

An old Arab work relates concerning the Isle of Women at the extremity of the Chinese Sea, that it was reported to be inhabited only by women who were fertilised by the wind, or according to another manuscript by a tree the fruit of which they ate.³ The

¹ *Ind. N. and Q.* iv. 106.

² Risley, i. 256. In ancient Greece certain flowers possessing similar virtue were sacred to Hera (Farnell, i. 182). Mr. Rose has collected (*J. A. I.* xxxv. 271 *sqq.*, 279 *sqq.*) a number of observances by Hindoo and Mohammedan women in the Panjab during and previously to pregnancy. They include in all cases the gift of fruits, rice, and sweets to the woman. Sometimes where these gifts are made to a woman already pregnant she divides them among the kinswomen (even young girls) who assemble on the occasion, the idea being as Mr. Rose with probability concludes "to convey equal fertility to all of them."

³ *L'Abrégé des Merveilles*, 71.

eating of fruit is in fact practised by Arab women to procure fecundity.¹ A Tuscan woman who desires offspring goes to a priest, gets a blessed apple and pronounces over it an invocation to Saint Anne.² The mother of the Virgin is a most sympathetic saint for these cases, since she only gave birth in her old age. Presumably the apple is then eaten; but Mr. Leland in reporting the custom does not explicitly say so. In the Morbihan a story is told of a girl who was crossed in love and bargained with the Devil for the man of her choice, the consideration being her first child. The Devil however was defrauded by her husband, who plunged the child immediately on birth into a large basin of holy water. In revenge the Evil One carried off the mother, and she was found by a *seigneur* of Pléguien hanging by the hair to one of the oaks in his avenue. He took her down. She was just able to tell him her story, and to add that she had by incessantly making the sign of the cross protected herself from the tortures which the Devil had designed for her in hell, and consequently he had kicked her with one blow back to earth, where she had been caught by the tree. Before she had time to give her name and place of abode she died. Since that time, whenever a woman of the neighbourhood desires a child she eats a leaf

¹ Jaussen, 35.

² Leland, *Gip Sorc.* 101; *Id. Etr. Rom.* 246. At King-yang-fu in the Chinese province of Kan-su a goddess of fecundity is worshipped by the women. Her shrine is on the top of a mountain and is approached by a long flight of stone steps, which the devotee must ascend on her knees. The goddess appears in a dream and gives fruit to the pilgrim, an apple or a peach if she is to have a boy, plums or pears if a girl (*Anthropos*, iii. 762).

of the oak in question, and her wish is sure to be gratified.¹

In the county of G6m6r, Hungary, it is believed that a bride, who, at the beginning of summer eats fruit which has grown together (*zusammengebäckenes Obst*) will give birth to twins.² In the Spreewald no Wendish woman dares to eat of two plums grown together on one stalk, or she will bear twins.³ An unmarried girl in Bavaria will not venture to eat two apples or other fruit which have grown together, or she will when married bear twins.⁴ In Poitou a woman who eats a fruit having two kernels in one envelope will suffer the same penalty.⁵ The aboriginal inhabitants of Paraguay supposed that a woman who ate a double ear of maize would give birth to twins.⁶ In the East Indies the Galelarese are also of opinion that if a woman eat up by herself a twin banana (that is, two bananas the rinds of which have grown together) she will have twins.⁷ On the island of Rügen, in Mecklenburg, Voigtland and Saxon Transylvania and about Mentone only pregnant women are threatened with the penalty.⁸ Among the Tagalas the husband of a pregnant woman is forbidden for the same reason to eat such fruit.⁹ These taboos are

¹ *Rev. Trad. Pop.* xvii, 111. Compare Queen Isolte's lily (*De Charencey*, 230).

² Temesváry, 10.

³ von Schulenburg, 232.

⁴ Lammert, 158.

⁵ Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iii, 391.

⁶ Featherman, Chiapo-Mar, 444.

⁷ *Bijdragen*, xlv, 467.

⁸ *Am Urquell*, v, 180; Ploss, *Kind*, i, 30; Wuttke, 376; Johann Hillner, *Programm des Evang. Gymnasiums in Schässburg*, 1877, 13; J. B. Andrews, *Rev. Trad. Pop.* ix, 111. The limitation to pregnant women is probably a late form of the superstition.

⁹ H. Ling Roth, *Journ. Anthr. Inst.* xxii, 209. In the island of Aurora, a woman sometimes takes it into her head "that the

inexplicable save on the supposition that the fruit causes pregnancy.

The Kwakiutl of British Columbia chew the gum of the red pine. "That of the white pine is not used by girls, because it is believed to make them pregnant."¹ The Querränna, one of the cult societies of the Sia, possess a medicine called *sewili*, composed of the roots and the blossoms of the six mythical medicine plants of the sun, archaic white shell- and black stone-beads, turquoise and a yellow stone. This is ground to a fine powder with great ceremony. To a woman who wishes to become pregnant it is administered, a small quantity of the powder being put into cold water, and a "fetish" of Querränna dipped four times into the water. A single dose ought to be sufficient. The same medicine is also administered on ceremonial occasions to the members of the society for the perpetuation of their race; and the *honaaité* (priest or theurgist) taking a mouthful squirts it to the cardinal points, "that the cloud people may gather and send rain that the earth may be fruitful." Querränna was the second man created by Útset, one of origin, or beginning, of one of her children is a cocoa-nut, or bread-fruit, or something of that kind"; and this gives rise to a prohibition of the object for food, just as in the case of a totem (Codrington, in *Id.* xviii. 310; *Rep. Austr. Ass.* ii. 612). I hardly know how to account for this notion except by the suggestion that such a woman may have eaten the fruit about the time her pregnancy commenced, and thence have been led to believe that the pregnancy was due to it. Upon inquiry, however, of Dr. Codrington, he informed me that he had never heard of any belief of the kind. It is perhaps worth noting as a coincidence, if nothing more, that on Lepers' Island, the two intermarrying divisions are called "*branches of fruit*," "as if," says Dr. Codrington (*Melanesians*, 26), "all the members hang on the same stalk."

¹ Boas, in *Rep. Brit. Ass.* 1896, 579.

the creative heroines of the tribal mythology. He received from the sun the secret of the medicine which would make both the earth and women fruitful. Hence the society bearing his name has charge of the medicine and performs the rites necessary for both purposes.¹ Among the Kansa, a Siouan tribe, a man was reported as having had a red medicine, which was used for women who desired to have children, for horses and for causing good dreams; but whether it was to be taken internally does not appear.² In the Lower Congo a barren woman goes to a *ngang'a ndembo*, who takes certain leaves (the identity of which is kept secret), squeezes their juice into palm-wine and gives it to her to drink.³ The Czech women of Bohemia drink an infusion of juniper to obtain children; and coffee enjoys a high reputation in Franconia. In China and Japan a medicine called *Kay-tu-sing*, made from the leaves of a tree belonging to the *Ternstromaceæ*, is given at full moon with cabalistic formulæ. In the Fiji Islands the woman bathes in a stream, and then both husband and wife take a drink made with the grated root of a kind of bread-fruit tree and the nut of a sort of turmeric, immediately before congress. Siberian brides before the marriage-night eat the cooked fruit of the *Iris Sibirica*. Asparagus seeds and young hop-buds prepared as salad are given to women in Styria against barrenness. They are then required to abstain from conjugal relations for two months, and be bled, before resuming them. Serb women get a woman already pregnant to put yeast into their girdles; they

¹ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 113, 33, 71.

² *Ibid.* 418.

³ J. H. Weeks, *F. L.* xix. 419

sleep with it overnight, and eat it in the morning at breakfast.¹ The Mexican population just within the southern boundary of Texas make a decoction of a plant called the *Yerba Gonzalez*, which must be prepared before the rising of the moon and set to cool in the moonlight the same night. A barren woman must drink of this decoction and take a bath in it every eighth day, and immediately afterwards take a purge. This procedure lasts for forty days, during which no conjugal relations are allowed. She then rests a day from all labour and at night under the direct rays of the moon she takes a final bath in the decoction, after which she may be sure of offspring. When she feels that her wish has been granted she must present herself at the first soul-mass before the altar of the Virgin and there dedicate a *milagro* (literally, miracle), a votive offering of silver in the shape of a boy or girl, according to the sex of the child she desires.² At Kalotaszeg, in Hungary, the sterile woman eats every Friday before sunrise cantharides and hemp-flowers boiled in ass' milk, and shaking the bough of a tree says: "Mr. Friday went to the forest, there met Mrs. Saturday, and said to her, 'Let us embrace.' Mrs. Saturday thrust him away and said, 'Thou art a dry twig; when thou art green again, come to me!' Twig, give me strength; I give thee mine."³ This

¹ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 434, 431, 432, 445, citing various authorities. But as usual after Dr. Bartels' editing it is not possible in all cases to identify them. The case last cited seems to be a bridal ceremony.

² *Globus*, lxxxviii. 381.

³ Temesváry, 9. Another version is given by von Wislocki (*Volksleb.* 137), who adds a detail rendering it still clearer that the object is to unite the woman to the fruitful tree. The Ottoman Jews have a custom which points to the same idea. In order

ceremony is evidently an attempt to obtain by magical means the productive virtue of the tree, and probably was originally independent of the medicament. In Friuli, when a bride is introduced into the nuptial chamber her husband causes her to eat a slice of quince.¹ In ancient Greece the bride and bridegroom used to eat of a quince together.²

It is not irrelevant here to recall that European children who are curious to know whence their little brothers and sisters have come are often told that they come from a tree or a plant. Thus, in England they are said to come out of the parsley-bed or the cabbage-bed; in Belgium and in France they are

not to lose her children the mother about to give birth puts an apple on her head. According to a Midrash the Israelite mothers in Egypt, before Moses, used to be delivered under the apple-trees to avoid the persecutions of the infanticide King (*Mél.* viii. 267). This practice is alluded to as still rife in the *Song of Solomon*, viii. 5. The last sentence in the Magyar spell above makes allusion to the reciprocal influence of the woman and the tree, when thus united. This of course logically results from the union. In Swabia a woman who is "in an interesting condition" for the first time ought to eat of a tree which bears for the first time; then both of them will become very fruitful. To this, however, there is one exception: if an apple be grafted on a whitethorn, and some of the fruit be given to a pregnant woman to eat, she cannot bear (*Meier, Sagen*, 476, 474). It is a saying at Pforzheim, "To make a nut-tree bear, let a pregnant woman pick the first nuts" (*Grimm, Teut. Myth.* 1802). The idea of reciprocal influence is very common in folklore, and is the foundation of many magical practices (see ii. *Leg. Pers. passim*).

¹ Ostermann, 348.

² Plutarch, *Solon*, xx. Among the Manchus the bride and bridegroom sit on a bed face to face. An *offspring dumpling* is then brought in and handed to the bridegroom, who eats a mouthful. It is next handed to the bride, who takes a small piece into her mouth and afterwards spits it out, as an omen that the marriage will be productive of a numerous offspring (*F. L.* i. 488).

found under the cabbages (under the parson's cabbages, at Stavelot), or they are dug out of the garden by the midwife ;¹ at Siena, the midwife is said to have found them under a tree or a cabbage ;² in the Abruzzi, the child is said to come from a tree or to be found under a tree or in a hedge, in a bunch of grapes, in a pumpkin, or the like ;³ in various parts of Germany children are said to come out of a hollow lime-tree, beech, or oak, or out of the vegetable-garden.⁴ It may be thought that this is merely a convenient way of parrying awkward questions. It would seem, however, to be more than this. In England, in France, and in the Walloon Country a quasi-sacred character is attached to parsley. A parsley-bed must not be dug up nor the parsley transplanted, lest some one in the family die or other ill-luck ensue. Even to plant it is to dig the grave of the head of the family or one of the kindred ; on the other hand, to neglect to weed it is to incur misfortune, so closely is it associated with the life of the family.⁵ In various parts of France cabbages are given to the newly-wedded pair as a ritual article of food on the marriage night. They are served either in broth in the course of the evening or cooked together with a fowl and partaken of after the pair have retired to the nuptial couch. The plantation or transplantation of a cabbage by the bridegroom is sometimes part of the wedding ceremonies.⁶

At Bruneck, in the Tirol, a great hollow ash is shown from which children are brought. At Aargau

¹ *Bull. F. L.* ii. 112, 148 ; Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iii. 474.

² *Archivio*, xiii. 475.

³ Finamore, *Trad. Pop. Abr.* 56.

Am Urquell, iv. 224 ; v. 162, 287.

⁵ Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iii. 463, 464, 473.

⁶ *Ibid.* 515.

such a tree is called the child-pear-tree. At Nierstein, in Hesse, is a great lime-tree from which children for the whole neighbourhood are fetched. At Gummersbach is another. A short distance from Nauders, in the Tirol, stood a sacred tree, the last of the wood. It was a larch. Torn and maimed by age and storms, it was reduced to a mere trunk, and at last cut down in the winter of 1855, though the stump remained in the ground for several years longer. From this sacred tree it was believed that children, especially the boys, were brought. From its neighbourhood superstitious awe prevented timber or firewood from being gathered. Crying or screaming near it was deemed a serious misbehaviour; quarrelling, cursing, or scolding was looked upon as an offence that called to heaven for instant punishment. It was generally believed (and the belief was supported by at least one current story) that the tree would bleed if hacked or cut, and that the blow would fall at the same moment on the tree and on the body of the offender who dared to use his axe or knife upon it; nor would the wound heal in his body until it healed in the tree.¹ On the road from Boitzenhagen to Knesebeck, in a district of northern Germany remote from railways, stands an oak called the Children's Tree. It replaces a much older tree, which has disappeared. The people of Boitzenhagen have to go to Knesebeck for baptisms. They always halt on such occasions beside the tree to partake of cakes and brandy, and are careful to give the tree its share of both. Wedding processions also halt and adorn its twigs with coloured ribbons; the

¹ Zingerle, *Sagen*, 110; *Am Urquell*, iv. 224; v. 287; Wolf, *Hessische Sagen*, 13 (No. 15).

more rapidly these ribbons decay and perish, the greater the luck of the marriage. A story is now told to explain the name of the tree from a child who was said to have been forgotten there and torn to pieces by a wild boar ; but it is more probable, as Dr. Andree remarks, that the tree was an old and sacred tree whence children were believed to come. The observances just mentioned point at least in that direction, and seem to show that it was regarded as in some way a fecundating power.¹ This, in fact, is the light in which the Bahoni, a Bantu people on one of the tributaries of the Upper Congo, regard the kola-tree which occupies the centre of each of their villages. Under it assemblies are held ; it "belongs to the chief, and is supposed to exercise an influence upon the fertility of his wives. When one of the latter menstruates the chief gives it a cut to remind it of its duty." Its fruit is considered an aphrodisiac, and is reserved to the chief and privileged guests.²

Before passing from the eating of fruit and vegetables, let me point out that the *dudâim*, for which Rachel bargained with Leah, seem to have been possessed of power to put an end to barrenness ; and this, as we gather from the record in Genesis, quite independently of sexual intercourse, for Rachel, who was bitterly envious of Leah's fertility, gave up her husband to her sister in exchange for them. From the Septuagint and Josephus downwards the *dudâim* have been identified with the mandrake, a plant which has been during all history credited with supernatural

¹ *Zeits. des Vereins*, vi. 366. Other examples are cited by Dieterich, *Mutter Erde*, 19 sqq.

² Torday and Joyce, *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 291.

powers.¹ In particular, it has been held potent as a cause of pregnancy. Henry Maundrell, travelling in Palestine in the spring of 1697, little more than two centuries ago, was informed that it was then customary for women who wanted children to lay mandrakes under the bed.² It is probable that he did not learn the whole truth. At the present day, in the extremely modern city of Chicago, orthodox Jews are living who import mandrakes from the East. These mandrakes "are rarely sold for less than four dollars, and one young man whose wife is barren recently paid ten dollars for a specimen." The roots, from their shape, "are still thought to be male and female; they are used remedially, a bit being scraped into water and taken internally; they are valued talismans; and they ensure fertility to women."³ The root of the mandrake, or mandragora, in common with that of several species of plants, has a rough resemblance to human shape—a resemblance which was and still is heightened by art. From this resemblance, according to the doctrine of Signatures, it probably was that the belief in its magic, and especially its procreative, power arose. The prescription current in the Middle Ages for gathering mandrakes dates from classical times. Pliny directs those who gather the plant to take care to keep on the windward side, to circumscribe it thrice with a sword (that is evidently, to surround it with a magic circle drawn with iron) and then to dig it up at

¹ *Gen.* xxx. 14; *Joseph. Ant.* i. 19. The mandrake seems to be still used by Jewish and Moslem women in Palestine, (*Folklore*, xviii. 67). It is said to smell offensively. This probably applies only to the root, since the golden-yellow fruit is aromatic (*Internat. Arch.* vii. 204; *Song of Solomon*, vii. 13).

² *Early Trav.* 434.

³ Starr, in *American Antiquarian*, 1901 (1902?), 267.

sunset.¹ A dog was sometimes tied to it, and then called or enticed away. The dog's efforts to move pulled the plant out of the ground. This proceeding, it may be observed, is recommended by Josephus in respect to a plant which he calls *baaras*, and which, perhaps, is the mandrake, though he states its only use is to drive out demons.² A dog is said to be still used near Chieti, in the Abruzzi; and the Danubian Gipsies, when they gather a kind of orchid called by them boy-root, lay the root half-bare with a knife never before used, and tie a black dog by its tail to it. A piece of ass-flesh is then offered to the animal, and when he springs after it he pulls out the plant. The representation of a *linga* is carved out of the root in question, wrapped in a piece of hart's leather, and worn on the naked arm to promote conception.³ The *Shang-luh* (*Phytolacca acinosa*) has a similar reputation among the Chinese to that of the mandrake, and for the same reason—its anthropomorphous root. We are told, on the authority of a Chinese herbal, that its black ripe fruit is highly valued by rustic women as favouring their fertility. Sorcerers dig it up with magical rites, carve the root into a closer human likeness and endow it by means of their spells with the capacity of telling fortunes. Finally, without enumerating all the parallel beliefs, like the mandrake, it is

¹ Pliny, xxv. 13. See Dr. Colley March, in *F. L.* xii. 340.

² Josephus, *Wars*, vii. 6. The use of the dog is reported by *Ælian* (*Nat. Anim.* xiv. 27) to obtain a herb he called *cynospastos*, or *aglaophotis*.

³ De Gubernatis, *Myth. Plantas.* ii. 215 note. Prof. Starr (*loc. cit.*) notes that this root does not simulate human form, but it does suggest the male organ. His article contains an excellent summary of what is known about the mandrake.

esteemed as a philtre, and is believed to grow upon the ground beneath which a dead man lies, just as the mandrake was believed to grow beneath the gallows.¹ The significance of this will appear by-and-by.

Animal substances of various kinds are taken with intent to obtain children. An insect in India called *pillai-púchchi*, or son-insect, is swallowed in large numbers by women in the hope of bearing sons.² Kamtchatkan women who wish to bear eat spiders.³ To this day, in Egypt and the Eastern Soudan, the scarab, which was sacred among the ancient Egyptians, is "dried, pounded, and mixed with water, and then drunk by women, who believe it," we are told, "to be an unfailing specific for the production of large families."⁴ The women of the Lkuñgen, one of the British Columbian tribes, drink a decoction of wasps' nests, or of flies—insects both of which lay many eggs.⁵ Among the Southern Slavs, the wife who desires offspring places a wooden bowl full of water beneath a beam of

¹ For further details about the mandrake and other plants to which similar beliefs attached, see *Internat. Arch.* vii. 81, 199; viii. 249; xii. 21; Hertz, *Die Sage vom Giftmädchen* (*Abhandl. k. bayer. Acad. Wiss.* 1893), 76; De Gubernatis, *op. cit.* ii. 213; T. W. Davies, *Magic Divination and Demonology among the Hebrews*, London [1898], 34; and Prof. Starr's article already referred to. Certain roots are also held by the Pawnees of North America to be transformations of a primitive race of giants destroyed by Tirawa, the head of the tribal pantheon. These roots are in the shape of human beings. They are possessed of curative powers, and for that purpose are dug up with ceremonies, incantations, and an offering of tobacco-smoke (Dorsey, *Pawnee Myth.* i. 296). A similar (perhaps the same) root was known and prized among the Algonkins (Charlevoix, vi. 24).

² *Panjab (Indian) N. and Q.* iv. 107 (par. 415).

³ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 432, citing Krashneninnikov.

⁴ Budge, *Egypt. Magic*, 39.

⁵ Boas, *Rep. N. W. Tribes*, in *Rep. Brit. Ass.* 1890, 577, 581.

the roof where it is worm-eaten and the worm-dust falls. Her husband strikes the beam with something heavy, so as to shake the dust out of the worm-holes ; and she drinks the water containing the dust that falls. Many a woman seeks in knots of hazelwood for a worm, and eats it when found.¹ All these women thus do voluntarily what the mothers of Conchobar and Cuchulainn are reported to have done against their wills. Hungarian Gipsy-women gather the floating threads of cobweb from the fields in autumn, and in the waxing of the moon they, with their husbands, eat them, murmuring an incantation to the Keshalyi, or Fate, whose sorrow at this season for her lost mortal husband causes her to tear out her hair. These threads are believed to be the Keshalyi's hair ; and the incantation attributes the hoped-for child to them, and invites the Fate to the baptism.² A Gipsy tradition from Transylvania derives the origin of the Leila tribe from a king's daughter who ate some of the hairs of a compassionate Keshalyi, dropped for the purpose in her way.³

The last-mentioned practice, as well as some referred to on a previous page and some of the others which follow, are not confined to women. They seem to have been extended by analogy to the other sex. The fish is a prolific symbol so well known that it is not surprising occasionally to find its use thus extended. English gallants at one time were said to swallow loaches in wine to become prolific. Farquhar in

¹ Krauss, *Sitte und Brauch*, 531. Compare a Gipsy story, von Wlislöcki, *Volksdicht.* 343.

² von Wlislöcki, *Volksgl. Zig.* 13.

³ von Wlislöcki, *Volksdicht.* 183.

The Constant Couple, written at the end of the seventeenth century, puts into the mouth of one of his characters the words: "I have toasted your ladyship fifteen bumpers successively, and swallowed Cupids like loaches in every glass."¹ Dr. Schultz, curator of the Ethnographical Museum at Leyden, received not long ago from a friend who had returned from the Dutch East Indies a Flute-fish (*Fistularia serrata*), given to him by a Chinese in the Segara Anakkan, or Children's Sea, a district on the south coast of Java, with the assurance that if the husband of a childless woman ate it, he would obtain the desired offspring.²

A curious tale is told by the famous French traveller Tavernier, of events that happened at Ahmadábád when he was there about the year 1642. The wife of a rich merchant named Saintidas, being childless, was advised by a servant in her household to eat three or four of a certain little fish. Her religion forbade animal food; but the servant overcame her scruples, saying that he knew how to disguise it so well that she would not know what she was eating. She accordingly tried the remedy, and the next night she conceived by her husband. Before the child was born, Saintidas died, and his relations claimed the inheritance. They treated her assertion that she was pregnant as a lie or a joke, seeing that she had been married fifteen or sixteen years without bearing. The governor, however, on being appealed to, compelled them to wait until she was delivered. When this happened, they alleged that the child was ille-

¹ Southey, *Commonpl. Book*, iii. 20, 75.

² *Int. Arch.* ix. 138.

gitimate. The governor consulted the doctors, who advised that the infant should be taken to the bath, and that if the mother's story were true the infant would smell of fish. The experiment was tried, and the child's legitimacy was held to be proven. The inheritance was considerable, and the relatives were persons of position. Not satisfied with the result, they went to Agra and appealed to the King, who ordered the test to be repeated in his presence. It was repeated, with the same success as on the previous occasion; and the widow and child retained the property.¹ This train of incidents is reported to us from a high stage of civilisation. Consequently it would be in vain to expect to find in anything like purity the ideas which it embodies. But in spite of impurity, in spite of the share apparently assigned to the husband in the procreation of the infant, it is clear that the fish is regarded as much more than a medicine for an abnormal condition of the wife's body. It is a true fertiliser, a true begetter, one of whose most distinctive characteristics is reproduced in the offspring. The Gonds of India perform, a week after a death, the rite of bringing back the soul of the deceased. "They go to the riverside, call out the name of the dead man, catch a fish, and bring it home. In some cases they eat it in the belief that by so doing the deceased will be born again as a child in the family."² Here the practice has become connected with a belief which we shall discuss in the next chapter. On every Christmas Eve unfruitful wives among the Transylvanian Saxons eat fish and throw

¹ Tavernier, *Trav. in Ind.* i. 75.

² Croke, *Things Indian*, 221.

the bones into flowing water, in the hope of bringing children into the world.¹

Like some other rites for producing fertility, rites in which fish play a part are performed on the occasion of a marriage. "The Brahmans of Kanara take the married pair to a pond and make them throw rice into the water and catch a few minnows. They let all go save one, with whose scales they mark their brows. If there be no pond near, the rite is done by making a fish of wheat-flour, dropping it into a vessel of water, taking it out and marking their foreheads with the paste."² The so-called Spanish Jews at Constantinople and elsewhere have a custom that the newly wedded bride and bridegroom immediately after the religious ceremony jump three times over a large platter filled with fresh fish. According to other accounts they step seven times backwards and forwards over a single fish. The ceremony is expounded in the *Jewish Chronicle* to be the symbol of a prayer for children.³ Thus in the contemplation of the more enlightened members of the community a magical rite has faded into a mere symbol. In our own country a practice analogous to that attributed to the gallants of the seventeenth century still lingers in regard to cattle. A clergyman on the Welsh border wrote to me five or six years ago: "I happened to be talking the other day with our blacksmith's wife when we passed the brook where her husband's apprentice was groping for fish. She remarked: 'I wish he could get me a live trout.' I asked for what purpose. She replied: 'To put down

¹ von Wislocki, *Volksgl. Sieb. Sachs.* 54.

² Crooke, *Things Indian*, 222.

³ Löbel, 287; *N. and Q.* 6th ser. viii. 513; ix. 134.

our heifer's throat, to make her take the beast.' ” In the light of the instances already cited, and of the stories recounted in the previous chapter, we need have no doubt that the live trout was originally not a mere aphrodisiac, but taken in this way possessed real procreative power.

Among the Australian aborigines of Tully River, in Northern Queensland, sexual intercourse is not recognised as a cause of conception so far as they themselves are concerned, though it is admitted in the case of the lower animals and is a mark of the inferiority of the latter. They hold that a woman bears children because she has been sitting over a fire on which she has roasted a particular species of black bream, which must have been given to her by the prospective “father”; or because she has purposely gone a-hunting and has caught a certain kind of bull-frog. Though we are not told what she does with the creature we may assume that she eats it, since little comes amiss to an Australian native in the shape of animal food, unless there be any taboo upon it. It may be added that a third cause assigned for a woman's conception is that “some man may have told her to be in an interesting condition,” just as the Lucky Fool does in the stories referred to in the previous chapter. Twins are accounted for by her having dreamed of being told by two different persons to conceive. A fourth cause is that she may have dreamed of having the child put inside her, presumably by a supernatural being.¹ The Ottoman Jews

¹ Roth, *N. Q. Ethnog.* Bull. v. 22 (par. 81); 25 (par. 92). According to Strehlow the Arunta share the belief of the Tully River tribe in the distinction between the mode of propagation of human beings and that of the lower animals (Strehlow, ii. 52).

prescribe for a woman who has only given birth to daughters, and who desires also sons, to eat after taking a bath a whole cock, intestines, comb and all :¹ a prescription which would seem to make rather an exorbitant demand on her appetite and digestion. The Ainu of Japan persist in regarding the flying squirrel as a bird. It is called *At kamui*, a name said to mean "the divine prolific one," for it is believed to produce as many as thirty young at a birth. When a woman has no children her husband is advised to hunt for one of these "birds." Having caught it he cuts it up, cooks it, and offers *inao* (willow wands, whittled, with the shavings still attached) to the head and skin, and prays: "O thou very prolific one, I have sacrificed thee for one reason only, and that is that I may use thy flesh as a medicine for procuring children. Henceforth, please cause my wife to bear me a child." He is then to take the flesh and give it to his wife to eat, telling her that it is the flesh of some kind of bird, but carefully concealing the fact that it is that of a flying squirrel; for if she know, or even guess, what it is the ceremony would be useless, and she would bear no children.²

Barren women among the Thompson Indians of British Columbia ate a roasted mouse of a certain species. An alternative prescription where male children were desired was a buck's penis.³ The ancient Prussian bride having been struck and beaten, and so

¹ *Mél.* viii. 270.

² Batchelor, *Ainu F. L.* 339. The *inao* were perhaps phallic emblems in origin, though apparently this significance is not now attached to them by the Ainu (Aston, *Shinto*, 193).

Teit, in *Mem. Am. Mus.*, Anthropol. i. 509.

put to bed, a dish of buck's, bull's, or bear's sweetbreads was served to the wedded pair.¹ The corresponding portion of a hare was prescribed in wine by our Anglo-Saxon forefathers to the woman who desired a son. "In order that a woman may kindle a male child," a hare's intestines dried and sliced and rubbed into a drink is also recommended in the leech-book to be taken by both husband and wife. If the wife alone drank it, she would produce an hermaphrodite. The hare's magical reputation is well known; nor are the foregoing the only remedies from its flesh directed in the same work for the same purpose. Four drachms of female hare's rennet to the woman, and the like quantity of male hare's to the man were to be given in wine; and after directing that the wife should be dieted on mushrooms and forego her bath we are told: "wonderfully she will bring forth"²—which we shall not be inclined to dispute. In Fezzan a woman's fruitfulness is said to be increased by the plentiful enjoyment of the dried intestines of a young hare that has never been suckled. The flesh of the kangaroo, like the hare a swift animal, is held by the Australian aborigines to cause fertility.³ Hare's flesh, especially the testicles, is esteemed a specific against impotence and childlessness in Saxon Transylvania, where also a fox's genital organs dried and rubbed to

¹ Schröder, 171, citing Hartknoch; Ploss, *Weib.* i. 445. Meletius, arch-presbyter of the Ecclesia Liccensis in Prussia, however, writing in the sixteenth century states that the sweetbreads are those of a goat or a bear (*F. L.* xii. 300). Among the Istrian Slavs an hour after the married pair retire a roast hen is served to them in bed (Dr. F. Tetzner, *Globus*, xcii. 88).

² Sextus Placitus, *Sax. Leechd.* i. 347, 345.

³ Ploss, *Weib.* i. 431, 432, citing Nachtigall and Junk.

powder are given to women against barrenness.¹ Italian women are given not merely vegetable drugs like an infusion of valerian, cypress scrapings and the bark of the black mulberry, but also mare's milk, a hare's uterus and a goat's testicles.² And similar nostrums sometimes of the flesh of one animal and sometimes of another are to be found in many of the mediæval works on medicine and exorcism.³

The same train of reasoning is evident in the prohibition, current among the Coast-Salish of north-western America, to an unmarried woman to eat either breast or tenderloin of any animal. It was believed that if she ate the tenderloin of both sides of an animal she would give birth to twins.⁴ The Perak Semang are said to hold a complicated belief in a soul-bird. A child as soon as born is named from a tree standing near its birthplace, and the after-birth is buried at the foot of the tree. An expectant mother visits her birth-tree, as it is called, or a tree of the same species if too far away to reach the identical tree, and there deposits an offering of flowers. A young bird newly hatched inhabiting the tree contains the soul of her expected child, which has been committed to it by Kari the chief god. This bird she must kill and eat, otherwise her child will be stillborn or die shortly after its birth. The expression used by the Semang of Kalantan to describe a woman who is in hope of offspring is: "she has eaten the bird." Twins arise from eating a

¹ von Wlislöcki, *Volksgl. Sieb. Sachs.* 169, 103.

² Zanetti, 103. The author discredits the statement of another prescription said to be given to couples desiring children.

³ *Mél.* vii. 159 *sqq.*

Boas, *Rep. N. W. Tribes, Rep. B. A.* 1889, 842.

soul-bird with an egg.¹ So in the Murray Islands women eat pigeons, females to get girls and males to get boys.²

In England the belief in the consumption of certain kinds of animal food as a cause of pregnancy seems to have survived into modern times. I quote from a letter written to me by a lady who has herself made valuable contributions to anthropology: "Mrs. G., a charwoman who worked for me in 1876, and who lived with her husband in a street leading out of Theobald's Row, W.C., told me that she and her husband had been married for some years, and had given up all hope of having children, when she, at the instance of her husband's mother (who lived in the same house with them), determined to try other than lawful means. She went out one evening, and, at a butcher's shop some long distance from where she lived, contrived to steal two sausages, which she ate raw then and there in a side-turning off the street, her mother-in-law keeping guard for fear of detection, in fact keeping the butcher in talk while her daughter-in-law stole and ate the articles. This action was kept a profound secret from the husband until the means adopted were found to be effectual. A boy was born at the proper period of time, or, as Mrs. G. said, that day nine months; and he was fat and roly like a sausage! Unfortunately he died soon afterwards. Perhaps this was not surprising, as he was given a small piece of sausage to eat after his birth. The reason assigned for this was that he might not be too fond of sausages as he grew up, refuse other food, and so 'pine away.' His mother

¹ Skeat and Blagden, ii. 3, 4, 6, quoting Vaughan-Stevens.

² Haddon, *Torres Str Rep.* vi. 105.

and grandmother attributed his death partly to bronchitis and partly to the fact that strict secrecy had not been observed about the stolen food. They had afterwards gone before the child's birth to the butcher and paid him for the two sausages, telling him the circumstances. He sympathised with them and Mrs. G. added that he told them a similar story about his own wife, or mother, she did not remember which." ¹

Eggs are naturally supposed to ensure pregnancy. Probably it is for this cause that they are forbidden to adolescent Eskimo girls in Baffin's Land.² Among the Ruthenians a domestic hen is killed, and the small unripe eggs found in her body are put into the vagina of a barren woman.³ A Gipsy husband will sometimes take an egg and blow the contents into his wife's mouth, she swallowing them, in order that she may bear;⁴ or in Transylvania she will give him at full moon the egg of a black hen to eat by himself.⁵

As might be expected, eggs like other objects believed to produce fertility are prominent objects in various parts of the world, especially the East, at

¹ My correspondent adds that another woman whom she knew, a fairly well-educated woman whose husband was in business as a trunk-maker, had twins at her first *accouchement*. "They were the colour of scarlet, just like boiled lobsters." One of these twins died; the other as she grew up continued to have red marks on her skin. Their mother attributed this condition to the lobsters whereof she and her husband had partaken on their wedding night. This would appear to show a similar belief, but in a somewhat later stage exemplified in the old Prussian and other marriage-rites already mentioned.

² Boas, *Eskimo of Baffin's Land*, in *Bull. Am. Mus.* xv. 161.

³ Kobert, 116.

⁴ Leland, *Gip. Sorc.* 101.

⁵ von Wislocki, *Volksdicht.* 314.

marriage ceremonies. In them too, as in other marriage ceremonies discussed in the present chapter, the fertilising power of the object itself passes into a charm or a mere symbol of good wishes. The West Russian Jews, particularly the strict sect of the Chasidim, have the custom of setting a raw egg before a bride at the wedding feast, a symbol of fruitfulness and that she may bear as easily as a hen lays an egg.¹ At Gossensass in the Tirol, when the wedded pair come to the inn to pay for the wedding-feast, after the business is settled it is the custom to serve the bride with a hard-boiled egg on a large iron fork; and she is expected to eat it alone.² In the seventeenth century, a French bride, in order to be happy in her marriage, on entering her new home on the wedding-day trod upon and broke an egg, and wheat was thrown over her.³ Fertility is obviously regarded as the first condition of happiness here. Among the Sundanese in West Java a hen's egg is placed before the door of the newly wedded pair; which appears to imply a similar rite of breaking it. In East Java the Tenggerese bridegroom on the last day of the festivities breaks an egg and the bride smears her feet with its contents mixed with turmeric.

The direct fertilising power as distinguished from the magical effect or the symbolism of the egg tends to fall into the background when both husband and wife share the virtue of the egg in food or other ways. Among the Mordvins a pot of groats, an omelet and a baked egg are always put upon the table at the bride's house in the elaborate ceremonies of the day before

¹ Andree, *Juden*, 145.

² *Zeits. des Vereins*, x. 401.

³ Thiers, *ap. Liebrecht's Gerv. Tilb.* 259 (No. 475).

the marriage. In Great Mandheling and Batang Natal (West Sumatra) the bride and bridegroom must each eat a piece of the white and the yolk of the eggs which lie on the top of the rice at the wedding ceremony. In Minahassa they erect a small altar and offer on it some rice and a boiled egg. They afterwards consume the offering, calling down thereby the divine blessing. Among certain of the Dyaks a hen's egg is struck upon the teeth of the wedded pair and then held under their noses. Among the Orang Maanjan of Borneo they are smeared with a mixture of the contents of an egg and blood of a fowl or pig: this is the binding ceremony. Among the Olon Lavangan, another tribe of the same island, the chief takes a hen's egg, opens it with a knife and smears the contents on the foreheads of the pair.¹ In Armenia and Kurdistan the Mohammedans take various measures against unfruitfulness in marriage. One of these consists in the priest's writing the one hundred and twelfth chapter of the Koran upon an egg and giving the bride and bridegroom each one half of the egg to eat. Or else he writes it upon a triangular spear over which they are required to jump.² In Sikkim a present of eggs is an offer of marriage and the acceptance of the gift is an acceptance of the offer. Among the Shan of Further India the gift of eggs among other things to the bride and her parents is expected from the bridegroom. In South Celebes a hen's egg is always to be found among the wedding presents and

¹ These and other customs have been brought together by Dr. R. Lasch, *Globus*, lxxxix. 104.

² Volland, *Globus*, xci. 344. Compare the Jewish rite of jumping over fish, *supra*, p. 51.

it is expressly said to hint at offspring.¹ But we need not pursue the subject of symbolism of eggs on such an occasion.

Among the Schokaz stock in Hungary a woman who has already several children looks for a stone which has been thrown at an apple-tree and has remained on the tree. She takes it down, puts it into an egg, on which at new moon she pours water and gives to drink of it to the barren woman. Finally, she herself takes the latter's bridal shift and wears it for nine weeks.² This complex rite is evidently an amalgam of more than one simpler ceremony, all directed to the same end; and it will be discussed more fully hereafter. Meanwhile, it may be observed that the virtue of the egg as a fertilising medium obviously passes into the water, and is imbibed in the draught. A magical rite in vogue on the island of Keisar in the East Indies appears also to be formed of originally independent elements. There an infertile woman takes a hen's first egg to the expert in these matters, commonly an old man, and asks him for help. He lays the egg on a nunu-leaf, and with it presses her breasts, muttering congratulations the while. Then he boils the egg in a folded Koli-leaf, takes a piece, lays it again on the nunu-leaf, and causes the woman to eat it. After that he presses the leaf on her nose and breasts and rubs it upon both her shoulders, always from above downward, wraps another bit of the egg in the nunu-leaf, and causes it to be kept in the branches of one of the highest trees in the neighbourhood of her dwelling.³ In this ceremony

¹ Lasch, *ubi sup.*

² Temesváry, 8. See *post*, p. 114.

³ Riedel, 416.

a hen's first egg is used. On the other hand, in Galicia the *last* egg laid by a hen is taken. It is credited with having two yolks, and with being no bigger than a pigeon's egg. A barren woman who swallows its contents will henceforth bear; or it is given to a cow or other animal with a similar object.¹

At the domestic sacrifices offered by the ancient Aryans of India the celebrant's wife usually assisted. Among those rites for which the *Grihya-Sûtra* of Gobhila gives minute directions is the Anvashtakya rite, the object of which was the propitiation of the ancestral spirits. Three Pindas, or lumps of food, consisting of rice and cow-beef mixed with a certain juice, are offered. After the offering, if the sacrificer's wife wish for a son, she is to eat the middle Pinda, dedicated among the manes especially to her husband's grandfather, uttering at the same time the verse from the *Mantra-Brâhmana*: "Give fruit to the womb, O Fathers!"² No doubt the virtue of this prescrip-

¹ *Am Urquell*, iv. 125.

² *Sacred Books*, xxx. 110. There are numerous prescriptions in the sacred books of India for securing male children. One other may be selected here. A fire is directed to be churned with the *ficus religiosa* and the *mimosa suma* while a hymn from the *Atharva-veda* expressive of the symbolism of the act is recited. Fire thus obtained is thrown into ghee prepared from the milk of a cow with a male calf; and the ghee is put with the thumb up the right nostril of the pregnant woman. Some of the fire is cast into a stirred drink with honey and the drink is given to the woman. Finally the fire is surrounded with the wool of a male animal and the wool is then tied as an amulet upon the woman (*Sacred Books*, xlii. 460, 97). Here the woman is already pregnant and the rites (the symbolism of which is obvious) are only employed to influence the sex. But they are on similar lines to those intended to procure offspring. It should be noted that the reading here is uncertain. Mr. Bloomfield adopts *male* (animal) as yielding a better symbolism than *black*, the alternative reading.

tion consists in the food's having been part of the sacrificial offering. But the cow is so intimately connected with the well-being of many of the peoples of the Old World, and has consequently become so well-recognised a symbol of fecundity, that we need not be surprised to find it employed in charms to produce offspring. An old English recipe for a woman who miscarries is to let her take milk of a one-coloured cow in her hand and sup it up into her mouth, and then go to running water and spit out the milk therein. Next, she must ladle up with the same hand a mouthful of the water and swallow it down, uttering certain words. Lastly, she must, without looking about her either in her going or coming, return, but not into the same house whence she came out, and there taste of meat.¹ In Iceland, as a remedy for sterility, a woman was given without her knowing what it was, the evening after-milkings still warm to drink, or testicles of the wild goose to eat.² In Pomerania the prescription is milk from a cow which has just begun to give milk, warm from the udder half an hour before congress.³ Rye boiled in ass' or mare's milk at the new moon is given to barren women by the Schokaz in Hungary.⁴ In Belgium, women desirous of offspring are advised to drink a mixture of the milk of the goat, ass and sheep.⁵

Of mineral substances, Russian women take saltpetre; and in Styria a woman will grate her wedding-ring and swallow the filings.⁶ Chinese "medical works declare jade-grease or jade-juice to operate very

¹ *Sax. Leechd.* iii. 69.

² *Am Urquell*, v. 179.

³ *Bull. de F. L.* ii. 82.

² *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxxii. 60.

⁴ *Temesváry*, 8.

⁶ *Ploss, Weib*, i. 434, 443.

efficaciously in curing women from sterility. In fact," says Dr. De Groot, "as those substances may instil life into such creatures, they cannot fail to intensify also their life-producing power. They lengthen of course the life of whomsoever takes them. They pass for mystic products of mounts which contain jade. The belief in their reality rests merely on some hazy passages" of old authors.¹ It was a classical superstition that mice were impregnated by tasting salt;² and the reader need hardly be reminded of the salted ball of rice in the ceremony already referred to as performed by Hindu women. Not long ago, "in the Beaujolais, women afflicted with sterility scraped a stone placed in an isolated chapel in the middle of the prairies. At St. Sernin des Bois (Saône-et-Loire), they scraped the statue of St. Freluchot," and swallowed the scrapings in water from a neighbouring well. This was the practice in divers parts of France with regard to the statues of a saint variously called Foutin, Photin or Foustin. The saint in question is not in the official calendar, though he has doubtless received popular reverence from ancient times. To him were attributed all the prerogatives of the heathen deity Priapus; and it was from those portions of his statues which indicated his powers that his devotees obtained the necessary powder. At Bourg-Dieu in the diocese of Bourges a similar saint was called Guerlichon or Greluchon. There after nine days' devotions women stretched themselves on the horizontal figure of the saint and then scraped the phallus for mixture in water as a drink. Other saints were worshipped elsewhere in France with equivalent rites

¹ De Groot, *Rel. Syst.* iv. 330.

² Pliny, *Nat. Hist.* x. 85.

Down to the Revolution there stood at Brest a chapel of Saint Guignolet containing a priapian statue of the holy man. Women who were or feared to be sterile used to go and scrape a little of the prominent member which they put into a glass of water from the well and drank. The same practice was followed at the chapel of Saint Pierre-à-broquettes in Brabant until 1837, when the archæologist Schayes called attention to it, and thereupon the ecclesiastical authorities removed the object of scandal. Women have however still continued to make votive offerings of pins down almost, if not quite, to the present day. At Antwerp stood at the gateway to the church of Saint Walburga in the Rue des Pêcheurs a statue, the sexual organ of which had been entirely scraped away by women for the same purpose.¹

The drinking of water under certain conditions has been held to be productive of children. In the first instance I am about to mention however reliance is not placed wholly on the draught. Beside the Groesbeeck spring at Spa in the Ardennes is a foot-print of Saint Remacle. Barren women pay a nine days' devotional visit to the shrine of the saint at Spa and drink every morning a glass of the Groesbeeck water. While drinking, one foot must be placed in the holy foot-print.² Maidens in more than one of the tales of supernatural birth have proved the efficacy of divine foot-prints. In other cases it is unmistakably the draught which has the virtue. A glass of water from the well of Saint Roger

¹ Sébillot, *Amer. Anthropol.* iv. 92; *Id. F. L. France* iv. 172; Dulaure, 204 *sqq.*, where further details are given; Bérenger-Feraud, *Superst.* ii. 191, 193; Ploss, *Weib*, i. 444 quoting an author not named; d'Alviella, *Rev. Hist. Rel.* liii. 73.

² Wolf, *Niederl. Sag.* 227; *Bull. de F. L.* ii. 82.

at Elan also in the Ardennes is drunk by sterile women who wish for children.¹ "According to the legend of Saint Armentaire written towards the year 1300 the fairy Esterelle dwelt near a spring, whither the Provençals brought her offerings and she gave enchanted drink to barren women."² One of the seven lustral springs around the church of Saint Nicodemus near Locminé (Morbihan) is visited by young wives who having drunk a little of the water climb without looking behind them into the belfry and there in order to ensure the success of their wishes sit for a few moments in an old armchair. The fountain of Sainte Eustelle adjoining the Roman amphitheatre at Saintes in the department of Charente Inférieure is resorted to by wives whose hopes of offspring have been delayed and who drink of it nine mornings in succession. That of Saint Rigaud at Monsole, which it is said flows over the saint's body, also possesses the privilege of rendering women fruitful ; but it does not appear what is the actual ceremony performed there. The sacred wells of France having fecundating powers are in fact very numerous.³ Without specifying any more of them we may turn to our own country. Probably at one time our springs were not less potent or numerous. Some of them still retain their reputation. There is a well called Dewric Well at Bretton, near Eyam in Derbyshire, the water of which is said to make any woman who drinks of it fruitful.⁴ A spring at Burnham near Barton-upon-Humber was, until the last half-century at any rate, believed to remove the curse of sterility.⁵ At Saint

¹ Meyrac, 45.

² Sébillot, *F. L. France*, ii. 197.

³ *Ibid.* 232, 233, 376 ; Cuzacq, 110.

⁴ Addy, 59.

⁵ *Ant.* xxxi. 373.

Maughold's Well in the Isle of Man women sat in the saint's chair and drank a glass of water from the well. Here, as at Locminé, contact with the chair seems to have been necessary in addition to the draught.¹ In Germany the same belief in the power of certain wells is equally found. The Amorsbrunnen near Amorbach in Bavaria is one of these; the Gezelinquelle near Schebusch, not far from Cologne, is another.² A Sicilian priest named Maggio, director of the Congregazione della Sciabica, writing in the year 1668, mentions that water derived from a spring beneath the altar of the Madonna della Providenza at Palermo, and consecrated yearly on the fourteenth of January, possessed remarkable powers of curing disease. It was given with much faith and devotion to persons who were possessed or bewitched. It was also given to sterile women and to women who were about to bring forth.³ But in Italy itself at the present day the most valued specific against barrenness is the water of the well of Our Lady of Lourdes. At Perugia in particular the church of Santa Maria Nuova does a profitable trade in Lourdes water, which is said to be sent direct from Lourdes to Rome and there authenticated by the pontifical seal. It is drunk in faith by wives desirous of children and also by fathers whose longings for offspring have not been fully satisfied. And it is all the more prized because in Italy there are no fountains having the virtue in question.⁴ In this respect the Italians are less fortunate than even the Tusayan of North America. The latter have a legend

¹ *F. L.* v. 221, citing Sacheverell.

² *Ant.* xxxviii. 300; *Am Urquell*, v. 287.

³ *Archivio*, xv. 56.

⁴ Zanetti, 103.

of one of their women who being pregnant was left behind on the Little Colorado during their wanderings. Under the house where she dwelt is a spring, and any sterile woman who drinks of it will bear children.¹

Other water than that of sacred springs is also capable of fecundating women. In Thuringia and Transylvania women who wished to be healed of unfruitfulness drank consecrated water from the baptismal font.² But woe to the husband at Stettin who dared to do so! At her next delivery his wife would present him with twins. The water of baptism poured before the door of a childless couple in the island of Rügen would bring them children.³ In a certain district of Hungary a barren woman seeks a spring which she has never before seen and drinks of it.⁴ Among the Palestinian Jews childless women drink water wherein moss plucked from the ruins of the temple-wall has been boiled, in order to get children.⁵ On the other hand unmarried girls in Brunswick refrain from drink after eating sour kraut, lest they become pregnant.⁶ At Nuoro in Sardinia the wise women advise poultices on the spine; they also advise drinking, and especially bathing, in the sea.⁷ A Malagasy woman whose marriage has not been blessed with issue is made to drink litres and litres of water

¹ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* viii. 32. The Crow Indians have also a sacred spring whither barren women go to pray; but it does not appear whether or not they drink or bathe (*Field Columb. Mus. Anthropol.* ii. 316).

² Witzschel, ii. 244; von Wlislöcki, *Volksgl. Sieb. Sachs.* 152 Hillner, 38.

⁴ Temesváry, 8.

⁶ Andree, *Braunsch.* 291.

³ *Am Urquell*, vi. 146.

⁵ *Am Urquell*, v. 225.

⁷ *Rivista*, ii. 423.

until her stomach is so full that it will not hold another drop.¹

Masur women in the province of West Prussia make use of the water which drips from a stallion's mouth after he has drunk. Worse is said to be done in Algiers. There when a woman has already had a child, but has ceased for a long period to conceive, she must drink sheep's urine, or water wherein wax from a donkey's ear has been macerated.² Mr. Thomson, the traveller among the Masai of Eastern Africa, had the reputation of being a great *lybon* or medicine-man. He was applied to by a wealthy old Masai and his wife for a medicine to obtain children. He was requested to spit on them, which, he says, "I did most vigorously and liberally, my saliva being supposed to have sovereign virtues."³

A Transylvanian Gipsy woman is said to drink water wherein her husband has cast hot coals, or, better still, has spit, saying as she does so: "Where I am flame, be thou the coals! Where I am rain be thou the water!"⁴ A South Slavonic woman holds a wooden bowl of water near the fire on the hearth. Her husband then strikes two firebrands together until the sparks fly. Some of them fall into the bowl, and she then drinks the water.⁵ For Arab women the third chapter of the Koran (which, among other things

¹ Mondain, 44. In South-eastern Africa a potion is given instead of water to a childless Ronga woman. It is drunk mixed with native beer, and she is required to take it for months. In this case, however, the husband shares it (Junod, *Baronga*, 63).

² Ploss, *Weib*, i. 443, 431.

³ Thomson, *Masai Land*, 287.

⁴ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 443, citing von Wliskoeki in general terms.

⁵ Krauss, *Sitte und Brauch*, 531.

relates the birth of the Virgin Mary) is written out in its whole interminable length with saffron in a copper basin ; boiling water is poured upon the writing ; and the woman in need drinks a part of the water thus consecrated, and washes her face, breast and womb with the remainder.¹ At Bombay a barren woman would cut off the end of the robe of a woman who has borne at least one child, when it is hung up to dry ; or would steal a newborn infant's shirt, steep one end of it in water, drink the water and destroy the shirt. The child to whom the clothing belonged would then die and be born again from the womb of the woman performing the ceremony.² Other women in India drink the water squeezed from the loincloth of a *sanyáśí*, or devotee, after washing it for him.³ We can only surmise that this practice is followed in the hope of obtaining the benefit experienced by the Princess Chand Ráwati and other heroines of Indian literature and folklore.⁴

Be this how it may, there is a group of practices to which reference must be made, and which fully match the foregoing in nastiness. Unfortunately the dislike

¹ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 435, citing Sandreczki.

² *Mél.* vi. 109, quoting Rehatsek in *Journ. Anthropol. Soc. Bombay.*

³ *Panjab (Indian) N. and Q.* iv. 107 (par. 415). Even more disgusting is the rite described by the Abbé Dubois as practised at a temple famous all over Mysore (Dubois, 601). In Egypt in the seventeenth century childless women resorted to certain naked ascetics to kiss their sexual organs (Stoll, 653, quoting Thévenot). The same is said to be still done in India.

⁴ See Sir R. C. Temple, *F. L. Journ.* iv. 304 ; De Gubernatis, *Zool. Myth.* ii. 331 ; *Panjab N. and Q.* ii. 19 (par. 122) ; Hardy, *Manual of Buddhism*, 251. The incident of conception by semen imbibed through the mouth or nose may in fact be said to be somewhat of a favourite in Indian stories.

of nastiness is an extremely civilised feeling; and when we read of these things we must remember that we ourselves are not very far removed from a date when powder of mummy was one of the least objectionable of the grosser remedies in our forefathers' pharmacopœia. We have already found that a Gipsy woman will drink the water wherein her husband has spit. What is the meaning of the expression "He is the very spit of his father!" current not only in England, but also, according to the learned Liebrecht, in France, Italy and Portugal, and alluded to by Voltaire and La Fontaine, if it point not back to a similar, perhaps a more repulsive ceremony formerly practised by the folk all over Western Europe? In Pomerania when a women is barren it is recommended to give her another woman's milk to drink.¹ In Olchowiec (Russia), water containing three drops of blood from the navel of a new-born child is given. Other women, especially Jewesses, are said to suck blood from the child's navel, and in doing so they should swallow three times.² Ukrainian women drink water in which a portion of an umbilical cord has been soaked.³ An immigrant Russian Jewess having given birth to a child in the hospital at Boston, one of her neighbours, a woman, asked to see the after-birth. In answer to inquiries why she wished to see it, she said that she had heard that to eat a placenta is a certain means of curing sterility, and she wanted to try.⁴ A Polish woman, to get children, procures a small jar of the blood of another woman at her first child-bearing, and drinks it mixed with brandy.⁵ Among some of the

¹ *Am Urquell*, v. 252.

² Kobert, 92.

³ *Mél.* viii. 38.

⁴ *L'Anthrop.* ix. 240.

⁵ *Am Urquell*, iii. 147.

Roumanians in Hungary it is the custom that a barren woman eat the dried remains of the navel-string and drink some of the blood. Elsewhere in Hungary a barren woman is given some of the lochial discharge of a woman at her first child-bed. Serb women are advised to bathe in water in which is the placenta of a woman who has just been delivered. Ruthenian women sit on a still warm placenta. Elsewhere in Hungary women follow the Polish practice just mentioned.¹ In Sicily they are prescribed powder of dried after-birth in pills.² A Kamtchadal woman who, on bearing, desires to become pregnant soon again, eats her infant's navel-string.³ Among the Ottoman Jews a woman who has only had one child, and has afterwards ceased to bear, may recover her fertility by eating the foreskin removed from a child by circumcision.⁴ In Bombay a childless woman secures a few drops of the water from the first bath or washings of a woman who has been recently delivered, and drinks them. The object seems to be to transfer the fecundity of the one woman to the other: hence precautions are jealously taken against the practice.⁵

Among the Gipsies of Roumania and southern Hungary a sterile woman scratches her husband's left hand between finger and thumb; and he returns the

¹ Temesváry, 8. It is also believed among the Magyars that the after-birth of a boy or girl placed under the bed will ensure the procreation of a child of the same sex; but the husband must be careful which side he gets into bed—on the right side for a boy, on the left for a girl (von Wlislöcki, *Volksleb. Mag.* 80).

² Pitre, *Biblioteca*, xix. 448.

³ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 432, citing Kraschneninnikov.

⁴ *Mél.* viii. 270.

⁵ *Panjab N. and Q.* i. 100 (par. 772).

compliment. The blood of both is received in a new vessel, and buried under a tree for nine days. It is then taken up and ass' milk poured into it. Husband and wife drink the mixture before going to bed, with an incantation which reminds us of the Zulu story of the blood in the pot; for its earlier lines run thus: "In the dawn three Fates will come. The first seeks our blood; the second finds our blood; the third makes a child thereout."¹ The powers of both husband and wife appear to be thus increased. It is rather the women who are directly acted on in the Malagasy rite of "scrambling." This rite is performed on a lucky day at the end of the second or third month from the birth of a first-born child. The friends and relatives of the child assemble. Some fat from an ox's hump is minced in a rice-pan, cooked and mixed with a quantity of rice, milk, honey and a sort of grass called *voampamoa*. A lock of the infant's hair ceremonially cut from the right side, and known as "the fortunate lock" is cast into the rice-pan and thoroughly well mixed with the other ingredients. The youngest female of the family holds the pan, and a general rush and scramble for its contents ensues. In the scramble the women take a prominent part, "as it is supposed that those who are fortunate enough to obtain a portion may confidently cherish the hope of becoming mothers." The rice-pan used becomes taboo for three days.² Presumably the contents are

¹ *Am Urquell*, iii. 7. In the Zulu story referred to, a pigeon cups the heroine and causes the blood to be put into a pot which is kept covered for two moons when the heroine finds two children in the pot (Callaway, *Tales*, 105). The story is a favourite among the Zulus, Kaffirs and Basuto, and several variants are known.

² Ellis, *Hist. Mad.* i. 153.

devoured after the scramble, though the account I cite does not say so. Transylvanian Gipsy women make a cut in the little finger of an unbaptized child, and suck the blood to promote their conception.¹

A woman of the Hungarian population of Transylvania hangs for nine consecutive months at the time of full moon on a tree, a cloth on which are some drops of blood of her last previous period and says: "Tree, I give thee my blood, give me thy strength, that thereby I may with my blood breed children."² This perhaps may be explained by the doctrine of Transference, by which a disease is believed by the ceremonial acts and words to be transferred to some other object and the patient freed. I am by no means sure, however, that the underlying idea is that of simple Transference, since a prayer for the tree's strength in exchange is included in the rite. It may be that the intention is no more than that of the prescription for a barren Gipsy woman. If such a woman succeed in touching a snake caught in Easter- or Whitsun-week, she will become fertile by spitting on it thrice and sprinkling it with her menstruation-blood, repeating the following incantation; "Grow quick, thou snake! that I thereby may get a child. I am lean now as thou art, therefore I have no rest. Snake, snake, glide hence; and when I am pregnant I will give thee a crest (*Haube*), that thy tooth may by that means have much poison!"³ Here the woman conjures the snake to grow fat, in order that

¹ *Am Urquell*, iii. 8.

² *Temesváry*, 9.

³ von Wlislöcki, *Volksgl. Zig.* 66. This work, when cited, must be understood, unless otherwise expressed, to deal with the Gipsies of the Danubian countries, where alone, the author says, they are unsophisticated.

she may do so too. The object of bestowing her secretions upon it is to unite herself with it, because the secretions which are in contact with the snake will still be in mystical union with the body from which they have emanated. They will thus form a bond between the snake and the woman ; and her body will share the improved condition of the snake's body. In the same way I incline to think that the intention of the Transylvanian rite is to unite the woman with the tree that she may share its strength, and not to transfer her barrenness to it, of which there is no hint in the incantation. Upon this notion is founded a practice in German Togoland where on the occasion of a birth one of the women in attendance buries the placenta. If she has not yet borne she micturates over it before covering it up, hoping then soon to have a child herself.¹ A Magyar believes that he promotes conception by his wife if he mix with his blood white of egg and the white spots in the yolk of a hen's egg, fill a dead man's bone with the mixture, and bury it where he is accustomed to make water.² Apparently his potency is held to be thereby increased. In some parts of Hungary an unfruitful woman spits on Christmas night in a spring,³ thus uniting herself with its fertilising power. The principle is of endless application.

I have just mentioned a dead man's bone as the receptacle of a magical mixture of blood and other ingredients. According to a Mexican saga a dead man's bone, when sprinkled with blood, produced the

¹ *Globus*, lxxxvii, 75.

² *Am Urquell*, iii. 269. For other cases see *Ibid.* 8.

³ *Temesváry*, 10.

father and mother of the present race of mankind.¹ Portions of corpses are, in the opinion of many people, as valuable for unfruitful women as the blood and secretions of living persons. The Magyars not merely use a dead man's bone as a magical phial: they also hold that such a bone shaved into drink and given to a woman will promote conception; or if given to a man they will enhance his potency.² Danubian Gipsies are said to make, for protection from witchcraft, little figures of men and brutes out of a sort of dough of grafting wax taken from the trees in a graveyard, mixed with the powdered hair and nails of a dead child or maiden, and with ashes left after burning the clothes of one who has died. The figures are dried in the sun, and when required for use are ground into powder. Taken in millet-pap in the increase of the moon this powder accelerates conception.³ Mr. Lane records disgusting practices on the part of barren women at Cairo. Near the place of execution there was a table of stone where the body of every person who was, in accordance with the usual mode of punishment, beheaded is washed before burial. By the table was a trough to receive the water. This trough was never emptied; and its contents were tainted with blood and fetid. A woman who desired issue silently passed under the stone table with the left foot foremost, and then over it. After repeating this process seven times she washed her face in the trough, and giving a trifling sum of money to the old man and his wife who kept the place, went silently away. Others, with like

¹ Southey, *Commonpl. Bk. iv.* 142; Featherman, *Chiapo-Mar.* 136.

² von Wislocki, *Volksleb. Mag.* 77.
von Wislocki, *Volksgl. Zig.* 103.

intent, stepped over the decapitated body seven times, also without speaking; and others again dipped in the blood a piece of cotton wool, which they afterwards made use of in a manner which Mr. Lane declines to mention.¹

In the Panjab also indescribable cures for barrenness are often adopted. One of the more respectable remedies is said to be that of bathing over a dead body. For this purpose murder is even committed. Another is that of eating a loaf cooked on the still burning pyre of a man who was never married and therefore never transmitted life, and who was the only or eldest son in his family and so received the fullest possible measure of vitality.² Low caste women believe that bathing underneath a person who has been hanged is efficacious. Women of the middle-classes with the same object try to obtain a piece of the wood of the gallows.³ In Gujarât, when a Jain ascetic of the Dûndiya sect dies in pursuance of a vow to starve himself, women who seek the blessing of a son try to secure it by creeping under the litter on which his corpse is removed, or by joining in the scramble for fragments of his clothes.⁴ Some at least of these practices (and the list might be

¹ Lane, i. 393, 394. There is an analogous way of treating barren cows in German East Africa (*Globus*, lxxxvii. 308).

² Census of Ind. 1901, xvii. 164. Sir R. C. Temple records a case of conviction of two women, a mother and daughter, of Daboli in the Panjab. The mother desired a male child and being told by the *faqir* that if she killed the eldest son or daughter of some one and bathed over the body she would have her wish gratified, she with her daughter's help seized and murdered a child answering the requirements and performed the ceremony (*J. A. I.* xxxii. 237).

³ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* i. 86. *Cf. J. A. I.* xxxv. 278.

⁴ Forbes, *Râs Mâla*, 611; Dayâ, 82.

lengthened) are more revolting than the incidents in the numerous stories wherein portions of dead bodies, given to maidens and other women, render them pregnant. Special power is, as we might expect, ascribed to saints, ascetics and persons put to a violent death. The latter are often apotheosised, quite independently of their character, or the reason for their untimely decease. Executed criminals share the honour with the most harmless martyrs; and ruffianism is no bar to divinity. That corporal relics of such personages should have the power of kindling new life in a barren woman may perhaps be regarded as only one of their wonder-working powers. But there would seem to be a further reason. Ascetics do not transmit life in the ordinary way. Those who suffer violent death are cut off before they have exhausted their power of transmission. In either case, therefore, there remains a fund which may be drawn upon by contact, or the performance of the proper ceremonies. Both stories and practices, however, point beyond an unexhausted power of transmission to the possibility of securing the life itself. It will be more convenient to pursue this subject in the next chapter.

The water wherein the Cairene women washed would owe its power to the putrefying blood. Washing in water endowed with supernatural power is not uncommon elsewhere. Incidental allusion has already been made to the practice, which we may now further illustrate. Transylvanian Saxon women not only drink of baptismal water: they also wash in it, preferably on Midsummer Day.¹ Among the Galician Jews unfruitful women when they bathe according to their

¹ von Wislocki, *Volksgl. Sieb. Sachs.* 75, 152.

ritual dip themselves nine times under water.¹ An Ottoman Jewess who desires children takes her bath holding in her arms a young girl whose future fecundity thus passes directly to her.² Saint Verena, one of the illustrious obscure of mediæval mythology, bathed in the Verenenbad at Baden in the Aargau, and thereby conferred on it such virtue that pregnant women or such as wish for children, if they bathe there, soon attain their desire.³ The reference to pregnant women must no doubt be understood of those who wish to avoid miscarriage and to be safely delivered. German tales and popular saws used to speak—perchance they still do—of a Kinderbrunnen, or Children's Well, whence babies were fetched. I have already mentioned some of which the water was drunk for the purpose of procuring issue; and we may perhaps infer that similar rites were practised at the rest. The Bride's Well, in Aberdeenshire, was at one time the resort of every bride in the neighbourhood on the evening of her marriage. Her maidens bathed her feet and the upper part of her body with water drawn from it; and this bathing, we are told, "ensured a family."⁴

Of the Cupped Stones of Scotland two may be mentioned as having the same property. The first is a stone basin called Saint Columba's Font, said to have been used by Saint Columba himself for baptism when he visited King Brude in his castle near Inverness. It lies in the old graveyard of Killianan at the mouth of the burn of Abriachan, on the shores of Loch Ness. Rain-water collects in the hollow, and generally remains even in the hottest weather.

¹ *Am Urquell*, iv. 187.

² *Mél.* viii. 270.

³ Kohlrusch, 324.

⁴ Rev. W. Gregor, *F. L.* iii. 68.

Among the virtues of this water are said to be "salutary effects in connection with child-bearing," and women, if report be correct, "frequented it in this belief till recently;" but whether it was of inward or outward application is not stated. The other stone is at Arpafeelie, near Inverness. Of this we are told that it possesses similar virtues to those of the former, "when childless women bathe in its cloud-drawn waters immediately before sun-rise."¹ An egg-shaped pebble of quartz two inches long by an inch and a half in greatest diameter was formerly used in the western division of Sandsting parish, Shetland, as a cure for sterility. The would-be mother washed her feet in burn-water (that is, water drawn from a running stream) in which the stone was laid. As in the cases just mentioned, however, none of the details of the rite have come down to us. The stone was said to have been brought originally from Italy. "Unlike most charms, it was not preserved in one family, but passed from the hands of one wise woman to another, the trust being only relinquished when the holder was on her death-bed."²

Among the springs on the continent of Europe, which we know were frequented by women for the purpose of obtaining children, the rites practised at very few are recorded. The Hermitage of Nuria, in Catalonia, is celebrated for its *olla*, or basin, into which barren women have only to dip their heads, after reciting some Paternosters, to recover their fecundity. There is also a fountain near Bizanos, in

¹ *Proc. Soc. Ant. Scoll.* xvi. 377, 387 (1882).

² *Id.* xviii. 452, quoting letter from Mr. James Shand of the Union Bank of Scotland, Edinburgh, the then owner.

Béarn, to which women who desire to become mothers go to bathe.¹ At Lanty near Luzy, and at the spring of the Good Lady at Onlay (Nièvre), they wash their breasts and then go and pray in the church. Some of the French, and especially Breton fountains, as well as a brook near Morlaix, have the reputation of assuring fecundity to mares and other domestic animals by outward application.²

In Sardinia, as we have seen, women are recommended to bathe in the sea. In Aglu, Morocco, a Schluh woman "desirous of knowing whether she will be blessed with a child or not," goes to the sea-shore on Midsummer Day and the two following days, and "lets seven waves go over her body each time; then she knows that, if she is going to have a child at all, she will have it very soon." In this case, as Dr. Westermarck observes, "magic has dwindled into divination."³ In Southern Mexico "there are special streams in which [Tlaxcalan] women bathe to ensure fecundity. Such a stream is the Sawapa. . . . It is also believed that bathing in the *temascal*," or sweat-bath, generally found in the enclosure of a dwelling-house "aids to fecundity."⁴

In India the practice of bathing for this purpose is well known. The well into which Pûran, that Panjâbî

¹ Chauvet, 57 note. For other cases in which the rite is not specified see Sébillot, *Petite Lég. Dorée*, 213; Cuzacq, 110.

² Sébillot, *F. L. France*, ii. 233, 381; iii. 79; *Id. Paganisme*, 228. In the Frick valley (Canton of Aargau, Switzerland), at certain times a jocular tribunal is held upon unmarried women over twenty-four years of age, and wine is poured into their laps. Probably this is to be explained in the same way (Hoffmann-Krayer, *Schweiz. Arch. f. Volkskunde*, xi. 265).

³ *F. L.* xvi. 32.

⁴ Starr, *Ethnog. S. Mexico*, i. 22.

Joseph, was thrown, is situate in the high road between Siálkot and Kalowál. His residence in it sanctified it to such an extent that the women of those parts believe that if they bathe in it they will become fruitful.¹ "In a well in Orissa the priests throw betelnuts into the mud, and barren women scramble for them. Those who find them will have their desire for children gratified before long."² Here again magic is dwindling into divination. Indian women sometimes, as we have seen, adopt more questionable means: the following examples may be added to those already mentioned. They wash naked in a boat in a field of sugar-canes, or under a fruiting mango-tree.³ Mangoes, it will be remembered, are favourite fruits for obtaining issue in Indian tales. According to another prescription the patient should begin by burning down seven houses. But English law is unsympathetic to this procedure; and women have to content themselves with burning secretly at midnight on Sunday under a cloudless sky, and if possible at a cross-road, a little grass from the thatch of seven dwellings. At this fire they heat the water wherein to bathe.⁴ Or on a Sunday or Tuesday night or during the Diwali festival the woman sits on a stool, which is then lowered down a well. She there strips and bathes, and being drawn up again performs the *chauk-purna* ceremony with incantations taught by a wizard. If there be any difficulty about descending a well, it seems she may perform the ceremony beneath a pipal-

¹ *Leg. Panj.* i. 2.

² Crooke, *F. L. N. Ind.* i. 50, citing Ball, *Jungle Life in India*.

³ *Panj. (Indian) N. and Q.* iv. 110 (par. 425).

⁴ *Ibid.* i. 15 (par. 125); 63 (par. 527); 100 (par. 770); ii. 185 (par. 981); iii. 98 (par. 447); *N. Ind. N. and Q.* i. 50 (par. 372).

tree. It is believed that after such a ceremony the well runs dry and the tree withers.¹ In other words, the woman has succeeded in obtaining a transfer of their life. In the Panjab there is still another way of obtaining issue. On the night of the feast of Diwali—always a night in the moonless half of the month—the husband draws water at seven different wells in an earthen pot, and places in the water leaves plucked from seven trees. He brings the pot to his wife at a spot where four cross-roads meet. She must bathe herself with the water unseen by anybody, and then put on new clothes, discarding her old ones.² Or else the woman perfectly nude covers a space in the middle of the crossway, and there lays leaves from the five royal trees, the *Ficus religiosa*, *Ficus indica*, *Acacia speciosa*, mango and *Butea frondosa*. On these she places a black head representing the god Ráma, and sitting on it she washes her entire body with water drawn in five pitchers from five wells, one situate in each quarter of the town or village and one outside it to the north-east. She pours the water from the pitchers into a vessel whose bottom is pierced by a hole whence the contents may flow over her body. The ceremony must be accomplished in absolute solitude, and all the utensils must be left on the spot.³

Among the ancient Greeks and Latins various

¹ *Ind. Cens.* 1901, xvii. 164.

² *Panj. N. and Q.* ii. 166 (par. 886).

³ *Ibid.* iv. 88 (par. 346). "For the same reason," says Mr. Crooke, "after childbirth the mother is taken to worship the village well." He describes the ceremony, and adds others (*F. L. N. Ind.* i. 51). "Bathing when standing or sitting on a dead male buffalo's head" is also stated to be a method of obtaining children (*Panj. N. and Q.* i. 100, par. 770). Does this explain the "black head" mentioned above?

streams and springs were deemed of virtue against barrenness. Dr. Ploss cites divers classical writers as recording the claims of the river Elatus in Arcadia, the Thespian spring on the island of Helicon, the spring near the temple of Aphrodite on Hymettos, and the warm springs of Sinuessa in Campania. Others might easily be found, if necessary, both ancient and modern. A curious rite is repeated among the Serbs. A young, sterile married woman cuts a reed, fills it with wine, and sews it, together with an old knife and a wheaten cake, in a linen bag. Holding this bag under her left arm she wades in flowing water, while some one on the brink prays for her: "Fulfil my prayer, O God; O mother of God;" and so on through the whole gamut of sanctities. During this prayer the wader drops the bag in the stream, and coming out sets her feet in two caldrons, out of which her husband must lift her and carry her home. Here we have unmistakably a prayer and offerings of food and drink to the water, the latter remaining but little changed from ancient times, while the former has put on a Christian guise.¹ Among the Mordwins in the Russian Government of Tambov the barren woman goes at midnight to a river holding in her hands a live cock which she has previously loaded with silken threads hung with tiny bells. She prostrates herself a certain number of times; then, praying the *ved-ava*, or water-spirit, to render her fertile, she flings the bird into the water. In the adjoining Government of Penza, she takes some oatmeal, millet and hops and one kopeck in a basket, and placing the whole on the river-bank, she prays the *ved-ava*

¹ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 437, citing Petrowitsch

to forgive her, and “*de se faire une place dans son ventre.*” On her return home she knocks at the door, saying: “The wood to be dried up, I to be swollen up!” The *ved-ava*, it should be noted, are not merely river-spirits; they dispense rain and fertility. Imagined themselves as females in human form, they are protectresses of love and of the fecundity of women. Young couples pray to them for children and it is to their anger that sterility is ascribed: hence probably the prayer for forgiveness just mentioned.¹ There is no bathing mentioned in these rites. We find it, however, practised in the parallel case of the Burmaler Rabba spring near Constantine, in Algeria, frequented both by Jewesses and Moors for the removal of infecundity. Each of these women slays a black hen before the door of the grotto, offers inside a wax-taper and a honey-cake, takes a bath and goes away assured of the speedy accomplishment of her wishes.² Childless couples in Palestine “go long distances to bathe in certain pools; and barren women visit the hot springs in various districts, not as might be supposed for any medicinal properties, but because the *jinn* who causes the vapour is regarded as being capable in a definite and physical sense of giving them offspring.”³ The Oromó of East Africa believe in a multiplicity of supernatural beings called by the generic name of Ajâna. Some of these have their seat in the depths of streams and springs. Their presence lends the water supernatural power. The

¹ Smirnov, i. 432, 397, 398. Kara Kirghiz women spend a night beside a holy well; but the ceremonies practised are not given, unless they include that mentioned *infra*, p. 113 (*Radloff*, v. 2).

² Ploss, *Weib*, i. 437.

³ Mrs. H. H. Spoer, *F. L.* xviii. 55.

wells and rivers they haunt are therefore much resorted to. Unfruitful women especially believe that by bathing in rivers thus consecrated the desired fertility may be obtained.¹

In the same way it is precisely while bathing that the women of a certain tribe in Northern Queensland are believed to be impregnated. This is done by a nature-spirit, called Kunya, who makes babies out of pandanus-root and inserts them into women in the water.² The population of the Seranglao and Gorong Archipelago between Celebes and New Guinea is Mohammedan, at least in name. Among the ceremonies for the production of children we are vaguely told that infertile men and women are made to bathe in a particular manner.³ In the partially Christianised Ambon and Uliase Islands persons who have no children take drugs or "bathe in a certain prescribed manner;" but what that manner is our authority leaves undescribed.⁴ In the Archipelagoes of Watubela, Aaru and Sula barren women and their husbands go to the ancestral graves, or if Moslems on Friday to the so-called *Kub Karana*, or sacred tomb, to pray together with some old women. They bring offerings, which include water, and a live goat, or if heathen a young pig. The husband prays for a medicine, and promises, if a child be given him, to offer the goat (or pig, if a heathen), or to give it to the people to eat. It is expected that after this the medicine will be prescribed to both husband and wife in dreams. They both wash in the water they have brought,

¹ Paulitschke, ii. 36.

² Roth, *N. Queensland Ethnog.* Bull. v. 23, § 83.

³ Riedel, 176.

⁴ *Id.* 75.

which is consecrated by thus standing for a while on the grave and eat *sirih-pinang* together, putting some also on the grave in a dish. They take the goat or pig back home, to be sacrificed in accordance with the husband's vow, only if the wife become pregnant.¹ The heathen Dyaks of Borneo offer domestic fowls and other birds to water-gods against unfruitfulness, which these divinities inflict upon women, or remit, at their own uncontrolled pleasure; but it does not appear that the votaries bathe. The barren woman (or sometimes a man) gives a big feast called Caramin and goes to the haunt of the Jata, or divinity, in question in a boat beautifully decorated, taking the birds with gilded beaks as offerings. These birds are either thrown alive into the water, or their heads are merely cut off and offered, while the bodies are consumed by the votaries. In many instances, we are told, carved wooden figures of birds are made use of, instead of the real article.² The nature-goddess of the Yorubas on the West Coast of Africa is represented as a pregnant female; and the water that is consecrated by being kept in her temple is highly esteemed for infertility and difficult labours.³ Probably it is for external application as in the case of the corresponding goddess of the neighbouring Ewhe.⁴ The Wandorobbo of German East Africa celebrate a feast

¹ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 438, citing an article by Riedel in *Bijdragen*.

² *Ibid.* 436, citing Hein.

³ *Ibid.* 439, citing Bastian. I suspect the goddess referred to is Odudua, who is strictly speaking the Earth-goddess (see Ellis, *Yoruba*, 41). But there is nothing to identify the passage of Bastian referred to; and if there were, we should probably be no better off. The blessings invoked by students on both Bastian and Bartels will always be of a limited character.

⁴ Spieth, 716.

from time to time to pray Uöd, their god, for children. At this feast the married women sit in a circle round a small fire, in which are sprinkled by way of incense the waxen dregs of honey-beer. They sing, calling on Uöd, while an old man of distinction sprinkles them with honey-beer. After a quarter of an hour or so of this they get up and dance, still singing. The ceremony closes with a meal of flesh-meat and honey-beer.¹

Most of these observances include bathing or washing or at least sprinkling with water or some other liquid as an integral part of the rite. Where this is not the case the water-god is invoked. The fertilising power of liquids, especially water, is thus recognised in them all. This would seem to be the chief idea underlying the rites in connection with water performed by a bride on being brought to her new home. It would be wandering too far from our present subject to discuss these rites, which are often very complex. But one at least of the objects they have in view is the production of offspring. I add a few references below for readers who wish to pursue the inquiry.² Meanwhile it will be seen that the practices whether of drinking or bathing reviewed in

¹ Merker, 250.

² Jevons, *Plutarch's R. Q.* ci.; *L'Anthropologie*, iii. 548, 558; *Congress (1891) Rep.* 345; Kolbe, 163; Rodd, 94; Dalton, *passim*; Ploss, *Weib*, i. 445; Winternitz, *Altind. Hochz.* 47, 101; Löbel, 149, 175, 203; Hoffmann-Krayer, *Schweiz. Arch. f. Volksk.* xi. 265. I may add as evidence at once of a belief in the value of washing for the production of children and of a different view of the operation of water, that about Adaël, west of the White Nile, in Equatorial Africa, the Kich negresses do not wash in water, but "in liquids much less innocent," unless they want to be sterile (Ploss, *Weib*, i. 439, apparently citing Brehm).

the preceding pages bear, in their simpler forms at any rate, a remarkable analogy to the incidents in the stories wherein we are presented with birth as caused by these means. As far as the more complex practices differ, their difference arises by development of ritual or the necessity to screen the real substance of the rite from the jealousy of a predominant religion.

Having regard to the legends of Danae and the Mexican goddess who was fructified by the rain we may note that Hottentot maidens must run about naked in the first thunderstorm after the festival when their maturity is celebrated. The rain, pouring down over the whole body, has the virtue of making fruitful the girl who receives it and rendering her capable of having a large offspring.¹ On the other hand, young unmarried Bushmen women and girls must hide themselves from the rain,² probably because they may be rendered pregnant thereby. Among the Bamonaheng, one of the sub-clans of the Bakwena, the principal clan of the Basuto, a cripple named Ntidi used to have a great reputation for assisting barren women by his prayers. Such women used to go to pray in a cavern, and if water fell on their heads it was ascribed to him, and they firmly believed that their prayers were heard.³ The Ts'ets'āut, a Tinneh tribe of Portland Inlet, British Columbia, forbid a girl who is undergoing her seclusion at puberty to expose her face to the sun or to the sky, else it will rain.⁴ It may be suspected that here, as among the Bushmen, we have a taboo

¹ Hahn, *Tsun-i-goam*, 87.

² Lloyd, *Rep.* 21.

³ Jacottet, in *Bull. Soc. Neuchat. Géog.* ix. 136. Sometimes it was small stones which fell on the women, without their knowing whence.

⁴ Boas, *Brit. Ass. Rep.* 1895, 566; *Id. Chinook Texts*, 246.

against premature exposure to rain. It is even possible that a similar belief in the power of rain to fructify women was once common in Europe. In Iceland a light rain at a wedding is still a sign of a fruitful marriage.¹ It is accounted lucky in this country; and luck in marriage we know means above all things children. On the Riviera a rhyme declares that "if the bride and bridegroom wet their feet they will be three within the year"—that is, they will have a child.² A saying current in many parts of Germany points in the same direction, namely, that when it rains on St. John's Day the nuts will be wormy and many girls pregnant³—unless as a Slav practice already cited may suggest the pregnancy be the result of their eating the wormy nuts.

The legend of Danae, however, suggests, and several of the other stories I have cited assert, that supernatural pregnancy was due to the rays of the sun. The ancient Parsees, as we might have expected, believed that the beams of the rising sun were the most effective means for giving fruitfulness to the newly wedded; and even to-day, in Iran and among the Tartars in Central Asia, the morning after the marriage has been consummated the pair are brought out to be greeted by the rising sun.⁴ The same custom was formerly practised by the Turks of Siberia.⁵ At old Hindu

¹ *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxxii. 60.

² J. B. Andrews, *Rev. Trad. Pop.* ix. 116.

³ Wuttke, 81. In Hainault a profusion of fruit on the nut-trees prognosticates many bastards during the year (Harou, 28).

⁴ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 446, without acknowledgment, but apparently on the authority of Vambéry (*Das Türkenwolk*, p. 112), who is cited by Frazer (*G. B.* iii. 222 note) for the custom.

⁵ Frazer, *loc. cit.*

marriages, the bride was made to look towards the sun, or in some other way exposed to its rays. This was performed the day before the consummation of the marriage, and was expressly called the Impregnation rite.¹ At the present time among Hindus in the old North-Western Provinces, a woman who is childless and desirous of being blessed with a child, stands, after bathing, naked facing the sun, and invokes his aid to remove her barrenness.² Among the Chaco Indians of South America, the bride and bridegroom sleep the first night on a skin with their heads towards the west; for, we are told, the marriage is not considered as ratified until the rising sun shines on their feet the succeeding morning.³ Whether or not it is really their feet on which the sun is expected to shine, the ratification of the marriage by the sun must be intended to obtain the blessing of fertility.

Allusion has been made to the puberty customs of the Bushmen and the Ts'ets'äut. In the lower culture it is usual that girls on attaining maturity are placed in retreat; but in consequence of the vagueness with which the rites are described we are often left uncertain whether they are simply banished from society for a time as "unclean," or are immured with special precautions against sunshine. Moreover, it is no uncommon phenomenon that in course of time and cultural changes the real object of a ceremony is forgotten, and the ceremony itself modified—perhaps in consequence of this forgetfulness, perhaps for other reasons—or at least the account given of it by the people who

¹ Crooke, *Tribes and Castes*, ii. 149, citing Bühler.

² *N. Ind. N. and Q.* iii. 35 (par. 71).

³ *Trans. Ethnol. Soc. N.S.* iii. 327.

practise it is not to be relied upon. The general subject of puberty customs is too wide to be fully discussed here. I shall therefore adduce only a few cases in which the intention to screen from the sun is either expressed, or a matter of obvious inference.

Dr. Frazer has made a large collection of such cases of which it is necessary to do little more than remind the reader.¹ They include examples from various tribes of South America in which the pubescent girl is confined, usually in her hammock, but at all events closely covered up, for a longer or shorter period, and corresponding examples from the East Indies, both continental and insular, in which the unfortunate victim is immured in the dark, sometimes even for years. The requirement is often express that the sun must not shine on her, and where it is not so stated it is obvious from the description of the rites. The case of the Cambodian maiden is particularly significant. She is said at puberty "to enter into the shade." She is kept in the house and is only allowed to bathe after nightfall when people are no longer recognisable, and has to submit to other rules. This seclusion lasts from months to years, according to the social position of the family; but it is interrupted during eclipses, when she is allowed to go out to worship the monster that produces eclipses by seizing the heavenly bodies between his teeth, praying him to listen to her prayers for good fortune.

Among the Indians of the various tribes of British Columbia and Alaska the seclusion from the sun was very stringent, although it varied in time from a few days to two years, and the details differed from tribe

¹ Frazer, *G. B.* iii. 204 *sqq.*

to tribe. To the tribes mentioned by Dr. Frazer may be added the Chinook, the Squamish, the Lillooet and the Haida. Among the Chinook a girl must remain hidden for five days. A potlatch is then made; she is brought out to dance and afterwards hidden again. For fifty days she must not eat fresh food. For a hundred days she must not warm herself by the fire, nor look at the people, nor at the sky, nor pick berries. When she looks at the sky bad weather is the result; when she picks berries it rains!¹ A Squamish girl does not seem to have been secluded; but she was kept indoors at work all day long after puberty, and during her catamenia she was not allowed to go near the fire.² Among the Lillooet a girl was isolated in a small lodge made of fir-branches or bark. She painted her face red. Each evening at dusk she left her lodge and wandered about all night, returning before sunrise. Even then she wore a mask of fir-branches. Among the Lower Lillooet many girls wore masks of goat-skin which covered head, neck, shoulders and breast, leaving only a small opening from the brow to the chin; and before going out every one had to paint the exposed part of her face. Girls remained isolated for not less than one year nor more than four years; but two years was the usual time. They performed at night ceremonies intended to influence their future course of life and obtain easy delivery.³ Of the Haida ceremonies it is only necessary here to refer to two. Among the Masset the girl remained behind a screen in the house. She was subject to

¹ Boas, *Chinook Texts*, 246.

² Hill-Tout, *B. A. Rep.* 1900, 484.

³ Teit, *Jesup Exped.* ii. 263.

certain dietary regulations for two years. She was not allowed to look at the sky or go down to the beach like other people, or it would become bad weather. Among the Stastas the maturing girl had to wear a large hat covered with green paint which protected her face from the sun and fire.¹ The Malemut and other Eskimo about Bering Strait compel a girl to live for forty days in a corner of the hut with her face to the wall or in summer in a rough separate hut, her hood over her head and her hair hanging dishevelled over her eyes. She is not allowed to go out at all by day and only once during the night when every one is asleep.² In south-western Oregon the Takelma girl is subjected to a number of ceremonies and taboos. "She was not permitted for instance to look at the sky or to gaze too freely about her ; and to ensure this a string of the blue jay's tail-feathers tied on close together was put about" her forehead and tied to her back hair, "an arrangement that effectually screened from her view everything about her." She sleeps with her head in a funnel-shaped basket, the declared purpose (which may be very different from the real purpose) being to prevent her from dreaming of the dead—a bad omen.³

The Paliyans of the Palni Hills in the south of India celebrate a feast when a girl attains maturity. Two weeks previously a grass-hut is built for her. There she remains shut up for twelve days, food being brought to her once or twice a day. On the morning of the thirteenth day the matrons of the settlement

¹ Swanton, *Jesup Exped.* v. 49, 50.

² Nelson, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xviii. 291.

³ E. Sapir, *Amer. Anthropol.* N.S. ix. 274.

forcibly drag her to some neighbouring pond or stream and plunge her seven times into the water. She is then brought back to her hut and there confined for two days more, during which time no food at all is given her. On the fifteenth day she is at last set free, the hut where she was immured is burnt down, and a grand feast takes place in which all the families of the settlement join, the headman of the tribe or his representative sometimes presiding and receiving a gift, such as a skin or valuable roots. The whole day is given up to mirth and gaiety, to eating, drinking and dancing. In the Madura district two of the castes of the plains observe a similar custom of shutting up girls at the time of puberty, the Valayans for fourteen and the Parivarams for sixteen days ; but the accompanying rites differ in some particulars from those of the Paliyans.¹ Mr. Macdonald, a missionary, speaking generally of the Bantu tribes of South Africa, especially of those of the south-east, tells us that if menstruation "commence for the first time while a girl is walking, gathering wood, or working in the field, she runs to the river and hides herself among the reeds for the day, so as not to be seen by men. She covers her head carefully that the sun may not shine on it and shrivel her up into a withered skeleton, as would result from exposure to the sun's beams. After dark she returns to her home and is secluded" in a separate hut, where a small portion is partitioned off for her at the farther end. There the sunshine, it may be observed, can by no possibility reach her ; and there she remains under taboo, with some other girls to attend her, for about three weeks. She then leaves the hut,

¹ Father Dahmen, *Anthropos*, iii. 27.

washes, and after certain ceremonies is received as a woman.¹ Ordinary girls among the Barotse pass through comparatively simple ceremonies of purification, and are initiated into the mysteries of adult life by certain old women. But the case of a daughter of the royal house is by no means so simple. She is required to spend three months not merely in retirement but in the darkness of a hut alone. She is forbidden to speak to the slave-girls who attend her. From her seclusion she issues so transformed with the fat which is the result of good feeding and complete inaction that she is hardly recognised. She is taken by night to the river and bathed in the presence of all the women of the village. The next day she appears in public decked with ornaments and paint and tattooed around the eyes, a woman and ready for marriage.² Among the Bavili in French Congo the girl on attaining maturity is caught and forced into what is called "the paint-house." There she is kept, painted red and carefully fed and treated until she is considered ready for marriage, when she is washed and led to her husband.³ Among the Bashilange on the rivers Lulua and Kassai in south-west Africa a girl is shut up for from four to six days in a hut. When she is let out again her whole body is rubbed with powdered tukula wood and castor oil and her face is painted red. The occasion is one of great rejoicing; and she is carried on a man's shoulders through the village.⁴ Among the natives of Loango girls at puberty are confined in separate huts. The

¹ *J. A. I.* xx. 116.

² Béguin, 112.

³ Dennett, 20.

⁴ *Mittheil. der Afrik. Gesellsch. in Deutschland*, iv. 259.

Awankonde of Lake Nyassa and the Wafiomi of Eastern Africa also seclude girls for a considerable period, apparently in the dark. On New Pomerania, the largest island in the Bismarck Archipelago, the Sulka bride is taken to her future husband's parents some time before the wedding. They keep her secluded in a cell of their house, where she is tattooed and where she is required to observe abstinence from certain foods and can make no fire. On going out for any purpose she must be covered up from head to foot, and must whistle that men may get out of her way. Thus she passes the time until the wedding-day.¹

On the island of Mabuig, in Torres Straits, the girl is put into a dark corner of her parents' house surrounded with bushes, which are piled up so high around her that only her head is visible. Here she remains for three months. The sun may not shine on her; or as one of the natives expressed it, "he can't see daytime, he stop inside dark." On the adjacent island of Muralug, a rough bower-like hut is built for the girl on the beach, and she lies inside, in a shallow excavation in the sand. She is not liberated for two months. On the Cape York Peninsula of Australia, a girl at puberty has to lie in a humpy, or shelter, for from four to six weeks. She may not see the sun, and towards sunset she must keep her eyes shut until the sun has disappeared, "so sun don't strike him." Similar but less lengthy is the seclusion among the Otati of the neighbourhood of Gape Granville, on the east of the same peninsula and the Uiyumkwi of Red Island, the former only lasting during the flow of the

¹ *Arch. Anthropol.* N.S. i. 210.

catamenia, while the latter is reduced to a few hours.¹

The foregoing examples are drawn from the Eskimo and the tribes of British Columbia, from the aboriginal inhabitants of various parts of South America, from the Bantu of Africa, from the Hindus and the Cambodians, from more than one of the East Indian islands, from Melanesians, Papuans, the islanders of Torres Straits, and tribes of the extreme north of Australia. Most of the cases from so wide an area were discovered by the almost limitless research of Dr. Frazer. They raise, as he has pointed out, the suspicion that the stories of impregnation and capture by the sun are echoes of puberty rites in which exposure to the rays of the sun is forbidden. It would not necessarily follow that the original reason for concealment from the sun was fear of impregnation by that luminary; though having regard to the stories and to the beliefs respecting impregnation disclosed in the present chapter, it is probable. Puberty is a crisis of extreme importance in life. The precautions taken with regard to girls indicate that they are held, not merely to be charged with malign influence, but to be specially sensitive to the onset of powers other than human. They may very well be supposed liable at that moment to impregnation by the unusual means of sun or rain. We have seen that Hottentot maidens are rendered fruitful by a thunderstorm, and that other tribes very low down in culture have customs and beliefs pointing in the same direction; and we seem to find traces of such beliefs even in Europe. A presumption is thus raised in favour of the parallel belief

¹ *Torres Straits Rep.* v. 203 sqq.

in impregnation by the sun; and though we cannot be said at present to have actual proof of it, the wedding ceremonies I have cited greatly strengthen the presumption.¹

The belief in conception by the moon is rare. It was perhaps the belief, as we have seen, in ancient Egypt with regard to the bull-god Apis. It is still found in Brittany.² The Ja-Luo of Eastern Uganda hold that "a woman can only become pregnant at the time of the new moon, and generally that the moon has a great deal to do with the occurrence."³ In some of the East Indian islands a star is credited, as in several stories, with it. In Ambon and Uliase albinos are attributed to conception by a falling star; by the people of Seranglao and Gorong the morning star is accused as the cause.⁴

Fire, in various parts of Europe, is believed to cause conception. About Ranggen in the Tirol a barren woman is advised to creep into a baking oven while it is still warm.⁵ Dr. Frazer has pointed out that the custom of leaping over bonfires has this among other things for its object. At Cobern, in the Eifel, an

¹ One difficulty in the way of identifying the immurement in the stories as an echo of the puberty rites is the fact that in many, if not most, of the tales the child is immured from infancy. This is probably a mere exaggeration. On the other hand, such cases are not unknown in savage life, as among certain branches of the Iroquois, when a child (boy or girl) is closely secluded from every one except the appointed guardian, and only allowed out of his place of concealment at night. This seclusion lasts until puberty. It is generally occasioned, as in the stories, by some omen or prodigy accompanying birth; and the child is regarded as possessed of magical power (*Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xxi. 142, 255).

² Luzel, *Rev. Celt.* iii. 452; *Rev. Trad. Pop.* xv. 471.

³ *J. A. I.* xxxiii. 358.

⁴ Riedel, 75, 176.

⁵ Zingerle, *Sitten*, 26 (No. 152).

effigy is burnt on Shrove Tuesday ; the people dance round the pyre and the last bride must leap over it. In Lechain a young man and a young woman leap together over the bonfire on Midsummer Day. If they escape unsmirched, the man will not suffer from fever, and the girl will not become a mother within the year—the flames will not have touched and fertilised her. In Ireland barren cattle are driven through the midsummer fires ; and a girl who jumps thrice over it will soon marry and become the mother of many children. In various parts of France a girl who dances round nine fires will be sure to marry within the year. While in some parts of France and Belgium it is the rule that the bonfires usual on the first Sunday of Lent should be kindled by the person who was last married.¹ The relation of these beliefs and practices to those which exhibit bonfires as quickening and fertilising influences over the vegetable world is clear. For details reference must be made to the pages of *The Golden Bough*.

The specific manner, however, in which the fires were supposed to work their beneficent purpose is a subject of conjecture rather than of absolute proof. It has been suggested that it was by purification. The fumigation which human beings and cattle would undergo in passing through or over the fire, and which would be conveyed to the fields and fruit-trees by the flames and smoke of the fire and of the torches lighted at its glowing embers, would drive away evil influences. That this idea in fact enters into some of the celebrations is clear, if not expressly affirmed by those who indulge in them. But it by no means accounts for all

¹ Frazer, *G. B.* iii. 244, 270, 305, 314.

the rites. It seems that on the whole the explanation of the fires given by Mannhardt and Frazer is the true one, namely, "that they are sun-charms or magical ceremonies intended to secure a proper supply of sunshine for men, animals and plants." Such fires are mimetic rites. The power ascribed to them of bringing about the occurrence which they mimic, namely, the supply of sunshine, would, by a confusion of thought common to magic, be extended and identified with the power of the sun itself. Contact with them, therefore, or with the smoke or embers, or with torches kindled at them, would produce the same effect as exposure to the rays of the sun. We have seen that the sun is believed to fertilise not merely the fields but human beings also, and that marriage rites and not improbably puberty ceremonies have reference to this belief—a belief, moreover, of which expression is found in many of the stories. We accordingly conclude that these fires are believed to have a direct and immediate influence on fecundity, whether of the fields and fruit-trees or of women, similar to that ascribed to the sun.

A corresponding question arises as to the exact operation of a famous Roman rite. The festival of the Lupercal has been elaborately discussed by Mannhardt and more recently with great care by Mr. Warde Fowler. "On February 15," says the latter, "the celebrants of this ancient rite met at the cave called the Lupercal, at the foot of the steep south-western corner of the Palatine Hill—the spot where, according to the tradition, the flooded Tiber had deposited the twin children at the foot of the sacred fig-tree, and where they were nourished by the she-wolf." There, after a

sacrifice of goats and a dog, and the offering of sacred cakes made by the Vestals from the first ears of the last harvest, "two youths of high rank, belonging, we may suppose one to each of the two collegia of Luperci, . . . were brought forward; these had their foreheads smeared with the knife bloody from the slaughter of the victims, and then wiped with wool dipped in milk. As soon as this was done they were obliged to laugh." The Luperci then "girt themselves with the skins of the slaughtered goats, and feasted luxuriously; after which they ran round the base of the Palatine Hill, or at least a large part of its circuit, apparently in two companies one led by each of the two youths. As they ran they struck at all the women who came near them or offered themselves to their blows, with strips of skin cut from the hides of the same victims" with which they were girt. The course taken up by the runners has not been completely described; but their object was apparently a *lustratio* of the Palatine city. It is aptly compared by Mr. Fowler with the old English custom of beating the bounds of the parish, "when the minister," says Bourne as quoted by Brand, "accompanied by his churchwardens and parishioners, [was] wont to deprecate the vengeance of God, beg a blessing on the fruits of the earth and preserve the rights and properties of the parish."¹ The women were struck according to Juvenal on the open hand, according to Ovid on the back. The object was beyond doubt to fertilise them. The only dispute is whether that fertilisation was accomplished by purification, by driving out the demon of sterility, or directly by the touch of the sacred thongs.

¹ Fowler, 310 *sqq* Brand, i. 168.

Mannhardt has collected a long series of examples, chiefly from ancient and modern Europe, of the ritual use of blows.¹ Dr. Frazer in *The Golden Bough* has added a considerable number from various other parts of the world.² The conclusion at which the former arrived was that they all belong to a cycle of related customs, of which some have preserved one morsel of old tradition and others have preserved others, and that the object of all alike was the expulsion of the demons of sickness and sterility from mankind and from plants. This conclusion has been strengthened by Dr. Frazer's collection. Yet I am by no means persuaded that it is entirely accurate for all the cases cited. There is a great temptation to interpret in the same way customs which assume a similar, even if not quite the same, form. The possibility, however, of the conflation of two or more rites originally distinct, and the alternative possibility of one rite's being influenced in its form by a rite perfectly distinct in purpose though similar in expression, must never be omitted from our calculations. The practice of throwing a stone or a stick upon a cairn of stones, or of tying a piece of rag from one's clothing on a bush above a sacred well, or throwing a pin into the well itself is very widespread. When in Sweden a piece of money is thrown upon a cairn, instead of a stick or a stone; or when the Scottish peasant hammers a bawbee, instead of a nail, into the withered trunk of the Wishing Tree of Loch Maree; the ceremony has obviously

¹ Mannhardt, *BK.* 251 *sqq.*; *Id.*, *Myth. Forsch.* 113 *sqq.*

² Frazer, *G. B.* iii. 129, 215, 217. Probably the worshippers of Demeter at the Greek festival of the Thesmophoria were beaten for the purpose of increasing their productiveness; but we do not know of what wood the rods were made (Farnell, iii. 104).

undergone some change of this kind. Whatever may have been the intention in adding a stone to a cairn, or hammering a nail into a sacred tree, we cannot doubt the analogy in form between this act and the much less archaic gift of money at a shrine has struck the peasant's mind and caused a substitution of the more valuable for the less valuable object bestowed. So it seems to me that the rite of beating a patient in order to drive the demon of sickness or some other evil being out of him has been confounded with the similar rite of striking to cause some good to enter him. These two distinct rites have in fact undergone conflation, the same act which drives out the demon being held to induce the desired good.

M. Salomon Reinach has objected to Mannhardt's interpretation that the latter has overlooked the importance of striking with the branches of certain definite trees or plants, or with thongs made from the hides of certain animals.¹ It may be replied that certain plants are endowed in the popular belief with the property of drawing away or keeping at a distance, witches and devils. This must be admitted. But here again arises the difficulty, of disentangling notions which have grown together for ages. The difficulty, however, does not attach with the same persistence to all. At Hildesheim the women and girls are struck at Shrovetide with a small fir-tree or a stalk of rosemary.² In Altmark at the same period a band of men-servants goes from farm to farm with music and beats with birch-twigs first the mistress, then her daughters, and lastly the servant-maids.³ These are only samples of

¹ *L'Anthrop.* xv. 52.

² Mannhardt, *BK.* 254.

³ *Ibid.* 256.

the use of three different plants, of which more are recorded in Mannhardt's pages. We have already seen that rosemary is prescribed for barrenness. The fir is a symbol of fertility. In North Germany brides and bridegrooms often carry fir-branches with lighted tapers. At Weimar and in Courland firs are planted before the house where the wedding takes place.¹ The ceremonies concerning the fir practised at a wedding by the Little Russians at Volhynia are specially instructive. When the wedding procession returning from the church draws nigh to the bridegroom's house, a loaf of bread and a branch of fir or pine are adorned with mountain-elder, white blossoms and ears of corn and oats, and carried thence by the *boyarin* or master of the ceremonies into the bride's house. At the appearance of the fir the bride must modestly lay her face upon the table and carefully hide it. The bridegroom goes thrice round the table, takes a cloth, lifts up the bride's head, kisses her and places himself again at her side. The fir and the loaf are set on the middle of the table opposite the bridal pair. The bride's mother showers nuts and oats over her new son-in-law, and sprinkles him with holy water. Ears of corn are then fastened by the bridesmaids on all present, beginning with the bridegroom.² Save for the use of holy water, which is an intrusive element, the whole object here is directly to produce fertility. In particular, that this is the purpose of the introduction of the fir is strikingly shown by the ritual modesty of the bride. The same interpretation is to be put upon the use of the birch-twigs in the custom, practised

¹ De Gubernatis, *Myth. Plant.* ii. 333.

² Mannhardt, *BK.* 222.

about Roding in the Upper Palatinate, of beating the bride as she walks up from the church-door to her seat opposite the bridegroom.¹ There would be no sense in expelling demons at that moment and in that place. Moreover, the various uses of the birch exhibited by Mannhardt, and especially its connection with the Mayday or Whitsuntide festival, seem unmistakably to prove that, like the rosemary and the fir, its virtue is not really that of exorcism but of fertilisation.

From these examples it is clear that M. Reinach is right in insisting upon the need of paying attention to the material with which the blows are struck, in order correctly to interpret their meaning. At the Lupercal the blows were struck with thongs made of the hides of the sacrificed goats. The Luperci, clothing themselves with the hides, cut strips from them for the purpose. The custom by which the officiant at a sacrifice, or the person on whose behalf the sacrifice is offered, puts on the skin of the victim, is widely spread. Its object is to identify the worshipper with the victim, to obtain for him its sacred character, to impart to him, as Robertson Smith says, "the sacred virtue of its life." Thus the Luperci by clothing themselves in the skins were identified with the victims, were indued with their qualities, furnished with their sacred virtue. Striking others with those skins, they were able to impart to them something of the same qualities. Here is no element of purgation or of exorcism: the object is direct and immediate fertilisation. The story told by Ovid to explain the rite confirms this interpretation. It is to the effect that after the Rape of the Sabines the wives acquired by

¹ Mannhardt, *BK.* 299.

the Romans remained barren. Juno, having been consulted in her sacred grove on the Esquiline, replied: "*Italidas matres sacer hircus inito!*" An augur recently banished from Etruria (the Etruscans were famous for augury) interpreted the oracle. He offered a goat in sacrifice, and by his command the women exposed their backs to blows from thongs cut from the hide. The happiest results followed; the women became mothers, and Rome was saved from extinction.¹ It is perfectly true that this is an ætiological tale, invented long afterwards to account for a rite the origin of which was unknown. It is only cited here to show that the ancients attached no purgative quality to the blows: they understood their purpose to be no less and no more than that of fecundating the childless women who submitted to them.

The same direct action is to be attributed to the blows bestowed in the county of Békés, in Hungary, on sterile women. They are struck with a stick which has been first used to separate pairing dogs. In the county of Bács a barren woman is fumigated with the hairs of pairing dogs, or with Christmas crumbs. In the same county a Serb woman, who has already borne and is therefore endowed with fecundity, will communicate it to a barren friend by spanning her waist at Christmas with a doughy hand. Among the Schokaz the unfruitful woman sleeps on a cloth where-with she has touched two pairing dogs. The Slovaks in county Gömör beat her with the material in which the midwife has wrapped a child at birth; and we are expressly told that they believe that by this means she becomes pregnant.²

¹ Ovid, *Fasti*, ii. 429.

² Temesváry, 8.

Mannhardt has noted that in many of the periodical ceremonies he has recorded the blows are specially aimed at women and girls. Thus, in addition to the instances already mentioned, in Shaumburg the men-servants at Shrovetide strike the maids and married women on the calves so vigorously that the blood often flows. The next night, however, the maids have their turn, and doubtless repay with interest what they have received.¹ In Ukrainia on Palm Sunday, scarcely have the people left the church when the boys brandish the willow-rods recently borne in the procession and lay them about the backs of all who are near them, but preferably on the women and girls.² The "Easter-smack" which is given in many parts of Germany and Austria is often bestowed only on the women.³ In some parts of Voigtland the girls are whipped by the lads with nosegays.⁴ In Voigtland and the whole of the Saxon Erzgebirge the lads on Boxing Day beat the women and girls, if possible while they are still abed, with birchen twigs which have already sprouted, bound together with red ribbons, or with something else that is green, such as rosemary-stalks or juniper-twigs.⁵ From a police regulation in the archives of Plassenburg dated in the year 1599 we learn that it was then the custom at Christmas for strong men-servants to penetrate into the houses, strip

¹ Mannhardt, *BK.* 254.

² *Ibid.* 256. So in some parts of Greece people beat one another with palm-branches on coming out of Church on Palm Sunday (*Revue Archéologique*, 1907, 55). Surely no devils can withstand the Palm Sunday service in the Greek church, and need to be exorcised in this way!

³ Mannhardt, *op. cit.* 261.

⁴ *Ibid.* 264.

⁵ *Ibid.* 265.

the girls and women and beat them with switches or rods.¹

Other examples might be added; but without lengthening the European list, let us compare these with one from the utmost East. The *Makura no Sōshi*, a Japanese work written about the year 1000 A.D., tells us that it was the custom, at the festival held in honour of the Sahe no Kami, or phallic deities, on the first full moon in every year, for the boys in the Imperial Palace to go about striking the younger women with the potsticks used for making gruel on the occasion. This was supposed to ensure fertility. Probably the practice was by no means confined to the boys in the palace, for "the Japanese novelist and antiquary Kiōden, writing about a century ago, informs us that a similar custom was at that time still practised in the province of Echigo. He gives a drawing of the sticks used for the purpose, of the phallic character of which" in Mr. Aston's opinion "there can be no doubt." The figure reproduced by Mr. Aston would certainly seem to bear out his opinion.² Here the occasion, the form of the instrument and the effect attributed to the blows are strikingly similar to those we have been examining, and confirm the interpretation I have ventured to place upon the European customs.

Certain marriage ceremonies have the same object. At Athens the ægis of Athene was taken by the priestess to the houses of newly married women.³

¹ Mannhardt, *op. cit.* 267. Compare with the above the custom in the Bohemian Riesengebirge and the rhymes uttered as the various limbs and organs are struck (*Zeits. des Vereins*, x. 332).

² Aston, *Shinto*, 190. Compare the use of similar instruments in Bulgaria at Carnival (*Arch. Religionsw.* xi. 408).

³ Farnell, i. 100.

The ægis was a goat-skin, and we can hardly doubt that it was brought into contact with the bride for the purpose of rendering her fruitful. The ceremony, it would seem, was not performed actually on the wedding-day ; but many such ceremonies are. The custom observed from India to the Atlantic Ocean of throwing grain and seeds of one sort or another, over a bride, and apparently that of flinging old shoes, are intended to secure fecundity. The wandering Gipsies of Transylvania are said to throw old shoes and boots on a newly married pair when they enter their tent, expressly to enhance the fertility of the union. In Germany, pieces of cake are thrust against the bride's body.¹ At a certain stage in the wedding ceremony of the German Jews, the friends who stand round throw wheat on the couple and say, "Be fruitful and multiply."² The same object is visible in the custom of the Berads in Bombay, by which the bride is made to stand in a basket of millet.³ The Oráons require the bridegroom to perform the essential ceremony of marking the bride with red lead, while both are standing on a curry-stone, under which a sheaf of corn lies upon a plough-yoke.⁴ An equivalent rite is found very generally in Northern India, and its meaning cannot be doubtful. So, among the people of Great Russia the nuptial couch is made with great

¹ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 445, Grimm, *Teut. Myth.* 1794. In Zennor and adjacent parishes in Cornwall, it was the custom to flog a newly married couple to bed with "cords, sheep-spans, or anything handy for the purpose," as a fecundity-charm. But it is obvious that the custom described was in the last stage of decay ; and it has now come to an end. No certain conclusion can therefore be drawn from the miscellaneous character of the implements made use of (*F. L. Journ.* v. 216).

² Andree, *Volksk. Jud.* 144.

³ *F. L.* xiii. 235.

⁴ Dalton, 252.

ceremony of forty sheaves of rye, over which the sheets are spread. Barrels full of wheat and barley are set round it, and at night the wedding torches are stuck in them.¹

Among the Masai of German East Africa many women, especially women hitherto barren, take part in the festival at the circumcision of the youths. The barren women come in order to be pelted by the youths with fresh cow-dung, for by the universal belief of the Masai they will thereby be rendered fruitful.² Possibly the same may be the meaning of a curious rite performed by the Australian blackfellows in Victoria when a girl attains the age of puberty. She is rubbed all over with charcoal and spotted with white clay. "As soon as the painting is finished she is made to stand on a log, and a small branch, stripped of every leaf and bud, is placed in her right hand, having on the tip of each bare twig a very small piece of some farinaceous food. Young men, perhaps to the number of twenty, slowly approach her one by one; each throws a small bare stick at her, and bites off the food from the tip of one of the twigs, and spits it into the fire, and, returning from the fire, stamps, leaps and raves, as in a corroboree." The sticks are afterwards buried to prevent sorcerers from taking

¹ Mannhardt, *Myth. Forsch.* 355. The same chapter is rich in illustrations of the custom of throwing grain and seeds of various kinds over a bride, and of decking her with ears of corn and so forth, and abundantly justifies Mannhardt's observation that "the custom undeniably takes its rise from the feeling of a sympathetic connection between mankind and seed-bearing grasses and the comparison between the fruit of the body and of corn."

² Merker, 61. Their neighbours the Nandi apparently consider the mere presence of a barren woman at a certain part of the boys' circumcision ceremonies enough to cause pregnancy (Hollis, *Nandi*, 55, 68).

away the girls' kidney-fat, and the branch is burnt. "The young men who threw the twigs and bit off the food are understood to have covenanted with her not to assault her, and further to protect her until she shall be given away to her betrothed; but the agreement extends no further; she may entertain any of them of her own free will as a lover."¹ The agreement may extend no further. A youth who has taken part in a solemn ceremony performed for the benefit of the girl may by tribal law be under a special obligation not to offer her violence. But that this is the purport of the ceremony we must take leave to doubt. It does not explain the details. The connection with the puberty rites, the ritual spitting out of the food into the fire by the youths, the intimate relation created between the sticks and the girl's body and the consequent fear of magical influence through them, and the right of the girl afterwards to entertain any of the youths as a lover, all alike negative the establishment of any fraternal bond between her and the youths, such as would be implied by a covenant of the kind indicated; all alike point to some effect to be wrought upon her; and that effect can only be a strengthening for the duties of adult life, among which the bearing of children occupies by far the most prominent place. But we require to know a little more about the circumstances, and in particular how the youths are selected, and what if any preparation they undergo, to pronounce definitely on the question.

¹ Brough Smyth, i. 61. It is said that in New Caledonia the ground is thrashed by boys with sticks, with the idea of making it fruitful; but the fact does not rest on direct evidence (J. J. Atkinson, in *F. L.* xiv. 256).

We have seen that in the stories a woman is sometimes said to conceive by the foot. An Asturian ballad ascribes to the borage the power to affect any woman treading on it as it affected the unfortunate Princess Alexandra.¹ In Brunswick a maiden who treads on an egg-shell will become pregnant in the same year.² This is a case in which magic has weathered down to augury : originally we may presume the maiden was believed to become pregnant at once by the act of treading on an egg-shell. In Auvergne a woman or girl becomes pregnant by setting foot on a hedgehog in the fields, and at the end of nine months gives birth to a large litter of hedgehogs. The village gossips even yet speak of girls who have suffered from this misfortune. In the Haute-Loire it is enough for a woman at her monthly period to pass over a hedgehog hidden under the leaves to cause her to litter six weeks later a whole basketful of young hedgehogs. Probably, as M. Sébillot observes, to this superstition must be traced the term of abuse *Jane d'eurson* (hedgehog brat) applied to children in the neighbourhood of Metz.³ The mode of revenge adopted by a rejected lover among the Sulka of new Pomerania is to take a certain fruit and cut it open or bore a hole in it and insert some lime over which an incantation has been pronounced. Then he throws the fruit on a path over which the woman will pass, generally dashing it upon a hard object so that it will fall to pieces. If the woman thereafter walking along the path happen to

¹ De Charencey, 230.

² Andree, *Braunschw. Volksk.* 291. On the other hand in Japan women must not tread on egg-shells, otherwise child-birth will be difficult, or they will get leucorrhœa (H. ten Kate, *Globus*, xc. 129).

³ *Rev. Trad. Pop.* xii. 547 ; Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iii. 15.

tread on a piece of the fruit she will become pregnant, and the pregnancy will be repeated so frequently that she will die of it.¹

Among the Kara Kirghiz a solitary apple-tree is often regarded as sacred. Rolling or wallowing beneath it in prayer seems a method approved among the women for obtaining pregnancy.² In Japan it is enough to squat down on the spot where a birth has just taken place.³ A Kwakiutl woman in British Columbia is delivered sitting on the lap of a friend over a pit or hole in the ground, into which the child falls. When twins are thus born all the young women go to the pit "and squat over it leaning on their knuckles, because it is believed that after doing so they will be sure to bear children."⁴ In Saxony about Chemnitz a table-cloth acquires prolific virtue by serving at a first-christening-dinner; and it is sometimes cast over a barren wife.⁵ In the same way in Italy a childless woman will borrow from a friend her shift and wear it at the moment of coition. Dr.

¹ Father Rascher, *Arch. Anthropol.* N.S. i. 219. In a variant ceremony when a girl who is undergoing her seclusion previous to marriage is concerned, the man waits by the house in the first quarter of the moon until she comes out of doors for recreation in the moonlight. He then takes some lime, steps up to her and blows it against her mouth. The result will be that after her marriage she will bring forth monstrous births or become so often pregnant that at last she will die.

² Radloff, v. 2. The apple-tree is a well-known symbol and therefore cause of fecundity. Among the Southern Slavs the bride is unveiled beneath an apple-tree and the veil is sometimes hung on the tree (Krauss, *Sitte und Brauch*, 450). In some parts of England a fretful child is said to have come from under a crab-tree (Addy, 144).

³ H. ten Kate, *Globus*, xv. 129.

⁴ Boas, *B. A. Rep.* 1896, 575.

⁵ Grimm, *Teut. Myth.* 1795.

Zanetti who reports this superstition also states that some persons wear sacred vestments on such an occasion ; but whether those persons are men or women does not appear. Near Gubbio a barren woman is frequently advised to draw off the first milk of a goat, before the newborn kid is allowed to suck, to make a cheese of it, and to wear the cheese tied up in a rag continually under her clothes.¹ In all these cases prolific virtue is communicated by contact.

It is sometimes enough if not the woman herself but some article of her clothing be placed in contact with the fruitful object, as in a Bosnian custom by which a childless woman seeks for a plant called *apijun*, cuts its roots small, and steeps them in foam she has caught from a millwheel, afterwards drinking of the liquid. She then winds her wedding-girdle round a newly grafted fruit-tree, when, if the graft prosper, she also will bear. A still more complex rite is recommended when a woman has been married for upwards of eleven years without having had issue. A lady friend who is so fortunate as to be in that state in which "women wish to be who love their lords" must endeavour to find a stone lying in a pear-tree, as sometimes happens when it is thrown at the ripening fruit and caught by one of the branches. She must then shake the tree until the stone fall. This she must catch in her hands ere it reach the ground, carry it in the left skirt of her dress to the brook, put it into a pitcher, fill the pitcher from the brook so far as to cover the stone, and carry it home. Next, she gathers dewy grass (it is not stated what she does with it), and speaks into the pitcher and into the water the

¹ Zanetti, 104, 103.

conjuring formula : "So-and-so shall conceive." After that, she brings the pitcher with the water to the barren woman to drink, and winding the wedding-garment (it does not appear what portion of the dress is meant) of the latter about her own body, wears it for three months or longer, until the woman for whom the ceremony is performed shall feel that her desire has been accomplished. The friend, however, must not eat even a morsel of bread in the patient's house.¹

In this performance as in the former two distinct rites are employed, in the hope that one will be successful if the other fail. The potion carries us back to the fertilising means discussed earlier in the chapter. The stone shaken down from the tree can hardly be understood to represent anything but a pear; and inasmuch as the patient cannot eat the stone, its virtues as fruit (enhanced by its being plucked by a woman already pregnant) are transmitted to the water which is given her to drink, the intention being made effectual by the utterance of the command, "So-and-so shall conceive." In the second rite, included alike in both customs, the quasi-permanent contact of the fruitful tree or the pregnant woman with the barren woman's clothing though detached from her body is sufficient, by a magical doctrine which I have considered elsewhere, to secure the transmission of prolific virtue to her. Arab women attempt the more direct method of transmission by borrowing the robe of a friend who has already proved her fecundity.² So Egede, the Danish missionary to Greenland, tells us of the Eskimo that "to render barren women fertile or

¹ Dr. Krauss, in *Am Urquell*, iii. 276. Cf. the variant rites practised by the Schokaz, *supra*, p. 60.

² Jaussen, 35.

teeming they take old pieces of our shoes to hang about them ; for, as they take our nation to be more fertile and of a stronger disposition of body than theirs, they fancy the virtue of our body communicates itself to our clothing."¹ This virtue, however, is often looked upon as transferred by the same means from one body to another, to the detriment of the former. Such appears to be the danger contemplated by the superstition in the Erzgebirge that a bride must not give away the first shoes she casts off, lest she become unlucky.² That is to say, her luck (by which fertility was doubtless originally meant, and in which it is still the chief element) would be given away with the shoes. We shall meet with further examples of transfer in the next chapter.

The virtue of sacred vestments is derived from contact with persons either personally or ritually holy. One in that condition, as the tales abundantly witness, has the power of fecundating barren women. The relics of Lha-tsün, the patron saint of Sikhim, are celebrated as a certain cure for barrenness. They consist of his full-dress robes, including hat and boots, his hand-drum, bell and *dorje*, or Buddhist sceptre typical of the thunderbolt, and a miraculous dagger

¹ Egede, *A Description of Greenland* (London, 1818), 198. The first edition of the Danish original was published in 1741. Compare the custom of flinging old shoes at a bride (*supra*, p. 109). The wearing of a garment belonging to a prolific friend may be compared with a custom among the Besisi of Selangor in the Malay Peninsula. In the course of a ceremony for the purpose of promoting the fertility of a mangostin, the fruit-tree is decorated with festoons of palm-leaves and they are allowed to remain upon it (Skeat and Blagden, ii. 302). The analogy is perhaps even closer with the practices of simulation by means of a living child or a doll described on a later page.

² Wuttke, 376.

for stabbing the demons, and are kept at Pemiongchi monastery. Couples who desire children and can afford the necessary expense, have a preliminary worship conducted in the chapel of the monastery lasting one or two days. "Then the box containing the holy relics is brought forth and ceremoniously opened, and each article is placed on the heads of the suppliant pair, the officiating priest repeating meanwhile the charm of his own tutelary deity. Of the marvellous efficacy of this procedure, numerous stories are told." And should two sons result, one of them would certainly be dedicated to the Church.¹ Here the husband shares the rite. The Blackfeet, in common with other North American tribes, attribute a mystic power to the small whirlwinds which frequently arise on the plains; and with this belief the moth is associated as the depositary or as the origin of the power. "The medicine-men claim to use the power of the moth in making childbirth easy, producing abortion, preventing conception, &c. Sometimes if a medicine-man wishes a woman to have children, he prays to the power of the moth and slyly sits upon the woman's blanket." Thus by his powerful touch he evidently communicates impregnating virtue to her clothing. While I am mentioning the Blackfeet, I may add an example of their practices recalling another mode of causing conception familiar in the stories. "The image of a moth," we are told, "is sometimes worn on the head of a man in the belief

¹ Waddell, 51. A slipper of one of the goddesses worshipped by Chinese women in the province of Kan-su to obtain children is borrowed by the suppliant from her shrine and returned after delivery. Presumably it is worn as an amulet, but the account I cite is not explicit on this point (*Anthropos*, iii. 763).

that the power [of the moth] will pass into any woman the wearer may fix his mind upon, and cause her to become pregnant.”¹ So the Lucky Fool wished the princess to become pregnant, and it was done.

I have mentioned some articles of clothing which are obviously worn as amulets. Amulets, in fact, are believed to play a great part in procuring offspring. A few examples will suffice to illustrate a superstition of very wide extent. In the Gironde women carried away “in order to facilitate childbirth” pieces of a stone which formerly existed at Avensan.² Among Bavarian women, to carry about under the left arm a certain small bone of a stag was a prophylactic against sterility.³ Hungarian Gipsy women carry a little snail-shaped object; and if within three years this is not effectual they give up hope.⁴ The ancient Hindu women wore a bracelet to ensure conception. The spell preserved in the *Atharva-Veda* for use in connection with this bracelet addresses it, praying it not merely to open up the womb that the embryo be put into it, but also to furnish a son and it would seem bring him into the womb. In the commentary on another spell of the same collection we learn that while reciting it an arrow is broken to pieces over the woman’s head and a fragment is fastened upon her as an amulet. Milk of a cow which has a calf of the same colour as herself is then poured into a cup made from a plough; rice, barley, and leaves from certain other plants are mashed up in it, and it is put up the woman’s

¹ *Journ. Am. F. L.* xviii. 260.

² Sébillot, *Am. Anthropol.* N.S. iv. 92, citing Daleau.

³ Lammert, 157.

⁴ Temesváry, 7. The object in question is perhaps phallic.

right nostril with the officiant's right thumb. This rite is an amalgam. The recited spell, the amulet and the mixture conveyed into the woman's nose are doubtless all separately potent: their combined effect ought to be decisive.¹ In Persia the mandrake is said to be worn as an amulet. The women of Mecca commonly wear a magical girdle to yield them fertility.² A Chukchi female shaman showed a recent scientific traveller a stone of peculiar shape, which she called her husband. She said she loved it more than her living mate, and averred that most of her children were conceived from it.³ Similarly on the Banks' Islands women take certain stones to bed with them to become fruitful.⁴ By the Australian women of Tully River in Northern Queensland twins or triplets are often accounted for as a punishment inflicted by a mother-in-law for neglect. The process is simple. The old lady plants two or three pebbles underneath her daughter-in-law's sleeping-place and the result is assured.⁵

From north to south of the African continent amulets are prominent among the means of obtaining offspring. A porcupine's foot is a favourite talisman

¹ *Sacred Books*, xlii. 96, 356. In a note on a previous page I have mentioned a third spell (p. 61) to ensure male issue from a woman already pregnant. Strabo (xv. 1, 60) mentions on the authority of Megasthenes that among the Garmanes the physicians can cause people to produce numerous offspring and to have either male or female children by means of charms. Among the bunches of charms worn by Korean women are "curious little twin Josses which are supposed to insure the wearer becoming a mother of sons" (*J. A. I.* xxiv. 311). Here it may be the sex rather than the mere production of the offspring which is intended to be insured.

² Ploss, *Weib*, i. 437, 439.

³ Bogoras, *Jesup Exped.* vii. 344.

⁴ Codrington, 184.

⁵ Roth, *N. Q. Ethnog.* Bull. v. 25 (par. 92).

among the Moorish women of Morocco.¹ On the Upper Niger the women of certain tribes wear about their loins a score or so of leathern strings, whence are suspended small figures, cast in copper and representing tortoises, lizards or horses. These are amulets which, it is said, have the virtue of giving many children.² In German territory on the other side of the continent the Masai women hold a solemn festival of prayer for children. They assemble with a wizard or medicine-man, and each receives from him an amulet to hang from the girdle of her skin-apron. Then he sprinkles them on head and shoulders with a medicine composed of milk, honey-beer, and another secret ingredient, in return for which he is rewarded with a payment in sheep. The rest of the day is spent in dancing and singing, the burden of the songs being a prayer for children. Another amulet believed to promote conception is also worn by Masai women round the neck.³ The Warundi, who, like the Masai, inhabit German territory, are prolific and anxious to have children. They too make use of amulets; these are of various kinds of native wood, but how prepared we are not told.⁴ Among the Baganda every woman who wishes for a large family wears a *musisi*, or multiplier. It consists of a ball of white clay with a piece of tanned hide sewed round it.⁵ The Awemba women between Lakes Tanganyika and Bangweolo

¹ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 437.

² Binger, i. 250.

³ Merker, 201, 202.

⁴ van der Burgt, 85 (art. Mariage).

⁵ Cunningham, 253. Men sometimes wear this amulet because it gives courage. Another amulet called *magalo* "facilitated the begetting of children." It seems also to have been used for divination (*Ibid.* 255).

wear an amulet called the *mapingo* composed of two tiny horns of duiker, in the hope that they may bear children.¹ Among the Kaffirs of South Africa an amulet to remove the reproach of a childless woman is made by the medicine-man of the clan from the tail-hairs of a heifer. The heifer must be given to the husband by one of the wife's kinsmen for the purpose; and the charm when made is hung round the wife's neck.² The intention here seems to be to transfer the fertility of the animal to the woman. On the other hand the Northern Basuto of the Transvaal lay the fault of childlessness on the husband. He has done to death by witchcraft one of his kin, or committed some other wrong towards the dead man, who is therefore angry. After consulting a wizard and ascertaining to whom the evil is to be ascribed, he goes to the grave, acknowledges his fault, prays to the dead for forgiveness, and takes back from the tomb a stone, a twig, or some other object, which he carries about, or deposits in his courtyard, as a fetish or an amulet. If he duly honour it, it will restore the good understanding between the deceased and himself, and give him the benefit he desires.³

Phallic images have special importance as amulets. In the interior of Western Africa, over the border of Angola, on the way from Malange, barren women have been found wearing on a string round the body two little carved ivory figures representing the two sexes.⁴ The phalli worn by Italian women are

¹ *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 154.

² Theal, 201. The Barotse have also amulets to obtain children (Béguin, 124). In fact the custom is universal in Africa.

³ Ploss, *Weib.* i. 439.

⁴ Ploss, *loc. cit.*

familiar to every student of folklore ; and the images made of boy-root and worn by Danubian Gipsies, have already been mentioned.¹ Similar figures in wood are worn in some districts of Bavaria by newly married women among their beads, or depending from the strings of their bodices. They are amulets against barrenness.²

The practices of what is called phallic worship have been described at sufficient, if not more than sufficient, length in the pages of Dulaure and other writers, many of whom have been inclined to see in what is often no more than a magical rite something like the foundation of all religions. The truth is that phallic worship strictly speaking—the worship of a deity of fertility under sexual emblems—is by no means an early or a universal cult. It can only become prominent in a population having a settled abode and cultivating the soil ; its orgiastic developments are sporadic. So intimately however is sexual emotion mingled with the emotions we group together under the name of religion, that it is anything but surprising to find linked with religious worship both sexual ideas and practices and attempts to secure in other than the normal manner the blessing of offspring. We have already discussed some phallic practices connected more or less remotely with religion ; and it will be needless to pursue the subject into much detail here. But any treatment of the superstitious beliefs and practices under consideration, would be incomplete and misleading without some reference to it.

The worship of the *linga* is a favourite with Hindu women. The representation is sometimes carved and

¹ *Supra*, p. 46.

² Lammert, 156.

painted red, at other times a mere rough upright stone. Such idols are to be seen everywhere in India; and their pious worshippers may often be observed decking them with flowers, red cloth or gilt paper, like the Madonna in Roman Catholic churches. Siva himself, the third in the modern Hindu Trimurti, is represented under this form; and under this form—softened down by Southey in his finest poem from the grotesque obscenity of the original story—he appeared when

Brahma and Vishnu wild with rage contended,
And Siva in his might their dread contention ended.

Many of the incidents of the cult of Siva and similar gods have been described from travellers' reports by Dulaure, to whose sixth chapter I refer the reader. A cannon, old and useless and neglected, belonging to the Dutch Government, lay in a field at Batavia, on the island of Java. It was taken by the native women for a linga. Dressed in their best, and adorned with flowers, they used to worship this piece of senseless iron, presented it with offerings of rice and fruits, miniature sunshades, and coppers, and completed the performance by sitting astride upon it as a certain method of winning children. At length an order arrived from the Government to remove it as lumber; and removed it was, to the great dismay of the priests, who had pocketed the coppers and had manufactured and sold the sunshades—probably also to the dismay of the ladies who depended upon its miraculous power—but at all events, it is satisfactory to know, without injuriously affecting the increase of the population.¹

¹ *J. A. I.* vi. 359.

At Roman weddings one of the ceremonies was the culminating rite so dear to these Batavian women. The idol of Priapus or Tutunus, used on this and other occasions by women desirous of offspring was more or less in human form ; and there can be no question as to the object of the rite.¹ Among the gods to whom similar powers are ascribed in India, and with whose statues similar ceremonies are practised, is Hanumân. "In Bombay women sometimes go to his temple in the early morning, strip themselves naked and embrace the god."² Nor is it merely stones shaped by art that have been taken for this purpose. Rude stone monuments, monoliths natural or bearing traces of no more than the most rudimentary chippings by the hand of man, have by virtue of their form been regarded as phalli and subjected to contact by women who desire offspring. We are not informed whether this is the case with the Greased Stones of Madagascar, to which women seeking children certainly resort.³ But among some of the Northern Maidu of California contact is practised by barren women with a certain rock which bears some resemblance to a woman with child. By touching it they are thought sure to conceive.⁴

¹ Augustine, *Civ. Dei*, vi. 9 ; Arnob. *Adv. Gen.* iv. 7 ; Tertul. *Ad Nat.* ii. 11 ; Ploss, *Weib*, i. 435, quoting Thomas Bartholinus.

² Crooke, *F. L. N. Ind.* i. 87 ; See also Dulaure, *loc. cit.* The rite in India when performed by brides involves a sacrifice of virginity.

³ Mondain, 12, 44 (*cf.* the Male Stones mentioned p. 13, the cult of which has perhaps, though not very probably, been abandoned). Arab women in the land of Moab made resort to a rock called 'Umm Gedet'ah, to rub themselves against it and to sleep in its shadow, in order to procure children (Jaussen, 303).

⁴ Dixon, *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xvii. 230. *Cf.* the stone on

In various parts of France contact is practised both with statues and with unshapen stones. A few cases may be mentioned out of a large number. I have already referred to the rites of Saint Guerlichon.¹ Formerly in a chapel near Pleubian, on the day of the annual celebration commonly called in Brittany the Pardon, a worm-eaten figure of Saint Nicholas hung at the end of a cord from a beam. The peasant women in turn used to take up their skirts and rub their bare abdomens against the fertilising fetish.² In the Pyrenees near Bourg d'Oueil is a rough stone figure of a man about five feet high on which barren women rub themselves, embracing and kissing it.³ At Brignolles in Provence is a sacred well on the northern wall of which is a stele with a coarsely carven figure of a man, now half-effaced by time and wear. This figure is known by the name of Saint Sumian ; and a small circular cup-marking two centimetres in diameter near the appropriate position is called the saint's navel. Sterile women who desire children and young people who want to be married embrace the saint's navel, and thereby attain their wishes.⁴ In order to become mothers women ceremonially go three times round a pillar in the chapel of Orcival in Puy de Dôme and then rub themselves against it.⁵ At the Cathedral of Mende is the clapper of a bell 2.30 metres in height and 1.10 in circumference. It was formerly

which if a Hupa woman sits she will be cured of barrenness (Goddard, *Hupa Texts*, 280). Here nothing is said of the shape of the stone.

¹ *Supra*, p. 63.

² Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iv. 169.

³ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 444 ; Cuzacq, 111.

⁴ Bérenger-Féraud, *Superst.* i. 413.

⁵ Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iv. 158.

in the big bell. When the Protestant chief Mathieu de Merle seized the town in 1580 it is said he melted the bell to cast cannon, but the clapper could not be melted, and it was set up near the left door of the cathedral. Down to the present day women desiring children come and rub their abdomens against it praying to the Virgin the while.¹ In the early years of the last century sterile women used to go to the abbey of Brantôme in Périgord, or to the chapel of Saint Robert or to that of Saint Leonard near the village of Jouvens and there attend mass. After the ceremony they went and worked the bolt of the door to and fro, until their husbands came and led them home by the hand with the customary formality.² Elsewhere there is not even a pretence of human workmanship on the object of the cult. At the entrance of the valley of Aspe (Hautes Pyrenées) there is a natural rock of conical form on which barren women rub their abdomens.³ This is but one of several examples of the use of rocks and stones in the Pyrenees; and there are as many in Brittany, besides others in various parts of France.

It may be thought that the rites at these places are purely magical. There is however a considerable body of evidence showing that the rocks and stones in question are regarded with religious veneration. The clergy of the Roman Catholic Church up to the Revolution at least countenanced the sacred character of many of the menhirs and dolmens by solemn processions and the performance of religious rites.

¹ van Gennep, *op. cit.* Dulaure, 326 note.

² Sébillot, *op. cit.* 139; *Rev. Trad. Pop.* xii. 665.

³ Cuzacq, 112.

Singing and dancing are, or have within quite recent times been, periodically performed and prayers offered by the peasants around both prehistoric stone monuments and natural rocks. These facts are only explicable on the supposition that they were the object of a very ancient cult, too deeply rooted in the popular affections to be wholly supplanted by the Church. Newly wedded pairs went afoot to the menhir of Plouarzel, the largest in the department, which has on two opposite sides a round knob about a metre's height above the ground. Partly undressed, the woman on one side and the man on the other rubbed their abdomens against the knob. By this the husband hoped to get sons rather than daughters, and the wife not merely to get fecundity but the whip-hand of her husband. Near Rennes the newly married go, the first Sunday of Lent, to jump on a stone called the Bride-stone (*Pierre des Épousées*), singing the while a special song. In Eure-et-Loire young women desiring children rubbed their abdomens against a rough place on the *Pierre de Chantecoq*. Less than thirty years ago a menhir not far from Carnac was the scene of a ceremony performed by married pairs who after a union of several years were still without children. While their relatives kept watch at a distance lest they should be disturbed by intruders they stripped and the wife ran round the stone, striving to escape her husband's pursuit, but ending of course by letting him catch her.¹ Young couples who desire children go on pilgrimage to Sainte Baume in Provence. On entering the adjacent forest

¹ Sébillot, *Amer. Anthropol.* N.S. iv. 83; *Id. F. L. France*, iv. 56, 61; Bérenger-Féraud, *Traditions*, 200.

husband and wife, mentally praying to Saint Magdalen, embrace the first big oak-tree they find. It is said there is only one tree in the forest capable of receiving their prayers efficaciously: hence if their desires are not granted it is easy to explain why—they have mistaken the tree. At Poligny in the Jura there is a standing stone significantly said to be the petrified form of a giant who attempted to ravish a girl. Young women go and embrace it in order to obtain children.¹ These are a few only of many examples of the superstition recorded in France. If we might add to them the cases in which girls perform similar rites to obtain husbands (as to which we may suspect the original object of the rite to have been the same) the list might be greatly lengthened. Often both reasons are alleged for the practice, married women following it for the one and unmarried women for the other.² A striking analogy to the rite at Sainte Baume is performed by the Maori women of the Tuho tribe. Certain trees are associated in the popular mind with the navel-strings of mythical ancestors. The power of making women fruitful is ascribed to them and until lately the navel-strings of all newborn children were hung on their branches. Barren women embrace them and according to whether they clasp them from the east or the west side they conceive boys or girls.³

A variant ceremony of sliding down the stone

¹ Bérenger-Féraud, *Superst.* ii. 182, 190.

² See Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iv., the chapters entitled *Cultes et Observances Mégalithiques* and *Les Églises*. It should be added that similar rites are performed for the cure of various diseases.

³ W. Foy, *Arch. Religionsw.* x. 557, citing an article by W. H. Goldie, on Maori Medical Lore in the *Transactions of the New Zealand Institute*, 1904, 95.

obviously depends on the position of the stone and its angle of inclination. At Bauduen, near Draguignan, on the day of the feast of the patron saint, girls who want to marry, or women who desire children, go and slide in a sitting posture down a rock, situated behind the church, and one part of which forms an inclined plane. The surface of the rock has been polished by this exercise. A similar practice obtains near the village of Saint Ours, in the Basses Alpes, on the corresponding day. The stone there is called the Millstone.¹ In the neighbourhood of Collobrières, also in Provence, an ancient chestnut-tree stands on the side of the road called the Lovers' Walk. Just below one of the principal branches, which has been broken off, two round excrescences give it a phallic appearance. Girls who desire husbands and young married women who want children go and slide at certain times down certain of the roots which rise above the soil.²

It will be remembered that women who wanted to drink of Saint Maughold's well in the Isle of Man were required to sit in the saint's chair. Beneath a chair in Finchale priory church in the county of Durham "is shown a seat said to have the virtue of removing sterility and procuring issue for any woman who, having performed certain ceremonies, sat down therein and devoutly wished for a child." The seat, which is of stone, appears much worn. At Jarrow church brides on the completion of the marriage service seat themselves

¹ Bérenger-Féraud, *Superst.* ii. 342; *Amer. Anthropol.* iv. N.S. 79.

² Bérenger-Féraud, *Ibid.* 177. For further illustrations of these and other even more suggestive practices in France, the reader is referred to the works already cited, and to *Rev. Trad. Pop.* xii. 665; xiii. 267; Sébillot, *F. L. France*, i. 334 *sqq.*; iii. 425; *Id. Trad. et Sup.* i. 48 *sqq.*

in Bede's chair, still preserved in the church.¹ Near Verdun in Luxemburg Saint Lucia's armchair is to be seen in the living rock. There also childless women sit and pray, afterwards awaiting with confidence the fulfilment of their petitions. At Athens there is a rock near the Callirrhoe whereon women who wish to be made fruitful rub themselves, calling on the Moirai to be gracious to them. And Bernhardt Schmidt writing on the subject recalls that not far from that very spot the heavenly Aphrodite was honoured in ancient times as the Eldest of the Fates.² At the foot of another hill is a seat cut in the rock on the banks of a stream. There the Athenian women were wont to sit and let themselves slip on the back into the brook, calling on Apollo for an easy delivery. The stone is black and polished with the constant repetition of these invocations; for still on a clear moonlight night young women steal silently to the spot to indulge in the same exercise, though we may presume their invocations are nominally addressed to some other divinity.³

At Tunis the Marabout of Sidi Fathallah is the scene of similar or even more complex performances. For it is necessary for a woman who desires children to slide no fewer than twenty-five times down a stone five or six metres long which is held to be the saint's grave, namely, five times on her face, five times on her back,

¹ *Denham Tracts*, i. 109, 110. Cf. the chair of Saint Fiacre and the stone of Saint Nicholas mentioned by M. Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iv. 159.

² Ploss, *Weib*, i. 436.

³ Béranger-Féraud, *Trad.* 201, quoting Yéménier in the *Revue du Lyonnais*, 1842. Some of the exercises at stones and other sacred objects in France are said to have for object an easy delivery. The connection between this and the prayer for children is too obvious to be insisted on. As to the rites practised on the island of Cyprus, see Hogarth, *A Wandering Scholar in the Levant* (London, 1896), 179.

five times on each side and five times head foremost. To ensure success, it seems, that a barren woman must repeat her devotions in this way from time to time for two years: only in the third will her wish be gratified. Kabyle women frequent many mosques to be delivered from sterility, particularly the tomb of another saint, Sidi Abi Thaleb. There they flourish the saint's stick vigorously in all directions in a hole contrived in the centre of the mosque.¹ These two are of course by no means the only Moslem saints famous for the gift of fecundity. In Egypt the soul of the holy man Sheikh Haridy has passed into a serpent that is to be seen in the little mosque of the mountain called after his name. Under that form he shows himself to his worshippers and allows them to touch him for the cure of their ailments. Among the powers with which he is still thought to be endowed is that of conferring fertility on women.² I have already mentioned the hot springs frequented by women in Palestine for this purpose. It may be added that some of these springs are believed to owe their virtue not to the jinn but to a dead saint. When the hot air steams up over the bodies of childless women they really believe they are visited and impregnated by the saint himself.³

A curious rite used until the Reformation to be performed at the shrine of Saint Edmund at Bury St. Edmund's. A white bull was kept in the fields of the

¹ Bérenger-Féraud, *Superst.* ii. 198.

² E. Amélineau, *Rev. Hist. Rel.* li. 341.

³ Curtiss, 116. One example only is here mentioned—the spring of Abu Rabah at the Baths of Solomon. The shrines of St. George all over the country enjoy the same reputation among Moslems as well as Christians. Cf. Jaussen, 360.

manor of Habyrdon, and never yoked to the plough nor baited at the stake. When a married woman wished for offspring he was "led in procession through the principal streets of the town to the principal gate of the monastery, attended by all the monks singing, and a shouting crowd; the woman walking by him and stroking his milk-white sides and pendant dewlaps. The bull being then dismissed, the woman entered the church and paid her vows at the altar of Saint Edmund, kissing the stone and entreating with tears the blessing of a child." The rite is obviously one of that large class taken over by the Church from local paganism, often as in this instance for very material reasons. The bull was kept and provided for the purpose under covenants with the monastery by the tenant of the manor. More than one of the leases were extant in the seventeenth century. One of them, perhaps the last that was granted, is dated in 1533. They contemplate a *mulier generosa* as the most likely suppliant. Few others could afford such a ceremony as is described above, or "make the oblations of the said white bull."¹ Contact here takes place both with the sacred stone and the sacred animal. In the preceding pages we have found animal substances eaten for the purpose of obtaining offspring; we have found amulets made of animal substances and ritual contact with portions of sacred animals employed for the same intent. An ancient Aryan marriage custom still practised by the Hindus is to make the bride sit down on a bull's hide. This is also found among the Esthonians and the

¹ *County F. L. Suffolk*, 124; *Gent. Mag. Lib. Topography*, xi. 208, both quoting *Corolla Varia*, by the Rev. W. Hawkins (1634), and leases by the monastery of the manor referred to.

Russians.¹ It is probably traceable to the same reason. The probability is favoured by the substitution in Nurmekond (Esthonia) of a man's coat, which having been worn by a man would, on the principles of reasoning in the lower culture, have absorbed his qualities and thus be eminently calculated to promote the bride's fertility. The Roman bride was made to sit on a sheepskin. These customs strengthen the presumption already mentioned that the ægis taken at Athens to the bride's house was brought into contact with her.

I referred just now to the Pierre des Épousées near Rennes. The bridal custom of jumping on or over a stone has been so fully examined by Mr. William Crooke,² that it need not be further discussed here. In a note to his paper he alludes to the story of Arianrod the daughter of Don in the *Mabinogion*.³ In that story the maiden was made to step over a magical wand, with the result that two boys were born. The wand possessed fertilising power, though the incident seems to be regarded as a test of chastity. Whether or no the story-teller misunderstood it is not clear; but a similar power is found ascribed in somewhat more than a jocular fashion to a broomstick in some parts of England. Mr. Addy, speaking apparently of Yorkshire and the adjacent country, says "If a girl strides over a besom-handle, she will be mother before she is a wife. If an unmarried woman has a child people say 'She's jumped o'er t'besom,

¹ Schroeder, 89. In a Finnish story bride and bridegroom placed on a whale's hide (Castrén, *Vorles.* 323).

² *F. L.* xiii. 226.

³ *Y Llyvyr Coch*, 68; *Mabinogion*, 421; Nutt's Ed 66

or 'She jumped o'er t'besom before she went to t'church.' Mothers used to be particularly anxious that their daughters should not stride over a broom, and mischievous boys have been known to leave brooms on doorsteps and such-like places, so that girls might accidentally stride over them." He adds that at Sheffield a woman of loose habits is called a besom.¹ The broomstick is an obvious symbol, such as would exactly fit the purposes of mimetic magic. A Manchu bride on reaching the bridegroom's house is required to step over a miniature saddle and frequently also an apple, placed on the threshold. Stepping over the former is said to be a sign that she will never marry a second husband, for the Manchus have a saying, "Just as a good horse will not carry two saddles, a chaste maiden will not marry two husbands."² But though that may be the meaning now assigned to the custom, it is too artificial to be primitive. Moreover, comparison of other customs shows that it cannot have been the original intention, and the addition of the apple makes this clear.

In Westward parish, Cumberland, it used to be the custom on the day after a christening for the new mother to entertain her married friends of her own sex. When the husbands came to fetch their wives home, a milk- or other pail was placed on the door-sill, and over it each wife had to jump. From the manner in which they severally passed the obstacle their own condition was divined, for it was considered that a pregnant woman would stumble or put her foot in the pail.³ Here as elsewhere, we may suspect at an

¹ Addy, 102.

² *F. L.* i. 487, 491.

³ *N. and Q.* 5th ser. vi 24.

earlier stage the rite was held to cause what it is taken at last only to discover: another example of magic dwindling into divination. Mr. Crooke also refers to the Ahîr legend of Lorik, localised in the Mirzapur District, and related in his *Folklore of Northern India*. In that legend, the hero tests his still maiden-wife's chastity by stretching a loin-cloth across the entrance to his camp. Other women stepped over it, but her delicacy was so excessive that she refused—to her husband's satisfaction.¹ We have already learned something of the virtue of loin-cloths in putting an end to barrenness.

To recur for a moment to the ceremonies at sacred stones: on the islands of Ambon and Uliase, in the East Indies, barren women often place offerings on the sacred stone of the commune and afterwards, for they are supposed to be Christians, go to the church to pray.² There is a miraculous stone on the sacred hill of Nikko in Japan at which women who want to become mothers throw stones, sure of having their ambition gratified if they succeed in striking it. A traveller recording the custom says maliciously they seem very clever at the game. In the Uyeno Park at Tokio is a seated statue of Buddha. Whoso succeeds in flinging a stone upon the sacred knees attains the same result. At Whitchurch, near Cardiff, in the eighteenth century, a woman animated by the wish for children would go on Easter Monday to the parish churchyard, armed with two dozen tennis-balls, half of them covered with white leather and the other half with black, and would throw them over the church. As they fell on the other side the villagers—no doubt

¹ Crooke, *F. L. N. Ind.* ii. 161.

² Riedel, 75.

children—would struggle for them. The operation was to be repeated every year until the woman's wish was accomplished.¹ This might perhaps depend on the children's success in picking up the balls, which in passing over the church would have probably acquired magical power. Closely allied with this are some forms of divination and rites to assure marriage. In France young girls, to learn whether they will be married during the year, throw a sou through the doorway of a little chapel at Echemiré dedicated to the Virgin. If the coin rest on the altar the girl who has thrown it obtains a favourable omen; if it fall back she will have to wait as many years as there are paving-stones between the piece of money and the altar. Similar divination is practised at the chapel of Saint Goustan at Croisic by throwing a pin through the hole in a window-shutter. At Jodoigne a very old statue now in a chapel was formerly in a niche fastened on an ancient tree. About five metres from the ground the principal branches of this tree formed another niche into which girls tried to toss stones. If the stone remained in the niche the thrower's hopes were gratified; but if it fell back she would have to wait awhile for a lover.² At the top of Mount Rustup in Russian Armenia is the tomb of a holy hermit visited by numerous pilgrims every year on the eighth of July. The women seek fecundity at the spring which rises near the tomb. One of the stones of the mausoleum is pierced with a number of cup-markings in which the youths and maidens play at a game of divination with small stones. If a stone thrown by any one

¹ *Mél.* vi. 154, 258, quoting *Byegones*.

² Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iv. 139.

remains in the cup, it prognosticates marriage in the course of the year.¹ All these, it may be suspected, were first of all fertilising rites.

Among the votive offerings in Roman Catholic Churches on the continent of Europe, the waxen baby is a constant spectacle. In the Tirol there are miraculous images beside which little waxen figures in the shape of toads are hung. These figures are called *Muettern*. It is believed that every woman has inside her a creature in this form—a belief due to symptoms of hysteria common among women. Many a mother has gone to sleep with her mouth open and the *muetter* has crept out and gone to bathe in the nearest water. If she does not close her mouth, the *muetter* by-and-by gets back safely, and the woman, previously sick, is restored to health. But if she close her mouth, she dies. Unfruitful women offer these waxen figures to images of the Madonna, or of the Pietà.² On the Gold Coast, Bassamese women who are possessed by a demon of barrenness meet at the fetish hut and deposit consecrated vases and figures of clay representing mothers nursing, while they present to the fetish offerings of tobacco and handkerchiefs. The demons are frightened away by the noise of fire-arms, drums, and the blowing of horns. The officiating chief makes an offering of gold-dust, and then spirits a mouthful of rum over the belly of every woman who desires issue. An improvised

¹ *L'Anthrop.* viii. 482.

² Zingerle, *Sitten*, 26. Ploss (*Weib*, i. 444) reproduces a photograph of one of these votive figures bought by the author in a wax-chandler's shop at Salzburg as recently as 1890. Another form of the *muetter* is that of a ball stuck with spikes, of which an account is given by Dr. Wilhelm Hein, *Zeits. des Vereins*, x. 420.

banquet brings the solemnity to a close.¹ Votive figures of the kind mentioned, as well as the ruder offerings of pins, rags and stones found over the greater part of the world, are not merely intended to keep the divinity in mind of the suppliant and of her desire. They also act (as I have argued elsewhere) in the capacity of conductor between the divinity and the suppliant, so that the influence of the immediate presence of the former, surrounding and enfolding the votive figure or other offering, surrounds and enfolds likewise the person represented or on whose behalf the offering is dedicated. Moreover the figures may also officiate as symbolic dedications of mother or child to the supernatural being whose aid is invoked.

Nor is the deposit of a votive offering indispensable. Religious faith often imputes to its object the power to work the miracle desired, if only that power be sufficiently excited by the votary's prayers or promises. The dedication of oneself, or as in the case of Hannah the vow to dedicate the child, achieves the result. Stories of this kind are too familiar to need mention; and doubtless the belief still exists in Europe and other civilised lands. On the Slave Coast of Guinea an Otchi Negress will devote herself in the same way to a fetish (that is, to a particular god in the pantheon) conditionally on its giving her children. If a child be born, it is a fetish-child and is considered to belong to the fetish, just as Samuel belonged to Yahve, or as in many of the tales the child is given by an ogre upon the stipulation that it shall belong to him and be fetched away, either when he pleases or at a fixed

¹ Featherman, *Nigritians*, 139, quoting Hecquard.

period.¹ In this case there does not seem to be a deposit of any votive figure. Further, when recourse is had to a sorcerer instead of a divinity such deposit is indeed inappropriate. On the Equatorial Nile Ledju, the hereditary Chief Rainmaker of the Bari tribe, includes in his professional duties that of "inducing women to bring forth large families." His manner of procedure is original. He has an iron rod about three feet long and about an inch in diameter; armed at either end with a hollow iron bulb enclosing bits of stone. When the husband brings a would-be mother to him the sorcerer grasps the instrument in the centre with the right hand and shakes it over and around her, at the same time muttering an incantation. It is possible that this is an exorcism. The offerings are of course of that substantial character which the sorcerer's rank and reputation demand.²

A very common magical process takes the form of simulating the result intended. As applied to the purpose of procuring children religious worship is often combined with the magical proceeding. When a woman on the Babar islands in the Malay Archipelago desires a child a man who has many children is first called in to pray to Upulero. To that end her husband collects fifty or sixty old and young kalapa-fruits, while she prepares a doll about twenty inches long of red cotton. On the appointed day the man goes to the wife's hut, puts the husband and wife

¹ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 439.

² *Journ. Afr. Soc.* v. 21. The Lillooet Indians of British Columbia have shamans who can make barren women bear children or make women have male or female children as they may desire. But what the process is we are not informed (Teit, *Jesup Exped.* ii. 287). The pretension is, it need hardly be said, very widespread.

to sit together, and sets before them a platter containing sirih-pinang and a young kalapa-fruit. The woman holds the doll in her hands as if she were suckling it. The kalapa-fruit is opened, and both husband and wife are sprinkled with the juice. The assistant then takes a fowl, holds its feet against the woman's head and prays, apparently in her name: "O Upulero! make use of this fowl, let fall a man, let him descend, I pray thee, I implore thee, let fall a man, let him descend into my hands and on my lap." He asks the woman: "Is the child come?" She answers: "Yes, it is already sucking." Then he touches the husband's head with the fowl's feet and mutters certain formulæ. Thereupon the fowl is put to death by a blow against the posts of the hut, opened, and the veins about the heart are examined for the purpose of augury. Whatever augury may be drawn from them, the fowl is laid on the platter with the sirih-pinang and put on the domestic altar. The news is spread in the village that the woman is pregnant, and every one comes to wish her joy and receives in return one of the dried kalapa-fruits. The husband borrows a cradle, in which the doll is placed, and for seven days it is treated as a new-born child.¹ Here in addition to the prayer and sacrifice, which might be found anywhere, the Babar islander pretends that the prayer has been granted, and acts accordingly. It might be a question whether some of the methods

¹ Riedel, 353. Note that the man who performs the rite is already rich in children, and therefore in that very quality which is sought. This must be a powerful magical influence tending to the success of the rite. Since the above was written an account has been published of a similar ceremony in Ceylon (W. L. Hildburgh, *J. A. I.* xxxviii. 184).

of procuring children recounted in the foregoing pages had not sprung from the elementary therapeutics of the lower culture, and were not intended to act mechanically or as a drug upon the body of wife or husband, so as to remove a physical incapacity or ailment which prevented the bearing or begetting of children. Simulation does not admit of any such explanation: it is simply magic. Although therefore it is not one of the causes prominent in the stories of supernatural birth it deserves notice as strengthening the general argument that conception in early stages of culture is held to be procured by other than natural means.

A frequent form of simulation for the purpose of obtaining children is found in the custom of putting a boy to sit on the bride's lap at a wedding. The ceremony was usual among the ancient Aryans and is prescribed in the *Āpastamba*.¹ It is still followed in the east of Europe and elsewhere.² In Sweden on the night preceding her nuptials the bride should have a boy-baby to sleep with her, in which case her first-born will be a son.³ Among the Hindus of the Panjab at the first menstruation of a woman after the marriage has been consummated, she is shut up in a dark room under a strict taboo. She must not use milk, oil or meat. On a day chosen as auspicious by a Brahman, and while she is still impure, all her female relatives assemble and wash her head with *gondhana*. Then after she has bathed five cakes of flour, walnuts and pomegranates are put in her lap with a pretty child, that she too may bear a child. Looking into its face

¹ Winternitz, 23, 75; Schroeder, 123.

² Mannhardt, *Myth. Forsch.* 357.

³ Lloyd, 85.

she gives it money and cakes, and then the family priest makes her worship Ganpatî. The women spend the night in singing; and the priest receives a fee in money as well as the things offered to the goddess.¹ At Salem in Massachusetts it is said that if a baby, the first time it is taken visiting, be laid on a married couple's bed there will be a baby for that couple.² In England to rock an empty cradle is to rock a new baby into it; and the superstition has been carried by settlers to New England, where people say: "Rock a cradle empty, Babies will be plenty."³

Barren women very generally among the Negroes and Bantu carry dolls which they treat as children. Thus, an Agni or Gau-ne of the Ivory Coast will carry a wooden doll on her back as she would carry a real babe.⁴ A woman of the Wapogoro makes a doll out of a calabash with a bunch of short strings at its upper end fastened to a dried wild-banana core; and the more tenderly she cuddles and caresses the doll the sooner she will have a child.⁵ Dolls carried and hugged by Kaffir women in South Africa are to be seen in many museums: they are not to be mistaken for idols. The museum of the London Missionary Society used to possess a Bechuana doll used for this purpose. It consisted "of a long calabash like a

¹ H. A. Rose. *J. A. I.* xxxv. 271. A similar ceremony is practised by brides in South Roumania (*Globus*, xciv. 318).

² Bergen, *Curr. Superst.* 25.

³ *Ibid.* 24, 25. In some parts of England it is said to be unlucky to rock an empty cradle (Addy, 98). This perhaps refers to the converse superstition current in New York that to rock a cradle when the baby is not in it will kill the baby (Bergen, *loc. cit.*).

⁴ Binger, ii. 230; Delafosse, *L'Anthrop.* iv. 444.

⁵ Dr. H. Fabry, *Globus*, xci. 219.

bottle, wound round with strings of beads.”¹ The Museum at Bloemfontein contains a doll of a most elaborate character, made of seeds and beads, and stated to be carried by a childless woman in some tribe unspecified in the Transvaal. The Museum at Pretoria contains wooden figures said to be used by barren Magwamba women, who nurse and play with them as a means of obtaining children.² Among the sacred legends of the Batutsi of Ruanda is one which appears to ascribe this practice to the direct institution of the “Creator.” In the early days mankind dwelt in the sky with him. There was a married woman who was sterile. So she went with a gift of honey pombe milk butter and skins into the “Creator’s” presence and prayed him for a child. On condition of secrecy he granted her prayer. Taking some clay he moistened it with his saliva, kneaded and fashioned it into a small human figure. Giving it to the woman he directed her to place it in a jar and to fill the jar during nine months night and morning with milk; when its limbs were developed she might take it out, and it would be her child. She followed the directions implicitly until she heard it crying within the jar, when she took it out and presented it to her husband as her newborn child. The application to the “Creator” was repeated until she had in this way two sons and a daughter. Her sister also was barren and determined to extort the secret from her. Over some pombe she

¹ *J. A. I.* xvi. 179; Tylor, *E. Hist.* 109.

² These dolls are in human form elaborately carved. One represents a full-grown man wearing the chaplet only accorded to warriors and distinguished men after attaining a ripe age. Mr. Gottschling, missionary to the Bavenda, who visited the museum with me, suggested that their real use was in the puberty ceremonies.

unfortunately succeeded only too well. The enraged "Creator" cast the three children down to the earth, where they became the progenitors of the Batutsi.¹

At Butha-Buthe in the north of Basutoland there is a piece of swampy ground called the Khapong, which we are told is regarded as "sacred to the spirit of maternity." A woman who has no children makes a wooden or clay doll, straps it on her back and bears it about like a living child for six months, after which it is laid in the Khapong as an offering to the spirit, together with bangles, beads or even money. If no child be born the woman has not yet found favour with the spirit; so she removes the doll from the Khapong and straps it on her back again, until the spirit is satisfied and the child is born. The lady to whose report we owe the mention of this practice knew of one woman who carried the doll for five years before her wish was granted.² Casalis, writing about fifty years ago, speaks of these dolls as rude effigies of clay, and says that "the name of some tutelary deity" (apparently some deceased ancestor) is given to them. The women "entreat the divinity to whom they have consecrated them, to give them the power of conception. They may often be seen all out of breath running from one village to another, to have dances performed in honour of their patron."³ Here also simulation is

¹ Fath. Loupias, *Anthropos*, iii. 2.

² Martin, *Basutoland*, 18, 93. Some further inquiries should be made about this "spirit of maternity": the Basuto are ancestor-worshippers. Compare, however, the Zulu belief (doubtless common to other tribes) that mankind came out of a bed of reeds (Callaway, *Rel. Syst. passim*).

³ Casalis, 265 (Eng. Ed. 251). A figure of the doll is given. These dolls are worn from the time the bride-price is settled until pregnancy (Endemann, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* vi. 39).

combined with worship. Another account describes the doll as made either with a gourd or with clay and adorned with beads. A name is given to it, and it is carried and cared for as if it were a real child. Barren women perform a ceremony in connection with it, lasting two or three days. First a band of women go to a neighbouring village to steal a *lesokwana*, or wooden spatula with which the Basuto women stir their porridge. When this is accomplished they return garlanded with green herbs, singing and invoking Ntidi, the famous cripple mentioned on an earlier page; to succour the barren women. The latter are then scarified and scarred behind the shoulders, as in a Zulu tale the pigeons scarified the heroine on the loins to render her pregnant.¹ Native beer is prepared to be ready against the appointed day. When the day arrives all the women of the village go to the mountain; and when Ntidi was living the barren women bore him on their backs and were assisted from time to time by their companions. They enter a cave, where they remain all night singing the same song as after stealing the *lesokwana*, but they remain without food until the men find them. The next morning the men set out in search of them. Sometimes they do not find them that day; search is then renewed on a second. When the women are found, they are brought back crowned with herbs as when they went to steal the *lesokwana*; but they refuse to enter the village until they are conciliated with the present of an ox. The young girls, who alone have remained at home, then bring them food. The husbands of the barren women kill cattle in their honour and a grand feast is held. The

¹ Callaway, *Tales*, 67

barren women are smeared with red ochre antimony and white clay; and they wear the apron of women who have just given birth. They are presented to the assembly with their doll-babes. Men and women all sing and weep together, in a song lamenting the misfortune of those who have no children. During Ntidi's life he was passed from one to another of the women. Perched on their shoulders he too sang a song of lamentation. When the singing is ended the two fore-quarters of each of the animals slain is taken to the home of the maternal uncle of the woman for whom it was killed, as a formal announcement to him of what has taken place. The "mother" sleeps with the doll as if it were a real child; and she ceases not to carry it about until her real child is born. The latter then receives the name given to the doll, if of the same sex as the doll is supposed to be; otherwise another name is chosen. Since Ntidi's death a young unmarried man is chosen to accompany the women on their excursion to the mountain. Although, however, he supplies to some extent the place of Ntidi he does not ride on their shoulders as the cripple did. The cult of Ntidi is said to be disappearing: the medicine-men now cure sterility by their "medicines."¹

A similar fusion of magic and religion has been found among the Huichol of Mexico. A woman desirous of children deposits in a cave near Santa Catarina sacred to a female divinity "a doll made of cotton-cloth, representing the baby wanted. After

¹ E. Jacottet, *Bull. Soc. Neuchât.* ix. 137. As to Ntidi, see *supra*, p. 88. He seems to have died in a great famine consequent upon an invasion by Fingoes in the year 1821. As to the doll, see also *Journ. Afr. Soc.* v. 366.

awhile she goes back to the cave, puts the doll under her girdle, and shortly afterwards is supposed to be pregnant."¹ About Behring Strait a barren Eskimo woman consults a shaman who makes or gets the husband to make a small doll, over which he performs certain secret rites, and the woman is directed to sleep with it under her pillow.² On the other side of the strait Chukchi girls play with dolls. Some of these dolls are charms to procure fertility for their owners. They "pass from mother to daughter, and are kept carefully patched and mended so as to last for an indefinite time. The bride brings this doll to her new house and keeps it in her bag. In due time she gives it to her oldest daughter to play with and to keep. When other daughters are born a little stuffing is taken out of the hereditary doll and put into a new one, which is then supposed to possess all the qualities of the first doll. Dolls of this kind are usually shaped like new-born babies. Incantations are recited over them by each generation, so that their force is supposed to increase continually."³ In Japan when a marriage is unfruitful a ceremony called *kasedori* is performed. The old women of the neighbourhood come to the house on the festival of Sahe no Kami, the phallic god, which is held on the first full moon of the year, and there go through the form of delivering the wife of a child. The infant is represented by a doll.⁴ A Chinese woman goes further: she adopts a little girl to produce conception—a practice for which an

¹ Lumholtz, *Mem. Am. Mus. N. H.* Anthrop. ii. 52.

² *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xviii. 435. There is said to be a similar practice in New Caledonia (Saintyves, *Les Vierges Mères*, 61).

³ Bogoras, *Jesup Exped.* vii. 367.

⁴ Aston, *Shinto*, 331.

elaborate reason is assigned. In the invisible world, it is said, every woman is represented by a tree which bears as many flowers as she is fated to bear children. If the tree bear no flowers she will be naturally sterile; and then just as a fruit-tree is grafted with the shoot of another tree to make it bring forth fruit, so by adopting a child the childless woman hopes to produce on her tree in the spiritland the germination of flowers, and thus to become herself fruitful.¹ Among the Thai of Tonkin it is customary when a man has no children to adopt a son from another family, though no father can be found to part with a son save in the direst misery. A child thus adopted is regarded as a bringer of luck; and he is believed often as among the Chinese to procure fertility for his adoptive mother.²

Fertilisation may also take place by the eye, as in some of the stories. Dulaure cites a certain Saint Arnaud whose phallic statue, more decent than those of some other saints, was clothed with an apron. Only in favour of sterile women who came to pray for offspring was the apron lifted; and the sight disclosed was enough, with faith, to work miracles.³ The belief in the Evil Eye has not wholly disappeared in this country. The power of causing conception by a fixed gaze or glare of the eyes seems to be credited to foreigners. At least one instance of this kind has been

¹ Doolittle, i. 113. The practices discussed above raise the suspicion that our own children's dolls may have originated in the same kind of magic. Another European practice appears referable to it. In the Prättigau valley of Eastern Switzerland at the time of vintage women make little dolls of rags and stealthily seek to attach them to one another's clothing (Hoffmann-Krayer, *Schweizerisches Archiv für Volkskunde*, xi. Basel, 1907, 268).

² Antoine Bourlet, *Anthropos*, ii. 364, 365.

³ Dulaure, 210.

related in recent years by a woman, who believed her sister to have been thus acted on. When the gaze "has caused the girl to feel helpless and motionless, the man sends his hot breath over her face, and if she possesses no power of resistance the harm is done." The man in the case referred to was a foreigner, "an Italian, or something like that," very dark, with black eyes and hair. The victim was said to have seen him only on that one occasion; and the story was told as a warning against letting girls, especially fair girls, have any acquaintance with foreigners.¹

Reviewing the rites and beliefs here brought together, it will be seen that no mention has been made, as in some of the tales, of the power of the wind as the source of fecundity in women, or of the sense of smell or hearing as the channel of that fecundity. It was, however, held in classic times that partridges were impregnated in some such way; for Pliny tells us that if the female only stood opposite to the male, and the wind blew from him towards her, or if he simply flew over her head, or very often if she merely heard his voice, it would be enough.² The belief was equally common, and not merely used for a poetical ornament by Vergil, but repeated without question as a literal fact by men of lofty intellect and wide attainments like Pliny and Augustine, that mares were, in Lusitania, as the former asserts, or in Cappadocia, according to the latter, fertilised by wind.³ Mohammedan tradition

¹ *F. L.* ix. 83.

² Pliny, x. 51. He is only echoing Aristotle, *Hist. Anim.* v. 4. Athenæus (*Deipnos.* ix. 42) improves upon the statement by saying that sight of the cock is enough. It appears that in France the belief lasted into the sixteenth century (Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iii. 169).

³ Pliny, viii. 67; *Aug. Civ. Dei.* xxi. 5.

spoke of a preadamite race consisting entirely of women who conceived (daughters only) by the wind, and as I have already said of an Isle of Women thus peopled.¹ If the inhabitants of the district of Lampong, in the island of Sumatra, be not maligned, they at the beginning of the present century believed all the population on the neighbouring island of Engano to be females who were impregnated in the same manner.² The Arunta of Central Australia still hold that a storm from the west sometimes brings evil *ratapa*, or child-germs, that seek to enter women. As the storm approaches, the women with a loud cry hasten to huddle themselves up in the shelter of their rudimentary huts; for if they become thus impregnated twins will be the result, and they will die shortly after delivery. The first-born twin is the evil *ratapa*. This belief is adduced to justify the murder of twins.³

The ancient nations of the Mediterranean basin, accomplished as they were in the arts of life, had imbibed very little of the true scientific spirit that searches out the facts of nature, whether in immediate relation to themselves or not. They were (individual exceptions apart) content to accept a wonder upon authority without inquiring into the evidence, the antecedent improbability awakening hardly more doubts in their minds than in those of savages or mediæval monks. The statements just cited of the sexual intercourse of partridges and the fertilisation of Lusitanian mares are of a piece with other beliefs which they took no pains to verify. They would not

¹ *L'Abrégé des Merveilles*, 17, 71.

² Marsden, 297. Yule, *Marco Polo*, ii. 340, cites other cases.

³ Strehlow, 14.

have questioned the tale repeated in the previous chapter of the impregnation of a fish by the mouth, for they held that that was the normal method among fishes.¹ Moreover, Ælian reports Egyptian gossip as declaring that the ibis effected coition and laid its eggs by the same channel; nor on this particular statement has the rhetorician any qualms, though he boggles at the exaggerations of the embalmers concerning the enormous length of the sacred bird's intestines.² The lizard or crocodile which appears upon Minerva's breast on certain gems is said to be explained by the belief that this animal, like the Virgin Mary in the hymn already cited, conceived by the ear; though unlike her it brought forth by the mouth.³ Pliny indeed ventured to question the existence of the phoenix; but it seems to have been commonly accepted that the female vulture had no intercourse with the male—a belief to which Origen appeals in the support of the doctrine of the Virgin Birth of Jesus Christ.⁴

Such credulity still lingers among semi-civilised peoples, as well as among the uneducated classes of Europe. The Annamites declare that the rabbit breeds by the mouth.⁵ In Cambodia it is said that peacocks do not couple like other birds: when they erect their tails they drop the semen on the ground; and the peahens are fecundated by picking it up.⁶ I have found a similar belief among the peasantry of Gloucestershire, where I am writing. It is known in Anglesey, and is probably general throughout the

¹ Herod. ii. 93; Ælian, *Nat. Anim.* ix. 63.

² Ælian, *Nat. Anim.* x. 29.

³ King, *Gnostics*, 107.

⁴ Origen, *Contra Cels.* i. 37.

⁵ *Rev. Trad. Pop.* xii. 419.

⁶ Aymonier, *Excursions*, xvi. 150.

country. In Yorkshire and Norfolk the same thing is said of turkeys ; and it is reported from somewhere in Siberia of the capercailzie.¹ No doubt it is a widespread belief, founded upon a superficial observation of some of the habits of different species of animals.

As I have already pointed out, it cannot be asserted that in every instance of the practices collected in the present chapter pregnancy is believed to be caused, as in the tales, by the means prescribed apart from sexual intercourse. It is obvious however that even where we cannot make this assertion the practices are intended to have some effect. They must have originated at an early stage of culture when no clear notion of cause and effect was possible, and when the distinction between natural and supernatural was hardly drawn. At that stage man attributed to every object in his environment, whether human or non-human, a mystic potentiality, an atmosphere, which was greater or less not always according to the actual qualities of the object but according to his ignorance of it and his hopes his fears his fancies concerning it. Hence his relations with many of the non-human objects and probably in some degree with all or nearly all of them would be best described as religious or magical : they would depend upon the performance of ceremonies and the observance of ritual prohibitions and regulations. We must not wonder therefore if we find ascribed to many objects thaumaturgic powers and qualities we now know to be impossible, and if to obtain the benefit of those qualities and powers rites and observances meaningless to us are deemed necessary. Among the

¹ *F. L.* viii. 375 ; ix. 82.

purposes for which these objects would be employed that of acting on the human organism would often hold a prominent place. Until magic and religion are differentiated from medicine the rites and observances connected with their employment are vague and indeterminate in their aspect, and the exact operation of the objects employed is not even questioned. We need not here discuss the relation between magic and religion: it is at all events beyond doubt that they have been intimately connected from the earliest times. A very superficial examination of the history of medicine suffices to show how tardy was the process of its differentiation from both. To refer here only to magic, medical treatises right down to the close of the Middle Ages teem with prescriptions not merely valueless in themselves for therapeutic action, but obviously of magical origin. Nor are such prescriptions by any means absent from medical treatises composed long since the Revival of Learning; while the repertory of the peasant-doctor abounds with them even yet. Many of the practices recorded in the foregoing pages belong to this class, and we must not be surprised if they wear more or less of a medicinal aspect. They must not, however, be considered alone. Their medicinal aspect is delusive. Their true connections are with a much larger number of practices directed to the same end and bearing no therapeutic interpretation. They must be correlated with these, and not with these only but with the stories of supernatural birth in which the same or analogous means are employed for the same purpose and are spoken of as the direct cause of birth independent of the union of the sexes. Nor is this all. These practices and stories must also be compared

with puberty and marriage rites having fecundation for their object, avowed or inferential, with the prohibitions at puberty and on other occasions for the purpose of avoiding irregular fecundation, and lastly with the positive beliefs current among various peoples as to the fecundation of certain of the lower animals and even of women by other than the natural means.¹ All are of the same origin: stories practices and beliefs are all inexplicably interwoven into one pattern. From their consideration we are justified in concluding that it was a widespread belief in early times that pregnancy was caused otherwise than by sexual intercourse.

Such a conclusion would be startling if the belief we suppose had arisen in the midst of a civilised society. It originated in an intellectual atmosphere very different from that of modern civilisation. But the difference of the intellectual atmosphere is not alone sufficient to account for it: a difference of social environment is also required. The general result of anthropological evidence is to lead to the conviction that mankind has evolved from a state socially as well as mentally more backward than that of the lowest savages now extant. To form an opinion on the social conditions in which the belief in conception, and consequently birth, by other than the natural cause originated, it is necessary to undertake an inquiry into certain social regulations and practices in the lower culture.

¹ Of all these we have given examples. The argument would have been strengthened if space had permitted a consideration of agricultural rites. Fields and fruit-trees are often treated in a manner analogous to the treatment of barren women. The treatment of many of the lower animals by similar methods has been noticed incidentally.

But as a preliminary to this inquiry we must complete our study of the stories, beliefs and practices in reference to birth by an examination of those in which birth is represented as a return of creatures, human or non-human, who have previously lived and died.

CHAPTER III

TRANSFORMATION AND METEMPSYCHOSIS

Birth is often a new manifestation of a previously existing personage. Ballads and stories in which the dead manifest themselves as trees. Corresponding beliefs and practices. Transformation after death into brute-form. The converse. Transformation of brutes and vegetables into human beings by birth. Buddhist doctrine of Transmigration. Celtic doctrine. New birth of human beings. Belief in multiple souls. Rites to ascertain which of the ancestors has returned. Naming a child after a deceased member of the family. Rites to secure a transfer of life. Australian beliefs in re-birth. Warehouse of children. Relation between Transformation and Transmigration.

THE hero of many tales of Supernatural Birth is not a new personage; he is simply a new manifestation. He had previously existed in other shapes, and by undergoing birth (preceded sometimes, but not always, by death) he was entering on a new career, he was ascending a new stage of being. In the Egyptian tale the persea-trees are expressly identified with the murdered Bata; and when they are cut down a splinter flies into the heroine's mouth rendering her pregnant—of Bata once more. Yehl, the Thlinkit hero, repeatedly became the son of ladies who were beguiled into swallowing a pebble, a blade of grass or even a drop of water, which was no other than the demi-god

in disguise. What is expressly asserted in stories like these may be inferred from others. In the most widely diffused modern type of *märchen* belonging to the cycle of Perseus, a fish being caught directs that its flesh shall be given to the fisherman's wife, while the bones and the scales and other offal are to be given to the mare and the bitch or otherwise disposed of. The woman becomes pregnant of the flesh, the mare and bitch of the bones scales, and so forth. We can only interpret the careful directions given by the fish as to how it was to be cooked and eaten and how its remains were to be disposed of, the exact correspondence of the twins or triplets who are born of the woman and their horses dogs and other property with these directions when they are duly followed, and the mystic connection between the offspring, as evidence that they are a new birth of the fish. Nor are these inferences to be confined to the stories. The belief in birth as a new manifestation of a previously existent personage appears from the practices, detailed in the last chapter, in which portions of corpses are utilised to promote conception. The subject is so important not merely in the general study of savage ideas, but in relation to the belief that conception is due to other than the natural cause that it is necessary to discuss it further.

In so doing I do not propose to consider *märchen*. Interesting as these are we must for reasons of space pass them by. The reader will doubtless be willing to assume their existence and wide diffusion. I shall confine myself as far as possible to evidence of belief, using even sagas as sparingly as possible.

But we must begin with sagas and ballads. A

favourite theme in Western folksong is that of the lovers brought, like Tristram and Isolde, to a tragic end, from whose graves two trees grow and intertwine their branches as if they were joined in a lasting embrace. In this country the incident is perhaps most frequently associated with the name of the ballad of *Fair Margaret and Sweet William*; but it is also found in several others.¹ There is hardly a country on the continent of Europe in which it does not occur. It has even been recorded among the traditions of the Schluh in the south of Morocco; the Kurds and Afghans repeat it; and it is familiar as far away as China. It is obvious that the trees are merely the lovers transformed. A Lesbian ballad says in so many words that the bride poisoned by her mother-in-law became a lemon-tree and her bridegroom who died for love a cypress, and that every Easter, every Sunday and feast-day the two lovers embraced. Another also expressly identifies a reed growing from the bridegroom's grave and a cypress growing from the bride's with the unhappy lovers themselves. They wished to embrace while living; they do so now that they are dead.²

Moreover the kind of tree thus growing from a grave is often held to be an index of the character of the deceased. Indeed among the Kirghiz every one on whose grave a tree grows spontaneously is deemed a saint.³ In Iceland the mountain-ash is regarded as sacred. A story localised in two places is told of a

¹ Child, *Ballads*, i. 96, and under the headings of the various ballads there mentioned.

² Georgeakis et Pineau, 208, 220.

³ Featherman, *Tur.* 269.

tenderly attached brother and sister accused of incest and in spite of their denials condemned to capital punishment and executed. Before death they earnestly with tears prayed, beseeching the almighty and all-knowing God to make their innocence manifest and desiring their friends and kindred to procure them to be buried in the same grave. They were buried one on either side of the church; and a mountain-ash grew out of each of their graves, meeting above the roof of the church and uniting their branches so closely that they could hardly be separated. This was regarded as a sign of their innocence and their desire to rest together in the same grave.¹ Among the peasantry of the Riviera thorns or nettles growing on the grave are a sign of the damnation of the dead; if other plants grow he is happy; if a mixture he is in purgatory.² Similar superstitions and stories illustrative of them are found throughout Europe. In the game of "Old Roger is dead," a favourite among children in England, we probably have a last echo of them. The story chanted in the game runs substantially as follows:

Old Roger is dead and lies in his grave;
There grew a fine apple-tree over his head;
The apples are ripe and ready to drop;
There came an old woman apicking them up;
Old Roger jumped up and he gave her a knock;
He made the old woman go hippity-hop.

Some of the versions speak of the tree as being planted; and Mrs. Gomme in commenting on the game aptly refers to Aubrey's *Remaines of Gentilisme*,

¹ V. *Am Urquell*, 120.

² J. B. Andrews, *Rev. Trad. Pop.* ix., 117.

where the old antiquary reports concerning the parish of Ockley, in Surrey, a custom of planting roses at the grave of a deceased lover, adding as a conclusion of his own "they planted a tree or a flower on the grave of their friend, and they thought the soul of the party deceased went into the tree or plant."¹ Aubrey's conclusion is doubtless correct, if not for his own time, for one not many generations off; but it presents a development of the original conception, his friend Mrs. Smyth's "notion of men being metamorphosed into trees and flowers," which he damns as "ingeniose," being much nearer the truth than he seems to imagine.

In India the legend of Krishna relates that his wife Rukminî died in his absence. Her body was burnt and the ashes buried in a new earthenware jar according to the prescribed ritual. When Krishna returned and was shown the burial-place a tulsi-plant had grown upon it. This plant was Rukminî in a new form; and hence the tulsi is regarded as sacred.² In the Molucca Islands there is a tree which bears during the night from sunset to sunrise a rapid succession of fragrant white flowers. To account for this phenomenon the inhabitants of Ternate have a tradition that there was once a beautiful woman who was beloved by the Sun, and who, being deserted by her fickle lover, slew herself. Her body was, in accordance with the custom of the country, burnt; and from her ashes arose the tree, called by the early Portuguese

¹ Mrs. Gomme, ii. 16; Aubrey, *Remaines*, 155. According to the Book of Ballymote an apple-tree grew up through the grave of Aillem, daughter of Lughaid, King of Leinster, who died of shame on being ravished away by Cremh (*Silva Gad.* ii. 531).

² *Anthropos*, ii. 276.

voyagers the Tree of Sorrow.¹ East and west, literally "from China to Peru" as well as in the Pacific islands, a similar origin has been attributed to a large number of trees, particularly to those like the cocoa-tree, the areca-palm, and the coca-tree, which are useful to mankind. In Borneo Sir Hugh Low was once walking in the jungle with a Land Dyak from a neighbouring village when a large snake crossed their path. The Dyak drew his parang and raised his arm to strike, but suddenly stopped. Sir Hugh asked him the reason, and he said that the bamboo-bush opposite to which they were standing had been a man and one of his relations who, dying about ten years previously, had appeared in a dream to his widow and informed her that he had become that bamboo-tree, and the ground about it and everything on it were sacred on that account. He went on to say that in spite of that warning a man had once had the hardihood to cut a branch from the tree, in consequence of which he soon after died—a punishment for his sacrilegious act. A small bamboo altar was erected before the bush, and Sir Hugh Low noted that upon it were the remnants of offerings presented, though not recently, to the spirit of the tree.²

The belief that a tree growing on a grave is thus a transformation of the dead man within has led to the planting of trees for the purpose of providing a new body for the deceased. Aubrey in a passage already quoted referred to the planting of roses in England.

¹ *Rev. Trad. Pop.* ix. 75, quoting Argensola, *Histoire de la Conquête des Isles Moluques* (Amsterdam, 1706). A Creole story from Louisiana attributes a similar origin to the ash-tree; hence its name (Alcée Fortier, *Journ. Am. F. L.* xix. 126).

² Roth, *Sarawak*, i. 265, quoting Low.

A Chinese anecdote gives expression in very pointed form to the belief which prompts the practice. "On Mount Poh-mang there is the grave of the chaste woman Li. Her husband having departed this life she buried him and planted a couple of cypresses in front of the tomb. After a while a cow bit off five inches from the top of the left tree; and when the woman was informed of this she exclaimed: 'The left one [*i.e.*, that on the principal side] is my husband,' and she ran to the grave. Wailing so bitterly that it was painful to behold, she caressed the cypress, and ere the night was gone it had grown up again as high as the tree on the right hand side. After her death she was buried in the same grave." In another story two chestnut-trees planted on the grave of husband and wife intertwine their branches, "a proof in the eyes of the people that the souls of husband and wife . . . had assimilated themselves each with one of those trees."¹ In Fiji, if a family lose three young children successively a banana is planted on the tomb of the last buried.² The missionary who reports this custom suggests that the banana is a sacrifice to the ancestral manes who came to eat the children. It is more likely to be attributable to the belief we are discussing. On the island of Ceram the wives of the deceased plant a tree (usually the *Pavetta Indica*) on the grave, probably for the same reason.³ Among the Gallas of Abyssinia aloe is planted upon the grave; and if it grow it is taken as a sign that the dead man is happy.⁴ A German practice is

¹ De Groot, *op. cit.* ii. 469, 467.

² *Anthropos*, ii. 74.

³ Bastian, *Indonesien*, i. 149.

⁴ Krapf, *Reisen in Ost-Afrika* (Stuttgart, 1858), i. 102.

manifestly a relic of a belief similar to that recorded in the foregoing tales and superstitions. If a farmer have several times a foal or calf die, he buries one of them in the garden, planting a young willow in its mouth. When the tree grows up it is never polled or lopped, but is allowed to grow its own way, and is believed to guard the farm from future casualties of the same kind.¹ The meaning of this practice can hardly be better illustrated than by a Kaffir custom. Among some tribes of Kaffirs when twins are born they are examined, and the one appearing the more delicate is suffocated by placing a clod of earth in its mouth. When dead it is buried near the doorway of the hut, and a dwarf aloe is planted over the grave. "The aloe is regarded in some way as the living representative of the dead infant; its spirit or shade is supposed to be in it, or to be hovering about it. When it is planted its spines are carefully cut away, that the survivor may play about it and drag himself up by it and make himself

¹ Grimm, *Teut. Myth.* 1811. The following are perhaps traceable to the same idea; but they are too doubtful to record in the text: "In Derbyshire, when cattle, such as horses and cows, die, it is usual to bury them under fruit-bearing trees in the orchard" (Addy, 132). In the sixteenth century it was believed in France that a dead dog or other carrion buried at the foot of a tree which had lost its vigour would restore it; and the same property is attributed to a dead cat (Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iii. 377). A Sicilian *märchen* speaks with a less uncertain voice. The hero having won the king's daughter by the performance of a ploughing task with the help of a magical ox, the ox is killed by his own directions for the marriage-feast, and its bones are buried in the newly prepared land, except one leg which is put under the pillows of the bridal bed. The bride dreams of fruit, awakes and plucks it. The field where the bones are buried is found full of all sorts of fruit-trees, laden with fruit (Pitrè, *Bibl.* iv. 243). Here the fruit is clearly the magical ox in a new manifestation.

strong, as he would have done with his fellow-twin had he been permitted to live."¹

Concerning the belief of the Dieri tribe of South Australia we are told: "There are places covered by trees which are held very sacred, the larger ones being supposed to be the remains of their fathers metamorphosed. The natives never hew them, and should the settlers require to cut them down, they earnestly protest against it, asserting they would have no luck and themselves might be punished for not protecting their ancestors."² Further to the north in Central Australia it is a common belief that where their mythical ancestors "went into the ground" a stone or a tree arose to mark the spot. "In the Arunta tribe every individual has his or her Nanja tree or rock at the spot where the old ancestor left his spirit-part when he went down into the ground. . . . This rock or tree and its immediate surroundings are sacred, and no plant or animal found there may be killed or eaten by the individual who is thus associated with the spot. In all essential features, but with variation in details, the same idea is found in the beliefs of the Kaitish and Unmatjera tribes."³ Such a tree or rock is beyond all doubt a transformation of the totem-ancestor. The sagas identify it over and over again; and the only dispute among modern observers who record the facts is whether the tree, the rock, the churinga, or whatever the object may be, is a transformation of the totem-ancestor himself or merely of his "spirit-part."⁴

¹ Callaway, *Journ. Anthr. Soc.* iv. cxxxviii.

² Gason, *The Dieyerie Tribe*, quoted Brough Smyth, i. 426 note.

³ S. and G. *North. Tribes*, 448.

⁴ Strehlow, i. Preface, and *passim*; *Globus*, xci. 288. See *post*, p. 241 note.

The distinction for our present purpose is not vital. The Warramunga have a tradition of a man named Murtu-Murtu, or Bullroarer, who lived in mythical times and was torn to pieces by two wild dogs. These had been excited by the continual noise he made, like that of a bullroarer. They threw the pieces of his flesh about in all directions. As these pieces flew through the air they made the sound of the bullroarer, and trees called *nanantha* sprang up where they fell on the earth. Out of such trees the natives now make their bullroarers. The dogs ran about biting the trees, in the hope that they would thus be able to kill the spirit of the man which had gone into them.¹ The trees were thus a transformation of the unfortunate Murtu-murtu. Dowed and Abmádam, the forefather and foremother of the Larrakia tribe near Port Darwin, when they died turned into trees, which a few years ago were said to be still in existence and much revered.²

The Wanyamwezi of East Africa "declare that their patriarchal ancestor became after death the first tree and afforded shade to his children and descendants."³ The Bushmen say that "girls who have been taken away by the water [that is, drowned] become like a beautiful water-flower which will not allow itself to be plucked and disappears when approached. Such flowers," we are wisely told, "must be let alone."⁴ The

¹ S. and G. *North. Tribes*, 434.

² *Curr*, i. 253; *J. A. I.* xxiv. 191.

³ Burton, *Lake Regions*, ii. 4. Burton goes on to say that "according to the Arabs the people still perform pilgrimage to a holy tree, and believe that the penalty of sacrilege in cutting off a twig would be visited by sudden and mysterious death." But it does not appear that this is the tree in question.

⁴ Lloyd, *Rep.* 25.

Maidu inhabiting the foot-hills of the Sierra Nevada in California hold that "bad people" are changed into rocks and bushes.¹ A similar belief is obvious in the Bavarian saga concerning three women who led an abandoned life in a castle in the forest near Nüremberg, to which they enticed strangers and then plundered and put them to death. Their dwelling was eventually struck by lightning; they perished with it; but their souls entered three great trees. If one of the trees be cut down the soul passes over into another. After the bell for evening prayer has sounded a passer-by may hear from the tree-tops in the gloom soft voices calling him, or a mischievous titter; and he will think he catches sight of a beckoning form not obscurely between the branches.²

As in the case of trees so also plants of smaller growth have been referred to transformations of sacred or mysterious personages. The various American legends of the origin of maize are too well known to need repetition. The Brazilian legend of the manioc is similar. It was a maiden born to a chief's daughter who had never known man. She grew to maturity in a year, died without any disease and was buried in her mother's house. The grave was watered every day according to the ancient custom of the tribe, and in due course a plant grew up from it, flourished and bore fruit. It is called manioc, Mani's house or transformation.³ The calabash-tree and the tobacco-plant

¹ R. Dixon, *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xvii. 261.

² Männhardt, *BK.* 41, citing Panzer. Frazer, *G. B.* i. 178, cites other cases of souls passing into trees which it is unnecessary to reproduce here.

³ Granada, 216, citing Magalhães. See also Dorman, 293, citing m th's *Brazil*; von den Steinen, 369; *Journ. Am. F. L.* xx. 147.

are the subject of a similar legend among the Aztecs or Pipiles of Central America.¹ A scene portrayed on the walls of a chamber in the great temple of Isis at Philæ represents the dead body of Osiris with stalks of corn springing from it while a priest waters the stalks from a pitcher in his hand. This representation suggests that the sacred legend of Osiris was much to the same effect. It was probably only one of several such myths, for a manuscript in the Louvre refers to the cedar as sprung from him; his soul is elsewhere represented as inhabiting the tamarisk; he is spoken of as "the solitary one in the acacia"; on the monuments he sometimes appears as a mummy covered with a tree or with plants, and trees are represented as growing from his grave.²

In classical legends we meet everywhere cases of transformation, either before or after death, of men and women into trees or plants or into some of the lower animals. Indeed, Ovid's poetical compendium of mythical history derives its name and substance from the number and variety of these cases. One of the most famous is that of Attis, whose worship, together with that of Cybele, the Mother of the Gods, was introduced from Phrygia to Rome in the year B.C. 204. We have already seen that the god's birth was caused by pomegranate-fruit which his mother laid in her bosom. He died, according to one account, by the attack of a boar; according to another, by loss of blood from self-mutilation in an access of frenzy. In

¹ C. V. Hartman, *Journ. Am. F. L.* xx. 144.

² Frazer, *Adonis*. 323, 342, citing and discussing several authorities. The adventures of Osiris as Bata have already been referred to, *supra*, p. 14.

either case he was believed to have been changed after death into a pine-tree.¹ Dr. Frazer has marshalled a number of arguments whence it is probable that Attis was originally a tree-spirit. Perhaps we may go one step further back and suggest that the worship was at first that of a sacred tree, and that the connection of this tree with a human being or an anthropomorphic divinity was a subsequent development.² Be that as it may, the legend as we have it, the worship as it is recorded for us, implied a belief in metamorphosis as a possible and actual occurrence consequent upon death. This belief must have descended to classic times from savagery.

Already we have seen that the belief in metamorphosis of this kind arises in savagery. Like many another belief equally baseless it survives under religious associations into higher stages of culture. Of the belief and its survival I proceed to give a few more illustrations, selected from an endless number found all over the world. Nor shall I distinguish between metamorphosis and metempsychosis. Before this branch of the inquiry is closed I shall consider the relation between such cases; in the meantime we may treat them as equivalent.

The pious Æneas, beholding the gorgeous snake that crept from his father's tomb and tasted his offering, was at a loss whether to recognise in the creature the genius of the place or an attendant on his

¹ Frazer, *Adonis*, 163 *sqq.*; the authorities are there collected and discussed.

² So the sacred trees of many countries are believed to be dwelt in by spirits, sometimes non-human, sometimes human. Annamite sacred trees include examples of both (*Anthropos*, ii. 959). They were probably sacred before they were thus haunted.

father in the other world.¹ The Zulu, not less pious, has no doubts. A chief after death turns into an *imamba* (a poisonous snake), a woman or an ordinary man turns into a thin brown whip-snake called *umhlwazi*, a very old woman into a *mabibini*, or little black snake. Such snakes are treated with respect when they visit the kraal. They are praised and offerings are made to them.² Other forms may also be assumed. That of dead queens is the tree-iguana; some men become wasps.³ All the Bantu peoples indeed believe that the dead may become animals of various kinds, from elephants lions and hippopotami downwards; but the snake is the form most commonly ascribed to them.⁴ Whether the animal, whatever it may be, reincorporates the soul of the deceased or is on the other hand a new manifestation of the body, the soul undergoing meanwhile a distinct and separate destiny, does not appear without doubt. The reincorporation of the soul is affirmed so circumstantially and by so many authors who have had opportunities of ascertaining the belief of the peoples of which they speak, that it is impossible to reject their testimony. Yet we have some evidence equally positive, that the animal manifestation is neither to be confounded with the soul nor is a reincorporation of it. Thus a recent writer says: "Both the Angoni and the Achewa believe in reincar-

¹ Vergil, *Æn.* v. 84. In Greece the Hero was frequently honoured under the form of a snake: Harrison, 325.

² *S. A. F. L. Journ.* ii. 101; Callaway, *Rel. Syst.* 140, 196, 199.

³ Leslie, 213; Callaway, *op. cit.* 200.

⁴ Thomas, *Eleven Years*, 280; *J. A. I.* xxi. 377; xxxvi. 50, 281, 291; Miss Werner, 64, 85; H. Trilles, *Bull. Soc. Neuchat. Géog.* xvi. 64; and many other authorities, some of which are enumerated by Dr. Frazer, *Adonis*, 73.

nation, some saying they turn into the object from which they derive their name, as their fathers and relations have before them ; others, again, into some other animal not their totem-animal. . . . This idea of reincarnation does not appear consistent with the well-known fact that all these tribes are *manes*-worshippers ; and neither is it, if one associates the idea of transformation of the body with that of transmigration of the soul. The soul, *mzimu*, does not enter into the animal ; and the animal which is looked upon as the reincarnation of the dead relation does not have any human attribute whatever, and does not concern the native in any way. He does not propitiate it or appeal to it at any time, as he does to the *mzimu* or spirit which comes back to live in the hut in which it had its abode when alive ; only he will not willingly eat it or destroy it.”¹ So we are told concerning the rites on the death of a king of the Bahima, a Bantu people though by no means of pure blood, that the body is taken to Ensanzi the burial-place of the kings, where it lies in state until it swells and bursts. Ensanzi is a forest inhabited by sacred lions “said to be possessed by the spirits of former kings of Ankole.” “In the forest is a temple ; and attached to it are a number of priests whose duties are to feed and care for the lions, and to hold communications with the former kings when necessary.” While the body is lying in state the priest “has to find a young cub to present to the people, because the swelling and collapse of the corpse represent pregnancy and the birth of the lion-king. Directly the collapse takes place a lion-cub is produced and the priest

¹ Raffray, 178, 198.

announces that the king has brought forth a lion. He presents the cub to the people and proceeds to feed it with milk. For some days the people remain until the cub has gained strength and begins to eat meat. All the interest and anxiety now centre in the cub; the corpse receives an ordinary burial and is forgotten; the king lives in the cub. When the cub grows up it is released and allowed to wander in the forest with the other lions. It is thus by no means fully tame; still it is less fierce than the ordinary wild lions, and it is accustomed to seek its food in a certain place from the hands of the priests." In a similar way the corpse of a queen gives birth to a leopard in another belt of the same forest, and those of dead princes and princesses to snakes.¹ Whether these proceedings can be properly described as transmigration of the souls of the deceased seems more than doubtful. In any case the animal is a new manifestation of the departed.

As the tale of *The Two Brothers* has prepared us to believe, the Egyptians held that the dead "were able," in Dr. Budge's words, "at will to assume the form of any animal or bird or plant or living thing which they pleased; and one of the greatest delights to which a man looked forward was the possession of that power."² The *Book of the Dead* provides the deceased with a number of formulæ necessary to enable him to effect such transformation, or even to assume any form he chose. The belief seems, in fact, universal in Africa. The Masai, a Hamitic people with Bantu admixture, do not as a rule bury

¹ Rev. J. Roscoe, *J. A. I.* xxxvii. 10L.

² Budge, *Egyptian Magic*, 230.

their dead. The common people are left to be eaten by hyenas and, it is believed, there is an end of them. But medicine-men, chiefs and persons of wealth are buried, and their souls become snakes which haunt their children's kraals and are regarded as sacred.¹ On the Slave Coast the Yoruba think the souls of the dead are sometimes born again in animals, most commonly the hyena or the solitary yellow monkey called *oloyo*, or (though more rarely) in plants.² The Brames of Senegal believe that the soul of the dead passes into the body of an animal not used for food. At the funeral the body is exposed to fire until the epidermis is easily rubbed off. This is done to facilitate passage into the body of the animal chosen by the deceased.³ Among the Ewhe the *ñoli*, or indwelling spirit of a man, often enters the body of one of the lower animals, sometimes friendly, sometimes hostile, to mankind. In the neighbourhood of Whydah the friendly *ñoli* frequently takes up its abode in the body of an iguana, "whence these reptiles are allowed to run about the house, and are regarded almost as tutelary deities, the death of one being considered a calamity."⁴ Similar beliefs are reported from the Gold Coast and the Niger.⁵ The Banyang in Northern

¹ Hollis, 304, 307; Merker, 192, 202. According to the latter the clan of the El Kiboron bury all their married men and believe that their bones change into snakes. See also Johnston, *Uganda*, ii. 832.

² Ellis, *Yoruba*, 133, 134. Compare the Djagga belief that their ancestors inhabit the bodies of colobus monkeys (*J. A. I.* xxi. 377).

³ Leprince, *L'Anthrop.* xvi. 61, 62.

⁴ Ellis, *Ewe*, 164.

⁵ C. H. Harper, *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 184, 186. Here it seems that the form of the sacred (totem) animal is or was usually believed to be taken. J. Parkinson, *Ibid.* 314, 319; Leonard, 142, 185, 188, 217.

Cameroon do not kill certain birds, believing that they are dead persons.¹ In Madagascar we are told the same of the Sakalava and the Betsileo. A Betsileo noble becomes a crocodile; the souls of common people lodge in certain eels named *lona*.² Some unspecified tribes hold the kingfisher and the death's head sphinx to be men who have changed into these forms after death. A great number of Malagasy are said to take these creatures for ancestors, and to hold them in consequent respect.³

The Ansairee, or Nasaree, of Tarsus in Asia Minor, though outwardly conforming to Islam, practise a religion combining many heterogeneous elements. They call their supreme god Ali. The Kalazians, one of their sects, are moon-worshippers, that is to say, they believe that Ali dwells in the moon, which is consequently the object of numerous rites. A few years ago the chief of this sect was Sheikh Hassan, one of the richest men at Tarsus. They believe that at his death he will become a star. Other men less holy or fortunate will go through various transformations. With this people, says Mr. Theodore Bent, "metempsychosis partakes strongly of the ridiculous: bad men put on 'low envelopes,' or *kamees*, in the next world; Mussulmans become jackals, and Jewish Rabbis apes; a man may be punished by becoming a woman, but a good woman may be rewarded in the next life by becoming a man."⁴

In the East Indies when a woman dies in child-

¹ Hutter, 297.

² van Gennep, *Tabou*, 271, 283, 291, 322, 323.

³ Ferrand, *Contes Pop. Malg.* 139, translating Dahle.

⁴ *B. A. Rep.* (1890), 544.

birth on the islands of Ambon and Uliase thorns or pins are stuck between the joints of the fingers and toes, in the knees shoulders and elbows, eggs of hens or ducks are laid under the chin and the armpits, and a portion of her hair is brought outwards and nailed fast between the coffin and its lid. The object of this is to prevent her from getting out of the coffin and flying away in the form of a bird. Even if she should succeed in this, it is believed she could not forsake the eggs. Were these precautions not taken she would be able to plague men and pregnant women. On the Tanembar or Timorlao Islands the *matmate* or ancestral spirits are worshipped. They take the form of various animals—opossums birds hogs turtles dugongs snakes crocodiles and sharks. In the Babar Archipelago small offerings are thrown to a snake seen lurking about a house, because it is believed that a woman who has died in childbirth has made use of it as a means to enter the village.¹ In certain districts of the south-east of Borneo a Dyak who dies by accident, as by drowning, is not buried, but carried into the forest and simply laid down there. It is believed that his soul enters a tree a fish or some other brute. Accordingly certain kinds of fish are not eaten, and certain kinds of wood are not used, because they willingly harbour souls. On the other hand, the soul of a man over whom all proper funeral rites have been performed enters the Town of Souls. But it cannot abide there for ever. After a life seven times as long as on the earth it dies and returns to this world, where it enters a mushroom a fruit or a leaf, in the hope that it

¹ Riedel, 81, 281, 338. Similar beliefs in other East Indian islands, Kruyt, 181, 187, &c.

may be eaten by a human being or one of the lower animals. In such case the deceased is born again in the next offspring of the living creature which has eaten it ; if such creature be one of the lower animals the soul still has a chance of being born again as a human being, provided the animal be eaten by a man or woman. But if the animal the fruit, or whatever it may be, be not thus eaten the soul comes to an end.¹ The Dyaks, as is well known, are addicted to the observation of omens from birds. "They suppose that these birds are their ancestors who have been transmigrated in order to watch over the welfare of their tribe, and who are still interested in everything connected with it. None but the brave are thus distinguished. Every household has certain birds which it follows and other birds which are of ill omen, that is, which warn of approaching danger. Once, it is said, when an unusually brave man was fighting, the enemy cut off his *chawat* (loin-cloth) behind ; he died and became a bird without a tail."² "The Malanaus believe that after a long life in the next world they again die, but afterwards live as worms or caterpillars in the forest."³ Among the Kayans "when the soul separates from the body, it may take the form of an animal or a bird, and as an instance of this belief,

¹ F. Grabowsky, *Int. Arch.* ii. 181, 187 ; Kruyt, 383. See further as to the belief of the peoples of Java, Sumatra and neighbouring islands, Kruyt, 271, 335, 348, 375, 418, 419 ; as to the specific belief of the Karo-bataks of Sumatra and the Madurese of Java in reincarnation as human beings, *Ibid.* 8, 11.

² Ling Roth, *Sarawak*, i. 224, quoting Rev. W. Crosland. These Dyaks seem to be Land Dyaks. From another source we learn that the omen-birds are directly addressed as ancestors and prayed to avert rain, darkness, storms, swords and other dangers (*Ibid.* 226, quoting Rev. W. Chalmers).

³ De Crespigny, *J. A. I.* v. 35.

should a deer be seen feeding near a man's grave his relatives would probably conclude that his soul had taken the form of a deer, and the whole family would abstain from eating venison for fear of annoying the deceased." ¹

The Bahau of Central Borneo ascribe not merely to human beings but to all things living and not-living the possession of a soul called *bruwa*. This soul at death escapes in the shape of a fish a bird or a snake, and makes its way to Apu Kěsió, the land of the dead. But human beings, their domestic animals and some others have a second soul called *ton luwa*, which only forsakes the corpse after death, and remains at the grave until it becomes an evil spirit. The *ton luwa* however, may appear in the form of a goat or a grey monkey, and stories are told showing that it is able to sojourn in such animals; wherefore the Bahau are loth to eat them.² The inhabitants of Nias believe that the soul divides into two or three parts according as the deceased was rich or poor. One part, after the performance of all the funeral rites, goes to the village of souls, where it passes through many successive lives. Often it takes brute form. Thus men who have been murdered become grasshoppers, those who die without male issue become night-flying moths, old men assume the form of big hogs, and children become earthworms. Another part, called the *ehéha*, or hereditary soul, must be received in a purse if there be no direct heir; otherwise the soul of the dying man must receive it in his mouth from the mouth of the

¹ Hose, *J. A. I.* xxiii. 165.

² *Arch. Religionsw.* ix. 263, summarising Nieuwenhuis, *Quer durch Borneo*.

latter in order to be recognised as heir. When this is done, however, a small part of the soul still remains and lingers about the body, transformed into a small four-footed animal. For this animal formal search is made, and when found it is safely conveyed into a statuette representing the deceased.¹

In the Malay Peninsula the Eastern Semang believe that the soul of a *b'lian* (priest chief and magician) enters after death into the body of some wild animal, such as an elephant tiger or rhinoceros. In this embodiment it remains until the beast dies, when it is admitted into the Upper Heaven, that of Fruits. The Besis of Selangor hold that the souls of their chiefs find a resting-place in the bodies of tigers deer pigs and crocodiles. The Benua of Johor suppose the soul of a magician to enter into a tiger. The Jakun tell a story of a king whose soul migrated into a white cock. The Jakun of Sungei Ujong relate that a king having died and been buried, when the mourners visited the tomb seven days later they were astonished to find no trace of the deceased save his clothing and his shroud ; but a *siamang* (a species of ape) was swinging from branch to branch of the great tree that overshadowed the grave. Their efforts to drive away the animal failed, and they concluded it could be nothing else than the deceased king : an opinion confirmed by a subsequent prodigy. For when wounded once by the dart from a blowpipe the *siamang* transformed himself for a moment into a tiger striking such terror into his assailant that the latter

¹ Modigliani, 292, 277, 290, 293, 479. Is it too much to say that the Greek custom whereby the nearest relative received the dying breath in a kiss probably originated in a similar intention ?

expired not long afterwards. The white siamang is also one of the forms taken by the soul of a deceased chieftain among the Sakai. Other Jakun hold that phosphorescent jelly-fishes in the sea are wandering souls of men awaiting the impending birth of a child in order to try and enter its body. Moreover among the Eastern Semang not merely human beings have souls but also the lower animals. Fish-souls come from grasses, bird-souls from fruits which are eaten by the mother-bird. Each kind of animal has its corresponding soul-plant. The tigress-milk-fungus contains the soul of an unborn tiger-cub; the tiger eats the fungus and thus the soul is conveyed. Souls of beasts noxious to men are conveyed by poisonous, and those of harmless beasts by non-poisonous fungi. Phosphorescent fungi convey souls of night-beasts. In a Mantra saga the hero having died and been buried reappears as a skink, or grass-lizard. The hero's brother throws his jungle-knife at it and cuts off its tail, whereupon the dead man comes to life again, leaves his grave and returns to his own house.¹ Pakhangba, the ancestor of one of the clans of Meithei of the state of Manipur, still sometimes appears to men, but always, like a Zulu, in the form of a snake.²

Among the traditions preserved in the *Nihongi* or Chronicles of Japan is one concerning the prince Yamato-dake, of whom it is said that when he died and was buried, taking the shape of a white bird he came forth from the *misasagi* or tumulus and flew

¹ Skeat and Blagden, ii. 194, 221, 223, 227, 305, 351 note, 365, 290, 190, 23, 216, 336.

² Hodson, 100.

towards the land of Yamato. The coffin was opened, and nothing but empty clothing was found remaining within. Messengers were sent to follow the bird, which rested in two places, where tumuli were subsequently erected in memory of the event, and it then soared aloft to heaven.¹ Another tradition preserved in the same work relates to a noble named Tamichi, who being sent to quell a rebellion was worsted by the rebels and slain. He was buried, but the rebels afterwards dug up his tomb, whereupon "a great serpent started up with glaring eyes and came out of the tomb." It bit the rebels who had violated the tomb so that nearly all of them died. "Therefore the men of that time said: 'Although dead, Tamichi at last had his revenge. How can it be said that the dead have no knowledge?'"²

The Gilyaks of the island of Sakhalin hold that a man has two souls, the one diffused throughout his entire body, the other small like an egg which during life goes forth in dreams but after death becomes the double of the deceased. For awhile it inhabits his favourite dog, which is tied to his former sleeping-place and treated with the best of food. After some months the dog is sold, for the double is believed to have quitted it on his journey to the other world. In the other world the soul lives much as here, save that conditions are altered so that the rich become poor and the poor rich.

¹ Aston, *Nihongi*, i. 210. It is interesting to note that although this account gives the occurrence beyond doubt as a bodily change, his son (who became Emperor) is represented under a later date in the annals as saying of his father: "*His divine spirit* became changed into a white bird and ascended to Heaven." *Ibid.* 217. But see Mr. Aston's observations, quoted *infra*, p. 248.

² *Ibid.* 296.

But it does not remain there for ever. Again it dies and enters a third world, and so on three times more, until it diminishes in size and is changed into ever smaller beings, into a bird, a midge, and finally dust. Sometimes, however, it is born again into our world and undergoes an endless series of transformations. This is the lot especially of women.¹ In a Chukchi tale the black bear is a wife who was forsaken by her husband for another woman. "The mountain sheep is also a woman forsaken by her husband. She threw herself from a steep rock and was dashed against the stones, thus becoming a sheep. Her braided hair was turned into horns."²

In China the belief that the dead change into animals, though never taken up seriously into Chinese philosophy, is current. Dr. De Groot has collected a number of stories expressive of this belief, in which we find men changing into asses cows birds of various kinds fish and even insects. Often only the soul is spoken of as manifested in such a shape. But other stories appear to present the bodies as undergoing metamorphosis. Thus a writer in the third century A.D. lays it down that persons who are drowned in the sea change into *wei*, probably a kind of sturgeon: a superstition current no doubt in his day and in that changeless country still entertained.³ Similarly "it is generally believed by Hindus that a person who dies from snake-bite is born a snake in the next life." An Indian gentleman relates that after an uncle of his

¹ Sternberg, *Arch. Religionsw.* viii. 470.

² Bogoras, *Jesup Exped.* vii. 329.

³ De Groot, iv. 157, 207, 208, 225, 227, 230, 231, 234, 238, 245.

own had died in this way he was constantly worried by the old ladies of the harem, whenever they saw a snake in the house, to take measures to free the deceased from his life as a snake. So he consulted an expert, and the following rules were prescribed: He was directed to have a snake with five hoods made of silver gold wood or clay, to represent Vāsuki Nāga the lord of snakes. He was to fast, and on the Nāgpanchmi, or feast of the dragon, in the month of Bhadon he was before eating to worship this image with an offering of milk flowers oleander lotus-flowers sandal-wood-powder and sweetmeats. Then he was to feed a Brahman with *jaur*, or rice boiled with milk and sugar, ghi and a laddu sweetmeat. Then making a libation of washed rice and white sandal-wood-powder in honour of the image, he was to pray the lord of snakes to free that member of his family who had been born in the race of snakes, owing to his death from the bite of one of them. "This remedy," he goes on to say, "in the opinion of my mother has proved effectual; and now whenever she sees a snake and I ask her if it is my uncle who still appears in that shape she says: 'No; this is not your uncle. It is a messenger from Shesha Nāga who is prowling about to discover what the world is doing and to kill some evil-doer.'" ¹ The Majhwārs, an aboriginal tribe of South Mirzapur, "believe that the souls of departed ancestors are embodied in certain animals." If after a death a calf be dropped and it refuse to drink milk, the Ojhá, or exorcisor, is called in. He very often declares: "Your father has been reborn in this calf." Such a calf is therefore taken great care of

¹ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* iv. 130 (par. 295).

and not worked in the plough.¹ The Paharias of the Rajmahal Hills hold that for the spirits of the suicide and the murderer there is no hope. They are condemned to wander up and down in the nether world without rest. Other spirits, however, after awhile are born again. Those who have done good are born in a better position than before. Those who have misused their opportunities or abused their position in former days will be born again in a lower grade. This process of reincarnation may be repeated again and again until the good man reaches the highest position, and the wicked man ceases to be born of a woman and joins the ranks of the inferior animals.² So in a much higher grade of civilisation the *Laws of Manu* declare that for disloyalty to her husband a wife is censured in this world, and after death she is born again from the womb of a jackal and is tormented by diseases, the punishment of her sin.³

An old Dutch traveller tells us that the Cinghalese are persuaded that the souls of men pass into domestic buffaloes, rather than into other animals. Accordingly they will not kill these creatures lest they kill or injure their relations or friends.⁴ The Chingpaw of Upper Burmah hold that the souls of such as have behaved well on earth live in the air or are born again as chieftains; the wicked on the other hand turn into lower animals and insects.⁵ The natives of Ugi in the Solomon Islands believe that the souls of the dead

¹ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* i. 129 (par. 817); Crooke, *Tribes and Castes*, iii. 434. The Patâris referred to in these authorities are a branch of the Majhwârs now occupying the status of their family priests.

² Bradley-Birt, 309.

³ *Sacred Books*, xxv. 197, 332.

⁴ Schouten, ii. 24.

⁵ Dr. Wehrli, *Int. Arch.* xvi. Suppl. 52.

pass into fireflies.¹ On Ulawa, another of the same group of islands, "a man of much influence not long ago forbade the eating of the banana after his death, saying that the banana would represent him, that he would be in the banana." This is stated to be the origin of a taboo recently laid on bananas. "The practice at Ulawa is illustrated by what is common at Saa, in Malanta. A man before his death will say that after he dies he will be a shark. When he is dead the people will look out for the appearance of some remarkable shark" and identify it with the deceased. Certain food, cocoa-nuts for example, will be reserved to feed it.² A story of the islanders of Mabuiag in Torres Straits presents a metamorphosis comparable to some of Ovid's. Certain men being clubbed to death were transformed into flying foxes (that is, fruit-eating bats) and flew away. They were however afterwards retransformed by being caught and their heads bitten off, as in European nursery tales the transformed hero is frequently delivered from his enchantment by having his head cut off.³ In the Murray Islands "the ghost of one about to die or of a recently deceased person usually appeared to the living in the form of some animal. A kingfisher may appear for any one, but there are certain animals that appear at the death of members of particular groups of individuals, the idea evidently being that the ghost of a

¹ Guppy, 54.

² Codrington, *J. A. I.* xviii. 310. In the Karesau Islands off the coast of Dutch New Guinea a dying man not long ago said he would come back as a star with a bird of paradise on his head. The fulfilment of the promise was apparently a comet (W. Schmidt, *Anthropos*. ii. 1051 note).

Haddon *Torres Str. Exped.* v. 90.

person takes the form of the animal to which it is akin and in that guise appears to the survivors. Usually it is the eponymous animal of a group with an animal name that appears on the death of a male member. Women are represented by flying animals, bats and birds, but no relation was indicated between groups of women and particular birds."¹ In Raiatea, one of the Society Islands, the destiny of the soul was determined by various circumstances. The souls of shipwrecked persons enter trepang-fish. Those who fall in battle take the shape of sea-birds and frighten the living by their nightly cries.² On the continent of Australia some of the blackfellows of the Namoi and Barwon rivers in New South Wales "say that human beings on dying pass into the form of the *turuwun*, a little bird with a very cheerful note."³ Among the Kurnai "the birds *bullawang*, *yeering* and *djeetgun* are said to be three of the *leen muk-kurnai* (real Kurnai ancestors)."⁴ The Euahlayi hold that the spirits of dead women return in the form of the little honey-eater bird which they call *durrooe*.⁵ The spirit of Eerin, a man who was a very light sleeper, is in the little grey owl. The bird is called Eerin too, and by its cries it ever warns its old tribe at night of any danger threatening them.⁶ The Narrinyeri suppose nearly all animals to have been originally men who performed great prodigies and at last transformed themselves ;

¹ Haddon, *Tylor Essays*, 178.

² *Arch. Religionsw.* x. 534, citing Huguenin, *Bull. Soc. Neuchat. Géog.* xv.

³ Ridley, *J. A. I.* ii. 269.

⁴ Howitt, *J. A. I.* xiv. 304 note. As to the Muk-Kurnai, see Howitt, 487.

Mrs. Parker, 85.

⁶ Mrs. Parker, *Tales*, ii. 98.

and they tell the same story of many large stones and some stars.¹

The Moquis of North America "are firm believers in metempsychosis, and say when they die they will dissolve into their original forms and become bears, deer, &c., again."² "Sorcerers will occasionally leave their graves in the form of bull snakes. Bull snakes are often seen coming out of certain graves still wound in the yucca-leaves with which a corpse was tied up when laid away. If such a bull snake in which a sorcerer is supposed to have entered happens to be killed the soul of the sorcerer living in it is set free and then goes to the Skeleton House," that is to say, the abode of the dead.³ In California the Tachi Yokuts believe that the dead dwell on an island in a river. The island is joined to the mainland by "a rising and falling bridge," over which it is necessary to pass. In doing so the dead are liable to be frightened by a large bird; then they fall off the bridge and are changed into fish. Every two days the island becomes full. Then the chief of the dead gathers the people and tells them to bathe. In the course of bathing the bird frightens them, and some turn to fish, others to ducks, only a few coming out of the water again in their proper shape. In this way room is made when the island is too full.⁴ Among the Gallinomero bad men were thought to return in the shape of coyotes, just as the Buddhist

¹ Taplin, *Narrinyeri*, 45, 46, 43.

² McLennan, *Studies*, ii. 357, quoting Schoolcraft. The belief seems here as in several other of the cases cited to be connected with totemism, but the question cannot be discussed now.

³ Voth, *Field Columb. Mus. Pub. Anthropol.* viii. 109 (cf. 114).

⁴ A. L. Kroeber, *Univ. Cal. Pub. Amer. Arch.* iv. 217, 218.

population at Ladak hold that a malicious person is reincarnated as a marmot.¹ Among the Haida of the Queen Charlotte Islands some souls are sent back to earth to be born again in human form, others enter the bodies of animals and fish. "Sometimes the soul enters the body of a fin-back whale, and consequently fin-back whales are much honoured and at the same time feared. On no account could an Indian a few years ago be persuaded to shoot one."² An old Jesuit Father reports of the Hurons on information from one of their chief men that many believe we have two souls, both divisible and material and yet both rational; one leaves the body at death, but remains in the cemetery until the Feast of the Dead, after which it is either changed into a turtle-dove, or according to the more general belief it goes immediately to the village of souls. The other soul remains with the corpse, never quitting it unless to be born again.³ The medicine-men and women of the Sioux, it was believed, might be changed after death into wild beasts.⁴ "In two of the buffalo gentes of the Omaha there is a belief that the spirits of deceased members of those gentes return to the buffaloes."⁵ The Southern Cheyenne hold the opossum to be a dead man.⁶

In South America the Abipones were reported by Dobrizhoffer as calling little ducks, which flew about

¹ Powers, 182; Knight, 109. The Caribs are stated to hold a similar doctrine; but see the question discussed, Müller, *Am. Urrel.* 207 sqq.

² *J. A. I.* xxi. 20.

³ *Jesuit Rel.* x. (1636), 286.

⁴ Bourke, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* ix. 479, quoting Schultze in *Smiths. Rep.* (1867).

⁵ J. O. Dorsey, *Ibid.* xi. 542.

⁶ H. L. Scott, *Amer. Anthr.* N.S. ix. 560.

in flocks at night uttering a mournful hiss, the shades of the dead.¹ The Isanna think that the souls of the brave enter beautiful birds and enjoy good fruits, but cowards become reptiles.² The common fate of a Bororó of Central Brazil, whether man or woman, is to become after death a red bird called *arara*. The red araras are Bororó; indeed the Bororó go further and say: "We are araras." Consequently they never eat araras; they only kill wild ones to obtain their feathers for personal ornament. They never kill the tame ones which they keep for the same purpose; but on the other hand when a tame bird dies they mourn for it. The dead of other peoples are believed to become other birds. The *baris*, or medicine-men, however change after their death into such animals as are reckoned the best game—certain kinds of large fish capivaras tapirs and caymans. When one of these is caught it has to be subjected to a process which is called by Dr. von den Steinen consecration (*einsegnung*), but which from his description is rather a desacralisation or driving-out of the bari-soul.³

Even from Europe, civilised and Christian as we are pleased to think it, the belief in transformation has by no means yet disappeared. Both in England and in Ireland butterflies or moths are looked upon as souls of deceased persons.⁴ In Cornwall, King Arthur was up to the latter years of the eighteenth century, if not later, thought to be still living in the form of a raven or a chough. In Nidderdale the country people say that nightjars embody the souls of

¹ Dobrizhoffer, ii. 270.

² *Int. Arch.* xiii. Suppl. 127.

³ von den Steinen, 511, 492.

⁴ *Choice Notes, Folklore*, 61; *N. and Q.* 5th ser. vii. 284.

unbaptized infants.¹ On certain parts of the east coast of England many of the old fishermen believe that they turn into gulls when they die. Writing on the subject a few years since Mr. P. H. Emerson remarks : " It was with great difficulty I first found out that this strange belief in a post-mortem transformation existed at all, but once having learned it, I found to my astonishment that the belief was common, but was spoken of with much reserve." Children, it seems become kittiwakes, but women " don't come back no more, they have seen trouble enough."² A story is told at Bradwell, in the Peak of Derbyshire, concerning a child who had been murdered and whose ghost could not be appeased. Recourse was had to a wise man. He pronounced the words : " In the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, why troublest thou me ? " and turned the ghost into a fish, which thenceforth haunted Lumley Pool and terrified people who came to draw water from the wells there on Christmas Day.³ In Poland about Dobromil it was believed that every member of the Herbut family changed after death into an eagle. In a Polish manuscript of the year 1526 it is stated that the first-born daughters of the mighty house of Pilecki, if they die unmarried, change into doves, or, if married, into nocturnal birds, and that to every member of their family they announce

¹ Swainson, 98, citing Macquoid, *About Yorkshire*. Numerous cases are on record in which on the occasion of a death a mysterious bird appears, flutters about and flies away, or disappears. The most commonly cited example is that of the Oxenham family recorded by Howell (see *Gent. Mag. Lib. Pop. Sup.* 212). These are perhaps traceable to the same belief.

² *F. L.* xiv. 64, quoting *English Idyls*, by P. H. Emerson (2nd ed. 1889).

³ Addy, *Househ. Tales*, 60.

his death by a bite.¹ In Burgundy the Baroness de Montfort wanders for her cruelties under the form of a she-wolf that nobody can kill.² These are a few specimens of a considerable body of European folklore representing the dead under animal form.

But if human beings can be changed by means of death and a fresh birth into brute and vegetable form, brutes and vegetables may equally be changed by the same process into human beings. As I have already pointed out at the commencement of this chapter a large cycle of *märchen* displays this power. In the light of the transmutations we have now passed in review it is abundantly clear that the fisherman's sons their horses dogs life-tokens and so forth are nothing more or less than the ancestor-fish in new moulds. Probably at one time this was explicitly stated in the tale. A Pawnee saga states that before the heroine's birth her father had killed a bear, and the bear's spirit had entered the child: this accounted for her mysterious ways.³ A story from the island of Saibai in Torres Straits reports that the hero got inside a certain small shell called *ui* found in mangrove swamps. It was gathered and swallowed by a woman, from whom the hero was quickly born again in consequence.⁴ Not very long ago an Efik and his wife were charged at Duke Town on the Calabar River with murdering their child. It appeared that the child was sickly from birth. Their story was that he crawled about long after he ought to have been able to

¹ Woycicki, 7 note.

² Sébillot, *F. L. France*, iv. 209. Other cases noted by the same author, *Paganisme*, 196.

³ Dorsey, *Pawnee Myth*. i. 346 (Story No. 91).

⁴ Haddon, v. *Rep. Torres Str. Exped.* 32.

walk and when his parents were lying down to sleep he used to lick them like a snake. So they consulted a witch-doctor, who told them that the child was in reality a water-serpent, and advised them to take him to the waterside and put him into the water when he would resume his natural shape. They determined to do so, and when they took him to the water there in their presence the boy changed himself into a serpent and rolled into the river.¹ Major Leonard who relates the incident argues, and doubtless with justice, for the entire good faith of the defendants, on the ground that the child was a boy and therefore of value to the family both on its human and spiritual sides, and that the explanation of his inability to walk and his habits given by the local diviner was in harmony with all the convictions and traditions of his parents, and contributed materially to their delusions. Parallel beliefs are found in British Columbia. The Kwakiutl and other peoples hold that twins were salmon before their birth and have the power to become salmon again;² and the Lillooet say that twins are grisly bears in human form, and that when a twin dies his soul goes back to the grisly bears and becomes one of them.³

In previous chapters we have examined tales in which men and women deceased have reappeared as human babes without undergoing any intermediate change into lower forms; and we have others yet to examine. What is expressly affirmed where pregnancy is caused by tasting the ashes of a corpse, what is implicit in the disgusting superstitions that lead women to swallow portions of dead human bodies or to bathe

¹ Leonard, 194.

² Boas, *Ind. Sag.* 209, 219, 174.

³ Teit, *Jesup Exped.* ii. 263.

in human blood, must also be understood in the parallel cases where fishes and fruit are eaten and result in the production of children. Here then we have the real meaning of many of the tales and superstitions we have been considering. At their root lies the belief in Transformation. Flowers fruit and other vegetables eggs fishes spiders worms and even stones are all capable of becoming human beings. They only await absorption in the shape of food or in some other appropriate manner into the body of a woman to enable the metamorphosis to be accomplished. It would be going too far to attribute this meaning to every story of supernatural birth and to all the practices detailed in the last chapter. Where drugs and other compounds are used, where water or a sunbeam is the fructifying power, credit for the birth is given to a vague divine or magical virtue. It matters little, however, whether such a belief was or was not primary. Enough evidence remains that the belief in Transformation was equally original. It is intimately bound up with the savage theory of the universe. In that theory no strict line of cleavage runs across Nature. All things may change their shape, some at will (for they are all endowed with personality and will), others on the fulfilment of certain conditions, whereof death as applying to all animal and vegetable life is perhaps the most usual. Our farther illustrations of the doctrine of Transformation are intended to emphasise the widespread distribution in the lower culture of the belief that dead men and women may reappear in human form and live a new human life. The dead are not lost: they have only departed for awhile, to come back by means of birth

or in some other way to human society. In *The Golden Bough* Dr. Frazer has admirably expounded certain aspects of this belief. These I shall for the most part avoid, desiring to concentrate attention upon the general belief rather than upon particular applications of it. And if to some extent I travel over the ground occupied a generation since by Professor Tylor in the second volume of his great work on *Primitive Culture*, it will be to explore certain territory beyond, into which his argument did not require him to penetrate.

Buddhism as popularly understood in the East is founded on the doctrine of Transmigration. Not that this was the teaching of the great Sakyamuni, but the common people of India, the tribes of Tibet and the practical Chinese, it is safe to say, never assimilated the subtle doctrines of Karma and the Skandhas. It is indeed more than doubtful whether these philosophical speculations have penetrated the intellects of even the greatest doctors of the Northern Church. The current belief is that at death the soul transmigrates and is born again in some other body. Whether that body will be desirable or not depends on the actions in the present life. At death a man's good and bad actions are weighed against each other. If the good preponderate he rises in the scale of being, if the bad he sinks. An adaptation of this doctrine is exemplified in the successive incarnations that provide a perpetual succession of Grand Lamas at Lhasa and of skooshoks for minor monasteries. In these cases the soul is believed always to flit into some unknown infant who is about to be born. While as to the Southern Church we are not dependent for our

assumption upon the folklore and the general culture of the Cingalese and the peoples of Further India. In the Játakas, or parables attributed to Gautama, we have irrefragable witness of the teaching current from an early period of Buddhist history. They are apologues, most of them probably of much older date, which have acquired sacredness by being-fitted to alleged events in the ministry of the Buddha. The master is represented as taking occasion from some remark made by his disciples upon a passing occurrence to declare that in a former birth the same things had happened to them; and in proof of his assertion he tells the tale. The following may stand for a typical conclusion or application. It is that of the cruel crane outwitted by the crab: "When the Teacher had finished this discourse showing that 'Not now only, O mendicants, has this man been outwitted by the country robe-maker, long ago he was outwitted in the same way,' he established the connection and summed up the Játaka by saying, 'At that time he [the crane] was the Jetavana robe-maker, the crab was the country robe-maker, but the Genius of the Tree was I myself.'"¹ To the personages of the tale is thus ascribed complete identity with the Buddha and his contemporaries. Transmigration, in short, as conceived in popular Buddhism, was no product of the subtleties of Hindu metaphysics. It was no refined philosophical doctrine. It is undiscoverable in the *Rig-Veda*, the earliest sacred book of the Sanskrit-speaking settlers in the valleys of the Indus and the Ganges. Its ethical value even, if we may judge from the Játakas, was of the

¹ *Játaka*, i. 95 (No. 38); Rhys Davids, *Buddhist Birth Stories*, 315.

smallest. Such as it was, Transmigration was a direct evolution of the more savage belief in Transformation, as we have seen that belief exemplified in the present chapter.

Far in the west the Celts are reported to have held the dogma of Transmigration of Souls. This report, coming to us from writers imbued with Greco-Roman philosophy, who interpreted according to the wont of classical antiquity the religions of barbarous races in the terms of their own, has been understood to imply an elaborate philosophical system such as those of Pythagoras and Buddha. Indeed more than one of the writers in question expressly identifies the teaching of the Druids about the soul with that of Pythagoras. That the Celts had imbibed Buddhist theories we cannot suppose. The doctrines of the Samian philosopher may have penetrated into Gaul by commercial routes or by contact with Greek colonies. But no classical author ventures to ascribe such an origin to the Druidic teaching. On the contrary, it is derived by Cæsar from Britain, where it was furthest removed from foreign influences. Our direct information concerning Druidism supplied from classical sources is of the most meagre and fragmentary description. Supplemented by modern archæological investigation of prehistoric burial mounds, it leads to the conclusion that the religion of the ancient Britons and Gauls was of the same general character as other barbarous cults. The belief in Transmigration was held concurrently with the belief in another world, a world of the dead where debts incurred in this world were paid and where those who sacrificed themselves on the funeral piles of their relatives lived with them just as they had

lived with them in this world. The arms and the wealth which were buried or burned with the deceased chieftain, the slaves and retainers who were offered at his obsequies constituted his splendour and contributed to his power in the next world. Arising thus from the common ground of savagery, no more inconsistency would have been perceived in these two beliefs than the Zulu perceives who holds that his deceased father lives underground in a village, like that which he inhabited in his lifetime, wealthy in cattle and wives, yet that he may be the snake that lurks about the kraal or comes to visit his descendants in their huts. Neither Celtic mythology nor Celtic folklore, as reported by mediæval and modern writers, warrants us in supposing that metempsychosis in any philosophical sense was part of the ancient Celtic creed.¹

Before turning to rites and superstitious beliefs, we may notice the legend of Oankoitupeh, son of the Red Cloud, the hero of the North American Maidu. A maiden sees a beautiful red cloud and hears sweet music. The next day while picking grass-seed pinole she finds an arrow trimmed with yellow-hammer feathers; and suddenly a man is standing beside her, who is none other than the red cloud she had seen the day before. The resplendent stranger declares his love, and the maiden replies: "If you love me, take

¹ I have no space to discuss the question at length. The literary evidence as to the Celtic belief in the life after death has been examined in recent years by several writers, most fully and conclusively by Mr. Alfred Nutt in *The Voyage of Bran* (2 vols. London, 1895-7). The archæological evidence is scattered through the transactions of numerous learned societies in the United Kingdom and France.

and eat this basket of grass-seed pinole." He touches the basket and its contents vanish. Thereupon the girl swoons. When she returns to consciousness, behold! she has already given birth to a son. The Red Cloud tells her: "You love me now; that is my boy, but he is not of this world. . . . He shall be greater than all men; he shall have power over all, and not fear any that live. Therefore shall his name be Oan-koi-tu-peh (the Invincible). Whenever you see him, think of me. This boy has no life apart from me; he is myself."¹ Compare with this the statement concerning Cuchulainn, one of the mythological heroes of Ireland, and himself a new birth of the god Lug. The great epic cycles took final shape after the wars with the Danes in the eleventh century. A manuscript of that period relates that the men of Ulster took counsel about Cuchulainn, because they were troubled and afraid he would perish early, "so for that reason they wished to give him a wife that he might leave an heir, for they knew that his re-birth would be of himself."²

These passages, though related of more than common men, point to a belief shared by the ancient Irish with the Maidu of California that the son is in some sense identical with his father—a new birth, a new manifestation of the same person. This curious belief, implicit throughout the laws and philosophy of the Indian Aryans, finds categorical expression in the great Brahman compilation known as the *Laws of*

¹ Powers, *Tribes of California, Contrib. N. Amer. Ethn.* iii. 299. The Haida tell of a mythological hero whom they identify with the moon, that he married a woman "from whom he was presently re-born in the form of a woman" (Swanton, *Jesup Exped.* v. 204).

² Kuno Meyer, *The Wooing of Emer, Arch. Rev.* i. 70.

Manu. There we are told: "The husband, after conception by his wife, becomes an embryo and is born again of her."¹ Corresponding with this declaration the ritual prescribes, among other ceremonies when a boy is born, that the husband should address the babe thus: "From limb by limb thou art produced; and of the heart thou art born. Thou art indeed the self (*atman*) called son; so live a hundred autumns." In the same words he addresses the boy every time he himself returns from a journey, embracing his head and kissing him thrice.²

There is reason to think that this doctrine was held by the ancient Egyptians, as applicable at all events to the gods, and if to gods then probably in earlier times to human beings. Each temple was dedicated to a single god, but he usually had companion deities who formed with him a cycle. This cycle was in most cases composed of father mother and son. "The son was the counterpart of the father, and destined to replace him when he should grow old and die, according to that law of nature to which even the gods were subject. Thus the son became the father, and the Egyptian texts could speak of the gods as

¹ *Sacred Books*, xxv. 329; cf. 352. Cf. also *Sacred Books*, xii. 334; passages from the *Aitareya Brāhmana* cited by von Negelein, *Arch. Religionsw.* vi. 320; and the remarks by Mr. Justice Markby in reference to modern Hindu lawyers, quoted Hearne, 165 note.

² *Grihya-Sūtra* of Hiranyakesin, *Sacred Books*, xxx. 211; *G.-S.* of Asvalāyana, *Ibid.* xxix. 183. To this theory may perhaps be traced the idea that a first-born son is peculiarly dangerous to his father's life. A tradition concerning the rajahs of Bashahr in the Panjāb relates that for sixty-one generations each rajah had only one son, "and it used to be the custom for the boy to be sent away to a village and not be seen by his father until his hair was cut for the first time," which was done with solemn rites in his sixth year (Rose, *Census of Ind.* 1901, xvii. 141).

eternal; for so soon as the elder god vanished he would be succeeded by a divine personality precisely similar. In this sense also the god was self-begotten, being father to the son who was as himself; and he was 'the husband of his mother,' in that after the death of his father he had entered upon all rights as regards the goddess of the triad, and was in his turn by her the father of the new divine son who should one day replace him."¹ An illustration of this belief is found in the *Book of the Dead*, where allusion is made to a period "when Horus came to light in his own children."² In south-eastern Australia, among the Kulin tribe the line of descent runs through males. So far have the natives got on the road from mother-right (in which descent is traced exclusively through females) that they regard the woman as little more than the nurse of the child. Mr. Howitt even records the exclamation of an old man to his son, with whom he was vexed: "Listen to me! I am here, and there you stand with my body."³ It would hardly be fair

¹ Wiedemann, 103.

² *Book of the Dead*, c. 112, translated by Le Page Renouf, in *Proc. Soc. Bibl. Arch.* xvii. 8.

³ Howitt, 255; *J. A. I.* xiv. 145. Among the Dieri a man speaking calls his son or his brother's son *Athamurani*, a word interpreted by Mr. Howitt as meaning a revival of myself (*Ato*, I, *mura*, new). Here it is to be observed that the Dieri still trace descent through the mother only, and the interpretation is merely a philological conjecture which wants confirmation (*Curr*, i. 124 note). Coming nearer home it would seem that the ancient Scandinavians held the opinion that the son was in some sense a reincarnation of the soul of the father. They appear to have thought that a man possessed more than one soul. A family soul (*ættarfylgja*) is spoken of in opposition to the individual soul (*manusfylgja*). It is the *ættarfylgja* which passes from a man to be reincarnated in his son. Strictly speaking, we are told, it is not an undivided collective

to build upon a solitary phrase of a single man the affirmation that the Kulin tribe had reached the creed implied in the Hindu ceremony ; but, as we shall see hereafter, some at any rate of the Australian peoples were familiar with the theory that children were new manifestations of the dead.

Traces of the notion that a child is neither more nor less than the reappearance of an ancestor are found almost all over the world. It seems to be a general opinion among the Negroes of the western coast of Africa that the ghostly self of a dead man enters the body of a new-born babe belonging to the same family. In Guinea, as well as among the Wanika, a Bantu tribe of the eastern side of the continent, the resemblance, physical or mental, borne by a child to its father is attributed to this cause. The Yorubas inquire of their family god which of the deceased ancestors has returned, in order to name the child accordingly ; and they greet its birth with the words "Thou art come !" as if addressing some one who has returned.¹ Some hold that the soul of a dead person comes back in the next-born child ; while others think it necessary to ascertain by divination who it is. Miss Kingsley has given an amusing account of the divination, which

soul common to the members of a single family ; it is rather a "support" for the patronymic which is transmitted from father to son (*Rev. Hist. Rel.* xlix. 374, citing and reviewing Chantepie de la Saussaye, *Religion of the Teutons*, translated by Vos). Compare a speculation by Mr. A. B. Cook, as to the reincarnation of the *manes* of the old Italian clans (*F. L.* xvi. 293).

¹ Tylor, *Prim. Cul.* ii. 4, citing several authorities ; Ploss, *Kind*, i. 259, citing Bastian. Ellis (*Yoruba*, 128) says the inquiry is made of a priest of Ifa, the god of divination. See also Dennett, *Black Man's Mind*, 268, quoting *Yoruba Heathenism*, by Bishop James Johnson.

resembles that used to identify the new Dalai Lama and consists in placing before the child various articles belonging to deceased members of the family who are still absent, in order to see which of them he will appear to claim.¹ In the French Soudan the Mossi and Gourounsi are convinced that the souls of the dead go to certain villages—actual earthly villages—where they seem to live in the same condition as before death. After awhile they become *Kinkirse* (pl. of *Kinkiriga*, an indefinable being, material, somewhat evil-disposed and of variable power) and inhabit the bush that surrounds the villages, hiding in the thickets. Such thickets are therefore respected, from fear that their suppression would entail sterility on the part of the women. For these *Kinkirse* are potential human beings. When a birth takes place it is one of them that returns to life; and the newborn child is always considered a *Kinkiriga*.² The Malinkes say that when a married man dies, if any of his wives be pregnant the soul of the deceased husband passes into the child in the womb and remains there until a name has been given to the child. The name given is always that of the deceased husband. If the child prove to be a daughter the feminine form of the name is taken.³ On the Gold Coast parents who have lost several children sometimes cast into the bush the body of the infant who last died. They believe the next-born to be the same child returned; and if it have any congenital deformity or defect, that is attributed

¹ Winwoode Reade, 539; Kingsley, *Trav.* 493; *W. A. Studies*, 145. Another form of divination is mentioned as used by the Bulloms and Timmanees, Winterbottom, i. 227.

² E. Ruelle, *L'Anthrop.* xv. 687.

³ Father Brun, *Anthropos.* ii. 727.

to injuries received from wild beasts or other evil influences in the jungle.¹ Among the Ewhe of Togoland, if a newborn child show a likeness to any of his dead brethren or relations, he is named Dogba or Degboe, meaning "the returner."² Among some of the Ewhe it is sufficient for a priest to certify which of the deceased members of the family has returned.³ The opinion that a subsequently born child was a previously deceased child who had returned was current among the people of Old Calabar;⁴ and the Ibani, when a first-born son dies and a second is afterwards born, call him Di-ibo, or born again.⁵ Nor is the belief, with which we are now concerned confined to the Negroes proper. It is found among the Bantu of West Africa, though some of the latter appear to hold the possibility of re-birth either into the family of the deceased "or into any other family, or even into a beast."⁶

Among many of the Negroes and Bantu of West Africa, however, a human soul is believed to be not a unity but composite. The Tshi-speaking peoples of the Gold Coast and the Ewhe-speaking tribes of the Slave Coast draw a distinction between the ghostly self that continues a man's existence after death in the spirit-world, and his *kra* or *ñoli*, which is capable of being born again in a new human body. In the

¹ Burton, *Wanderings*, ii. 174. Cf. a Winnebago tale, *Journ. Am. F. L.* ix. 52.

² *Globus*, lxxix. 350; *Arch. Religionsw.* viii. 110.

³ *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxxviii. 42.

⁴ Burton, *Wit and Wisd.* 376.

⁵ Leonard, 549. As to the general belief in Southern Nigeria that a deceased person is born again into the same family, see *Ibid.* 141, 150, 207. ⁶ Featherman, *Nigritians*, 447; Nassau, 237.

eastern Ewhe districts and in Dahome the soul is indeed, by either an inconsistency or a subtlety, believed to remain in the land of the dead and to animate some new child of the family at one and the same time; but it never animates an embryo in a strange family.¹ This is attributed by Sir A. B. Ellis to contact with the Yoruba who do not hold the doctrine of the multiple soul. Among them, "as the births at least equal in number the deaths, and the process of being re-born is supposed to have gone on 'from the beginning,' logically there ought to be few, if any, departed souls in Deadland; but the natives do not critically examine such questions as this, and they imagine Deadland to be thickly populated, and at the same time every newborn child, or almost every one, to be a re-born ghost."² But other tribes hold that a human being possesses as many as four souls. These are differently enumerated by different authorities, possibly speaking of different peoples, but perhaps trying to interpret the vagueness and reconcile the inconsistencies natural to men in the lower culture who have not thought out the perplexing problems of psychology awakened by their experiences and their

¹ Ellis, *Tshi*, 149; *Ewe*, 114; Burton, *Gelele*, ii. 158; *Wanderings*, ii. 173; Seidel, *Globus*, lxxii. 21; Westermann, *Arch. Religionsw.* viii. 110.

² Ellis, *Ewe*, l.c.; *Yoruba*, 129. The Bahuana, a Bantu tribe on one of the tributaries of the Congo, speak of a soul called *bun* and a double called *doshi*. The former (which is only possessed by adults), if the deceased had been properly provided with fetishes, enters the body of some large animal, such as an elephant hippopotamus buffalo or leopard, and an animal so possessed is recognised by its ferocity. The *doshi* remains to visit its friends, haunt its enemies and to persecute its relatives if the body have not received a proper funeral (Torday and Joyce, *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 290).

slowly advancing civilisation.¹ We need not discuss the question at length, for it is clear that among these souls there is one which is destined to reincorporation in some member of the family. It is called by the Tshi *kra*, and by the Ewhe during lifetime *luwbo* and while awaiting reincorporation *ñoli*. It has been compared to the guardian spirit-familiar to ecclesiastical speculation in Europe; and in some aspects it resembles it, being treated with reverence and often even with a kind of worship.²

This division of the soul into various entities has been held by numerous and very widely sundered peoples. We have already seen reason to believe that the ancient Egyptians were not strangers to the belief in Transformation by death. Their official doctrine, however, taught that man was a compound being, consisting of the body (*kha*), the double (*ka*), the name (*ren*), the heart (*ab*), the soul (*ba*), the self (*sâhû*), the shadow (*khaiḥ*), the Shining One (*khû*), the power (*sekhem*), the Osiris, and other parts. Of these the *ka* the *sâhû* and the Osiris are practically indistinguishable; and we are told that "it would seem that in these cases we have to do with the different conceptions of an immortal soul which had arisen in separate places and prehistoric times, and were ultimately combined into one doctrine, the Egyptians not daring to set any aside for fear it should prove to be the true one."³ None of these was immaterial; and which of them it was that reappeared in human or brute form we need not now decide.

¹ Kingsley, *W. A. Studies*, 200; Nassau, 53, 64.

² Ellis, *Ewe*, 102; *Tshi*, 149; Nassau, 55.

³ Wiedemann, 234 *sqq.*

It would draw us too far away from our present subject to consider the speculations of mankind on the multiplicity of the human soul. Suffice it to say that such speculations have been recorded of nations in almost every part of the globe. They may be traced with probability to the conflict of opinion inevitably arising when men who have fled from their dead friends, or comfortably deposited them in substantial graves with all precautions against their return, continue to be haunted by them in dreams or in the phenomena of "possession," or trace their lineaments in the corporeal form and mental characteristics of their descendants. The earliest efforts to solve the riddle of another life were necessarily crude materialistic and limited by the experiences of this life. As those experiences gradually widened and higher planes of civilisation were painfully won, fresh aspects of the problem presented themselves, different solutions of the riddle were reached. When these came into contact more or less conscious attempts to synthesise them would be made. The fresh contradictions that resulted, as soon as they emerged into consciousness (often a very long process), had to be reconciled as best they could. One of these appears to be preserved in the Egyptian doctrine, as indicated by Professor Wiedemann in the sentence just quoted. The West African Negroes and other peoples in a lower stage of culture than that of the Egyptian official classes, travelling in a similar direction to find the key to the puzzle, have arrived at a similar but far less complex scheme. Indeed in Egypt itself there seems to have lain beneath the official doctrine a more primitive folk-belief differing as much from that

recorded in the monuments as the folk-belief of modern Europe differs from the creed of Christian theologians concerning the soul. The current Egyptian belief, if correctly reported by Herodotus, was in his time that at death of the body "the soul enters into another creature which chances then to be coming to the birth, and when it has gone the round of all the creatures of land and sea and of the air, it enters again into a human body as it comes to the birth, and that it makes this round in a period of three thousand years."¹ This belief excited the historian's scorn. It is very different from the official Osirian doctrine, and has evidently been elaborated from that exhibited in the story of the Two Brothers. We have already seen that a belief equally wide of the official doctrine certainly existed with regard to the gods, according to which they were born, like Lug, of themselves. It is safe to think that what was predicated of the gods, was in earlier ages by all classes, and probably by the backward classes down to the very end of Egyptian paganism, held concerning human beings, though it may have been held concurrently with other solutions of the problem.

We may therefore proceed with our investigation of the belief in the reappearance of a deceased ancestor in the person of a child without concerning ourselves with the subtle divisions of the soul, which we have previously met and shall again meet with in the course of the inquiry. Turning next to the aboriginal tribes of India, we find among the Khonds of Orissa the same belief. Anthropologists have often quoted Macpherson's description of the divination for determining

¹ Herod, ii. 123. I quote Macaulay's translation.

a child's name. The priest drops grains of rice into a cup of water, naming with each grain a deceased ancestor. From the movements of the seed in the fluid and from observations made on the infant's person, he pronounces which³ of the progenitors has reappeared in it; and the babe is usually named accordingly. Khond psychology endows every one with four souls. Out of such a company there is no difficulty in arranging that one of them shall be attached to some tribe and perpetually born again into it. This in fact is what is believed to happen.¹ The Kols, a Dravidian people² found in considerable numbers along the Vindhya-Kaimûr plateau, also practise this divination; and the child is generally named after some deceased ancestor, who has thus returned from the region of the dead.²

Among the Korwa, a³ Dravidian tribe inhabiting the part of Mirzapur south of the river Son and along the frontier of Sarguja, "the child is named by the father or grandfather, and is generally called after some deceased ancestor, who is understood from a dream to be re-born in the baby."³ The Bhuiyárs say that the dead man's soul is first judged by Paramesar. If he be pronounced good, he is born again as a boy or girl in the same family. Similar beliefs are held by the Kharwárs and Pankas.⁴ The Patáris hold that the

¹ Macpherson, *Memorials*, 72, 92, 134.

² Crooke, *Tribes and Castes*, iii. 308; Hahn, *Kolsmission*, 72, 105. According to Dalton the Kols of Bengal perform a similar ceremony without the same belief (Dalton, 295). But the belief as to the origin of the ceremony must be inferred. See below (p. 207) as to the Kafirs of the Hindu-Kush.

³ Crooke, *op. cit.* 330.

⁴ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* i. 70 (par. 482).

souls of the departed are embodied in certain animals. If after a death a calf is born and refuses to drink milk, it is often declared to represent the spirit of the deceased. In the same way, when a baby refuses to suck a ceremony is performed. "The mother sits down and the father names each of his departed ancestors—father mother grandfather, and so on. At whichever name the baby takes the breast, that ancestor is supposed to have been re-born in the family, and the child is henceforth treated with special care. The Ghasiyas similarly believe that deceased ancestors are from time to time re-born in the family."¹ Among the Kafirs of the Hindu-Kush "the instant an infant is born it is given to the mother to suckle, while an old woman runs rapidly over the names of the baby's ancestors or ancestresses, as the case may be, and stops the instant the infant begins to feed. The name on the reciter's lips when that event occurs becomes the name by which the child will thenceforth be known during its life." The analogy of other cases leads to the conclusion that here too the ancestor must be thought to be born again. Sir George Robertson who reports the custom indeed adds that as a consequence, it not unfrequently happens that "several members of a family are compelled to bear the same name," and are "distinguished from one another in conversation by the prefix senior or junior, as the case may be."² This of course may happen also among peoples who, we are definitely informed, practise similar divination in order to ascertain what ancestor has returned. How their philosophy settles the question of identity when such duplication occurs we

¹ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* 129 (par. 817). ² Robertson, *Kafirs*, 596.

are not told. By the same belief Mr. Crooke explains one of the marriage rites of the Deshashth Brahmans of Dharwâr. "Among them," he says, "the couple first walk thrice round the sacred fire. A stone called the *Āshmâ*, or spirit stone, that which is used at the funeral rites of the tribe, and into which . . . the spirit of the dead man is supposed to enter, is kept near the fire, and at each circuit, as the bride followed by the bridegroom approaches this stone, she stands on it till the priest finishes reciting a hymn. Here it seems clear that the idea underlying the rite is that the spirit of one of the tribal or family ancestors occupying the stone becomes reincarnated in her, and so she becomes 'a joyful mother of children.' For it must be remembered that according to Indian popular belief all conception is . . . the result of a process of this kind, one of the ancestors becoming reborn in each successive generation."¹

In the foregoing examples it appears that any ancestor may return. It will be remembered that the *Laws of Manu* specifically taught that the husband was born again of his wife. Mr. Rose points out that as a consequence of this the father was supposed to die and in certain sections of the Khatris of the Panjáb (for instance, the Kochhar) his funeral rites are actually performed in the fifth month of the mother's pregnancy. He adds: "Probably herein lies an explanation of the *dev-kāj*, or divine nuptials, a ceremony which consists in the formal remarriage of the parents after the birth of their first son. The wife leaves her husband's house, and goes not to her parents' house but to the house of a relative, whence

¹ *F. L.* xiii. 236.

she is brought back as a bride. This custom prevails among the Khanna, Kapur, Malhotra, Kakar and Chopra, the highest sections of the Khatris. These ideas are an almost logical outcome of the doctrine of the metempsychosis, and it as inevitably results that if the first-born be a girl, she is peculiarly ill-omened, so that among the Khatris of Multan she used to be put to death."¹

I cited some pages back a custom of the Gold Coast, from which it appears that children dying young are apt to return to their parents in the next pregnancy. The phenomenon appears also in India. In Bengal, if "a woman give birth to several stillborn children in succession, the popular belief is that the same child reappears on each occasion. So, to frustrate the designs of the evil spirit that has taken possession of the child, the nose or a portion of the ear is cut off and the body is cast on a dunghill."² In the Panjáb, Hindu women who lose a female child during infancy, or while it still sucks milk, take it into the jungle and put it in a sitting position under a tree. Sugar is put into its mouth and a corded roll of cotton between its fingers. Then the mother says in Panjábí :

Eat the sugar ; spin the cotton ;
Don't come back, but send a brother.

If on the following day it be found that the dogs or

¹ *Census of India*, 1901, xvii. 215. So the Bakaíri of Brazil are said to call a child, whether boy or girl, "little father," as though a new birth of the father ; and among the Tupí the father after the birth of each new son took a new name. The Bakaíri reckon kinship through the mother ; but there are indications of transition to reckoning through the father (von den Steinen, 337).

² Crooke, *F. L. N. Ind.* ii. 67.

jackals have dragged the body towards the mother's house, she considers it a bad omen, saying: "Ah! she is coming back—that means another girl." But if it be dragged away from the home, she is glad, saying: "The brother will come."¹ Among the Andaman Islanders every child conceived has had a prior existence; and "if a woman who has lost a baby be about to become a mother, the name borne by the deceased is bestowed on the foetus in the expectation that it will prove to be the same child again. Should the infant at birth prove to be of the same sex as the one who had died, the identity would be considered sufficiently established."²

The belief with which we are now concerned is common in China, and stories are found in the literature of that country, of children who have remembered and related incidents of their previous life; and on inquiry made the truth of their statements is said to have been proved. "A dissolute son squandering the possessions of his family and disgracing it by a licentious and criminal life is often taken for a man who, being wronged by the father or by some ancestor, had himself re-born as that son, thus to have his cruel vengeance. Conversely, an excellent child, which is the glory of its family, generally passes for a reincarnation of some grateful spirit." A tale is told of a father who, while engaged in drowning a second unwelcome little daughter, heard a voice from the water-tub exclaim: "This is the second time you drown me; but now it is my turn to destroy both you and your sons." In a

¹ Mrs. Steel, *Panjab N. and Q.* i. 51.

² Sir R. C. Temple, *Census of Ind.* 1901, iii. 63; E. H. Man, *J. A. I.* xii. 155.

short time he died from anguish, and within a month his two sons were killed by a catastrophe.¹

The Chinese often think that a child who falls ill and dies is a hateful demon which has come to torment the mother. Precautions must therefore be taken against its return. For fear it may be re-born of her she sometimes blackens the face of the dying or just dead child, that it may not be able to find its way back. Or a hand or merely a finger is cut off, apparently in the belief that should it succeed in being re-born, it would be recognised.² The Ainu say that people are sometimes re-born into this world. Women "should therefore carefully examine a baby's ears as soon as it is born, to see whether they have been bored. If they have, it is a certain sign that a departed ancestor has come back, and if this be the case, he has returned for some very good reason." It would seem that he has some message from the other world.³ Among the Chukchi the new-born child is believed to be some ancestor come back to earth. Its name is found by divining with an object such as a divining-stone, or some part of the mother's or child's dress such as a boot or cap, held suspended by the mother while she pronounces in turn the names of all deceased relatives and says after each one: "This has come." When the suspended object begins to swing the name is selected. The idea of the return of the dead is so strong in the Chukchi mind that half of the proper names have relation to it. Children are called by such

¹ De Groot, iv. 143, 452, 459.

² Miss Mary Lattimore, of Soochow, in *Records of Women's Conference on the Home Life of Chinese Women*, Shanghai, 1900, 9.

³ Batchelor, *Ainu F. L.* 237.

names as Returned, The-former-one-rising, Rising-on-the-field, and so forth.¹ The Koryak hold that the souls of the dead go to the house of The-One-on-High. He hangs them up there on posts and beams. When the time comes for a soul to be born once more he sends it for that purpose to a relative of the deceased. As soon as the child is born the father divines what relative has returned, using a divining-stone much in the way it is used by the Chukchi. Sometimes the divination is by means of the child himself. The names of dead relatives are enumerated. When the child cries the name is not the right one; when he stops crying or begins to smile his identity is ascertained. As soon as the name is given the father carries the child out to his people and says: "A relative has come." Mr. Jochelson relates that during his stay in the village of Kamenskoye a child was named after its mother's father. The husband lifted his child and said to the mother: "Here, thy father has come."² In Assam the Mikirs give to children born after the death of relatives the names of the deceased and say that the dead have come back; "but they believe that the spirit is with Jòm [the Lord of Spirits, in the abode of the dead] all the same." The solution of this apparent contradiction seems to be that the dead go for awhile to "Jòm Recho's city," but that they return to be born again; and this goes on indefinitely.³

In New Zealand the priest, after certain ceremonies, first recited to the child the following stave:

¹ Bogoras, *Jesup Exped.* vii. 512; *Am. Anthr.* N. S. iv. 635.

² Jochelson, *Jesup Exped.* vi. 26, 100; cf. 203, 237, 274.

³ Stack, 29.

Wait till I pronounce your name.

What is your name ?

Listen to your name,

This is your name—

Then followed strings of ancestral names, until the babe sneezed. The name being uttered at the moment of the sneeze was the one chosen.¹ We are not expressly told that the object of this rite was to identify the child with one of his forefathers ; but it can hardly be doubted. It was difficult, if, indeed, we may not use a stronger expression, to distinguish between ancestors and gods among the Maori. The worship of the kindred inhabitants of Samoa was, there can be little doubt, of a similar character. During the mother's labour, first the household god of the father's family and then that of the mother's family was invoked. The god being invoked at the instant of birth was looked upon as the child's special *aitu* (Maori, *atua*) or god ; and its incarnation was "duly acknowledged throughout the future life of the child." During infancy the child was called and actually named "*merda* of Tongo," or "of Satiā," or whatever other divinity it might be, though later in life a special name was given. "Occasionally a chief bore the name of one of the gods superior."² In the island of Aurora, New Hebrides, where the people are Melanesians, women often speak of a child as the *nunu*, or echo, of some dead person. Dr. Codrington says : "It is not a notion of metempsychosis, as if the soul of the dead person returned in the new-born child ; but it is thought that there is so close a connection that the infant takes the place of the deceased."³

¹ Taylor, 184.

² Turner, *Samoa*, 17, 78, 81.

³ *J. A. I.* xviii. 311.

We may set this explanation beside the statement quoted by Dr. Tylor from Charlevoix that "some North-American Indians were observed to set the child in place of the last owner of its name, so that a man would treat as his grandfather a child who might have been his grandson."¹ It may also be compared with the belief of the Eskimo. Dr. Tylor cites from Crantz the assertion that a helpless widow would seek to persuade some father that the soul of a dead child of his had passed into a living child of hers, or *vice versâ*, thus gaining to herself a new relative and protector. Dr. Rink on the other hand considers that the deceased person whose name a child bore was only looked upon as a kind of guardian spirit. His statement, however, that the child when grown up was bound to brave the influences that caused his namesake's death—for instance, if the namesake had perished at sea, his successor had all the greater inducement to become a skilful kayaker—points to more than this; while numerous stories in Rink's collection indicate nothing less than identity; nay, one of them at least definitely asserts it.² Like Crantz,

¹ Tylor, *Prim. Cul.* ii. 4.

² Tylor, *Prim. Cul.* ii. 3; Crantz, i. 200 (*cf.* 161); Rink, 44, 54, 64, 434, 450. Compare the belief of the Baganda. Speaking of the custom of naming a child Mr. Roscoe says: "With royalty the name of the great-grandfather is given to the eldest son; peasants do not follow this custom, but take the name of some renowned relative. The spirit of the deceased relative enters the child and assists him through life" (*J. A. I.* xxxii. 32). Among the Awemba the diviner after consulting the lots gives a new-born child "the name of some dead chief, declaring that the spirit will look after his namesake" (J. H. W. Sheane, *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 155). Comparison of such cases as these enables us to surmise the stages through which the belief in the identity of the child with the deceased has decayed. Compare the Roman Catholic custom cited in a note, *infra*, p. 223.

Dr. Rink writes of the Eskimo of Greenland. The stories of those of Baffin Land witness to the same belief. "There is one tradition in which it is told how the soul of a woman passed through the bodies of a great many animals, until finally it was born again as an infant." Dr. Boas, however, who records this and other tales, states that the Eskimo in question believe that a man has two souls, of which at death one goes to "one of the lands of the souls;" the other stays with the body, and when a child is named after the deceased enters its body and remains there about four months. "It is said that the soul enters the body because it is in want of a drink." This seems inconsistent with what follows: "It is believed that its presence strengthens the child's soul, which is very light, and apt to escape from the body. After leaving the body of the infant, the soul of the departed stays near by, that it may re-enter the infant in case of need."¹

The practice of naming a child after a deceased person obtains also among the Eskimo of Bering Strait; but here it appears in a connection entirely different. "The first child born in a village after a person dies is given the dead one's name, and must represent that person in subsequent festivals which are given in his honour. This is the case if a child is born in the village between the time of the death and the next festival to the dead. If there be no child born, then one of the persons who helped [to] prepare the grave-box for the deceased is given his name and abandons his own for the purpose. When the festival

¹ *Bull. Am. Mus. Nat. Hist.* xv. 132, 130. As to the Eskimo of Davis Strait, see Boas, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* vi. 612. The practice of naming seems the same, but no reason is assigned.

to the dead is given in which the relatives of the dead person wish to make offerings to the shade, the latter is invited to attend by means of songs of invitation and by putting up sticks with the totem-marks of the deceased upon them." The shade is supposed to obey the summons. In company with other shades in the fire-pit under the floor of the *kashim*, or assembly-house, "it receives the offerings of food water and clothing that are cast on the floor. Then is rendered the song that announces the presence of the namesake, at which the shade enters the form of that person. The feast-giver then removes the new suit of clothing he wears for the purpose and places it upon the namesake, and in doing this the shade becomes newly clothed; the food-offerings given to the namesake during this festival are in the same way believed to be really given to the dead. When this ceremony is finished the shade is dismissed back to the land of the dead."¹

A comparison of these customs and beliefs suggests that the interpretation reported to us from Greenland and Baffin's Bay, and the rites observed by the Eskimo of Bering Strait are alike of more recent origin than the practice of naming children after the dead which is common to all Eskimo. The Eskimo of Bering Strait are in direct contact with the Athapascans and other

¹ Nelson, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xviii. 289, 424. For further details see *Ibid.* 364, 365, 371, 377. So far is the identification of the living representative with the deceased carried that during the Doll Festival "the namesakes of men dead are paired with namesakes of their deceased wives without regard to age, and during this period the men or the boys bring their temporary partners firewood, and the latter prepare food for them, thus symbolising the former union of the dead" (*Ibid.* 379). This is surely much more than symbolism.

American Indian peoples. Their culture in various ways shows traces of this contact. It is possible (but this is no more than a conjecture) that among them the representation of the dead at the festival by a living person is derived from analogous customs of some of their neighbours. Such customs are at all events practised by many of the North American tribes. That the union of the deceased with his representative is permanent is clear. The name is retained until old age, when it is sometimes changed in the hope of obtaining an extension of life. In such a case the new name is not that of another person, but one usually indicative of some personal peculiarity; and after the change is made it is considered improper to mention the former name.¹ The object is of course to conceal the identity and so escape the fate allotted to the bearer of the old name. On the other hand, belief in a merely temporary occupation of an infant by the spirit of the dead is probably due to a developing psychology. In an earlier stage it would seem that the deceased was reincarnate in the child, and not simply a kind of guardian spirit. To this the traditional tales and the obligation in Greenland to submit to the same dangers which had caused the death of the previous owner of the name indubitably witness. The probability is confirmed by what is related of the Eskimo of Angmagsalik on the eastern coast of Greenland. They say that man consists of three parts, the body, the soul and the name (*atekata*). The last enters the child when after its birth a sort of baptism is performed by rubbing water on its mouth and naming the name of the dead after whom the

¹ Nelson, *op. cit.* 289.

child is to be called. When a man dies the *atekata* remains with the body in the water or (where it is buried) in the earth until a child is named after him. It goes then into the child and there continues its existence.¹ Moreover, of the Eskimo on the west coast of Hudson's Bay, Captain Comer reports that the souls of the dead, if they so choose, may return and be born again. He adduces two recent cases where this was believed to have occurred. "An old man who died in 1896 said at his death that he would be born again by a certain woman. Soon after this the woman gave birth to a girl, who it was believed," in spite be it observed of the difference of sex, "to be the old man returned. Another man who died in 1885 said that he would be born again as a child of his own daughter. The latter had one son; and soon another son was born, who was looked upon as the dead one returned."²

Whatever may be the fact as regards the Melanese and the Eskimo it is certain that in North America the new birth of the dead was widely believed in. Among the Thompson Indians of British Columbia this opinion is now said to be confined to the cases of children dying in infancy. If such a child be succeeded by another of the same sex they say it is the same child come back again. "They do not believe that the soul of an elderly person can be re-born, nor that the soul of a male infant can be born again in a female infant, nor that the soul can return in an infant having a different mother." Formerly, we are told however, "this belief was more general than it is

¹ von Andrian, *Wörterb.* 20, citing Holm, *Ethnologisk Skizze*.

² *Bull. Amer. Mus. Nat. Hist.* xv. 146.

now.”¹ And still “there seems to be a vague belief with some that adults, if they so desire, may also be re-born on earth ; but this seldom happens.”² Among the Haida “belief in reincarnation was so general that a large proportion of the children were named in accordance with this idea. When the shaman announced what ancestor was reincarnated that ancestor’s name was of course given to the child. A man was always re-born into his own clan and generally into his own family.” According to one opinion a man might return in this way four times from the Land of Souls. Ultimately he became a blue fly ; what happened after that does not appear.³ Among the Thlinkit, if a pregnant woman dreamed of a dead man it was said that the ghost had taken up its abode in her body ; and if a newborn child had the least resemblance to a deceased relative, the latter was believed to have returned and the child was called by his name.⁴

On this side of the Rocky Mountains the Hareskins, a branch of the Dene or Athapaskan stock, roam over

¹ Teit, *Mem. Am. Mus. N. H. Anthropol.* i. 359. The last statement is not unambiguous. I understand it to mean that the belief was formerly more general *in its terms*. It is likely that the cases mentioned would survive in the tribal opinion as cases of re-birth when others had been given up.

² *Id. Jesup Exped.* ii. 287, 277.

³ Swanton, *Jesup Exped.* v. 117, 35. A story of a man who remembered his sojourn among the dead and his new birth, *Ibid.*, 36. Rev. C. Harrison (*J. A. I.* xxi, 20) gives a similar account of Haida belief, but unquestionably coloured in some of its details by Christian ideas.

⁴ Featherman, *Aoneo-Mar.* 392 ; Bancroft, iii. 517. See a saga of a man who remembered his experiences, *Brit. Ass. Rep.* (1889), 844 ; *cf. Id.* (1888), 241. Similar beliefs and stories of other British Columbian tribes, *Id.* (1890), 580, 611, 614 ; Boas, *Ind. Sag.* 322.

the steppes and stunted forests of the great North-West. Of them it is told that sometimes men die to be re-born almost immediately without going to the land of the dead. When these souls have chosen a woman for their mother they go to her and are reincarnated in her womb. Such migrations are recognised by several signs, as when the child is born with two teeth in the upper and two in the lower jaw, or when it is born immediately after a death, or when it remembers what it has been during its previous life, or when it resembles trait for trait a person defunct.¹ The Tacullies, or Carriers, also an Athapascan tribe, assist the soul's decision as to the child in which it will become reincarnate. They inquire of the dead if they will return to life or not. The shaman inspects the naked breast of the corpse, and if satisfied on the point he blows the soul into the air, that it may seek a new body, or puts his hands on one of the mourners, thereby conveying the spirit into him, to be embodied in his next offspring. The relation thus favoured, we are told, added the name of the deceased to his own.²

Like the Thompson Indians, the Iroquois held that it was chiefly the souls of children to which the privilege of a new birth was granted.³ Huron philosophy posited the existence of two souls in a

¹ Petitot, *Traditions*, 275. The author gives one other sign which I do not understand: "Lorsqu'elles [*sc.* the women] cessent d'avoir leurs règles au temps prescrit par la nature dans notre pays."

² Bancroft, iii. 517. Tylor (*op. cit.* 3), citing Waitz, states that it was the child who bore not only the name but the rank of the deceased. I have preferred to cite Bancroft both because the statement is second-hand instead of third-hand (I have no access to the original), and because it tells somewhat less strongly in favour of the argument. See also Boyle, *Archæological Report*, Ontario (1898), 142.

³ Featherman, *op. cit.* 31.

man. One was changed at death into a turtle-dove or went to the village of souls. The other remained attached to the body, never to leave it "unless some one gave birth to it again." The striking resemblance which some persons bear to others who are dead was adduced to the Jesuit father who records this belief, in proof of its truth. The Hurons called the bones of the dead *Atisken*, or the souls. Babies who died under one or two months of age were not placed, like older persons, in sepulchres of bark raised on stakes, but buried in the road, in order that they might enter secretly into the wombs of passing women and be born again. The Jesuit father quaintly adds: "I doubt that the good Nicodemus would have found much difficulty here, although he only objected concerning old men *Quomodo potest homo nasci cum sit senex?*"¹ I shall have to recur to this practice. The Dakota held that a man had four souls. Some Sioux however speak of a fifth "which enters the body of some animal or child after death;" and they "go so far as to aver that they have distinct recollections of a former state of existence and of the passage into this." But it does not appear that the belief is general.² It is said that the medicine-men and women of the Sioux might "be transformed after death into wild beasts," but that the Dakota believed that their medicine-men and women ran their career four times in human shape and then were annihilated.³ Some Siouan medicine-men

¹ *Relations des Jésuites*, x. (1636), 286, 272; *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* v. 114, 111.

² Dorsey, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 484.

³ Bourke, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* ix. 470, quoting Schultze, *Fetichism* (New York, 1888). Some of them begin life as winged seeds, and after preparation and instruction by the divinities go forth and

however "profess to tell of what occurred to them in bodies previously inhabited for at least six generations back."¹ Twins are a mystery to the Teton, who believe that they are of superhuman origin and must come from Twin-land. They may die; but they are sure to be born again into separate families, and will then be able to recognise one another though others are unable to do so. Medicine-men often found their claims to supernatural power on having had a previous existence as twins.² A tale belonging to the cycle of Orpheus and Eurydice told by a member of the Teuktcän-si tribe in California relates that the bereaved husband when in the other world saw a long line of little babies moving silently back across the bridge that spanned the furious river between the living and the dead. "They were coming here to our women."³ In Peru, if we may trust Garcilaso dela Vega, the Cavinna, one of the tribes to the south of Cuzco subdued by the Inca Manco Capac, claimed to be descended from parents who came out of a certain lake, and believed that the souls of those who died entered the lake and thence returned again to animate other bodies.⁴

The custom of calling a child by the name of one of its forefathers or other previously deceased relations is so common that it is useless to adduce instances, unless there be some concomitant like that of divination or a dream for connecting it with the belief selecting their mothers are born into human society (*Ibid.* 494, quoting Pond in Schoolcraft's *Indian Tribes*).

¹ Dorsey, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi, 493.

² Dorsey, *op. cit.* 482, quoting MS. by Dr. J. M. Woodburn in possession of the Bur. Ethn.

³ *Journ. Am. F. L.* xv, 105.

⁴ Garcilaso, Bk. i. c. xx; Markham's trsln., i. 80.

in re-birth. It may notwithstanding be observed that it is a common belief in the lower culture that a name is an essential part of its owner. It is much more than a mere label: it is looked upon as having a real objective existence. The knowledge of the name gives power over the person or thing designated. This is the origin of innumerable magical practices. It accounts for the reluctance of savages to tell their names, for their propensity to adopt by-names by which they may usually be called without disclosing their true and proper names, and for the very general taboo of the names of the dead. Although therefore we are unable to discover any existing belief in the re-birth of an ancestor in many cases where the practice exists of giving an ancestral name to a child, still that belief may have been in earlier times at the root of the custom. Such a belief is quite likely to have faded with the advancing dawn of civilisation into the belief attributed to some of the Eskimo that the deceased whose name is thus appropriated becomes *ipso facto* a kind of guardian spirit to its new bearer, or into the analogous reason adduced by the Bontoc Igorot of northern Luzon for their invariable practice of giving a child the name of some dead ancestor. They allege that by so doing they will secure for the child the protection of the *anito*, or *manes*, of the ancestor in question. "If the child does not prosper or has accidents or ill health, the parents will seek a more careful or more benevolent protector in the *anito* of some other ancestor;" and the child is thereafter known by the name of the latter.¹

¹ Jenks, 62. Compare the belief in Belgium, and probably other Roman Catholic countries, that to give a child the name of a saint

A different reason however for a change of name in such a case is given by the Lapps. It was believed that when a woman was near child-bed, one of the ancestors appeared in a dream to her and instructed her what name was to be given to her child; and ordinarily the ancestor in question was the one who was about to be born again in the person of the child. Failing any such intimation the name was ascertained by divination. But if the babe sickened or cried after baptism, it was deemed that the ancestor had not been rightly identified. As it was necessary to discover him in order to give his name to the child, resort was had to a fresh baptism to correct the effects of the previous one.¹ In Norway, if a pregnant woman dream of one who is dead, the child must be named after him. If the dream be of a man, and a girl be born, the man's name must be feminised, and *vice versâ*. If she dream of more than one person, the names of all must be given.² This perhaps resulted from the uncertainty as to which of the dead who appeared was to be identified with the coming stranger. The same practice of giving a new-born babe the name of a deceased person is to be traced back in the old Icelandic sagas, where a dying person often appeals to is to "place him under the invocation" of that saint. The name of Ghislain preserves the child from convulsions, that of Hubert from hydrophobia and from toothache, and so forth (*Bull. F. L.* ii. 150). Compare also the African customs cited above, p. 214, note.

¹ Rhys, *Celtic F. L.* 658, where he has tracked to its source in an old Scandinavian writer, whom he quotes, Prof. Tylor's authority for the statement given by him (*op. cit.* 4) from Klemm's *Culturgeschichte*. He adds from another Scandinavian writer of the eighteenth century the reason for change of name.

² Liebrecht, 311. Compare the Irish legend of the birth of Cuchulainn, D'Arbois de Jubainville, *Ep. Celt.* 37; *Rev. Celt.* ix. 12.

another to name a future child after him, because he expected advantage from it.¹ It is no far-fetched inference to suppose that he thereby expected to secure a new birth. In the Romagna it is usual to give the names of grandfathers uncles and other relatives to children, but not the names of relatives who are living, lest their death be accelerated—a vague reminiscence probably of the real reason.² In the Valdelsa the name by constant custom is that of the last person in the family who has died.³ If a child die among the christianised Indians of Sonora, Mexico, the next that is born takes the name of the departed.⁴ The reverse is the case in the province of Posen (Polish Prussia) and in the north of England, where a subsequent child must not be named after one that is

¹ *Zeits. des Vereins*, v. 99. Maurer cites on the authority of Vigfusson a curious tale of an Icelandic peasant who lived at the end of the sixteenth century, and to whose wife when pregnant the Devil himself appeared and desired that his name should be given to the child about to be born. When the parents however came to the baptism the priest refused to baptize the boy by the name of Satan, and called him Natan. He grew up a clever man and a renowned physician, but was guilty of all sorts of crimes and ultimately came to a violent end (Maurer, 193).

² Placucci, 78, 23. The reason, however, may be derived from the belief that to bestow the name is to bestow a part of the life and personality of the original owner of the name, who would thus lose it. Even if this be so, the bestowal of the name of one who is dead would be in some sense at any rate to revive him. How far the present belief in Italy definitely regards a baby as a dead relative returned is doubtful (see Pigorini-Beri, 283, Leland, *Etr. Rom. Rem.* 200); though witches are thought to be born again (Leland. *op. cit.* 199). The opposite result to that expected in the Romagna is looked for at Chemnitz when the first children take their parents' names. In such a case the children die before the parents (Grimm, *Teut. Myth.* 1778).

³ *Archivio*, xv. 50.

⁴ *Amer. Anthropol.*, N. S. vi. 79 note.

dead, lest it also die.¹ The Andamanese, who as we have seen definitely believe in re-birth, name "a second child after a previous dead one, because the spirit of the former babe has been transferred to the present one."² In certain districts of Papua children are often named after living relatives who indeed sometimes offer their names; but frequently a child is named after some one who is dead and whose soul, as the expression runs, it is desired to retain.³ It is significant too, as Kohler has pointed out, that among the Marshall Islanders, a blood feud arising from a death is more easily settled after the birth of a new child in the injured family. In such a case the slayer takes advantage of the fact to pray for reconciliation in the name of the new-born infant.⁴

Sometimes special measures are taken to secure the return of children dying young. Such is the Huron custom already mentioned of burying children in the road where they would enter the wombs of passing women and be born again. The Musquakie bury children in the path to the river, in order that the mother as she passes to and fro may absorb the soul of her little one and have it born again of her body; whereas old people are buried at a distance on the hill-tops.⁵ A practice followed in many parts of the world

¹ *Zeits. f. Volksw.*, iii. 233; Addy, 94; *Denham Tracts*, ii. 49. This looks like complete identification, unless it be attributable to some evil influence in the name itself. But of course the real origin of the superstition is now forgotten.

² *Census of Ind.* (1901), iii. 63.

³ *Zeits. Vergl. Rechtsw.*, xiv. 359, quoting Vetter.

⁴ *Ibid.*, 447, quoting Jung.

⁵ Owen, *F. L. Musq.* 86, 22. In the Delta of the Niger a similar practice prevails, but the reason given is different. It is "that mothers, either on the way to or from the spring, may keep

is that of burying a dead child within or immediately outside the hut where it died. It can hardly be doubted that the object here is the same. This is the usage of the Fans in West Africa.¹ The Kavirondo of British East Africa bury the child near the door of its mother's hut.² The Jaiswárás of the Panjáb bury under the threshold all children who die within fifteen days after birth. The reason assigned is that "in constantly stepping over [the grave] the parents would run no risk of losing any subsequent children."³ This, however, is probably not the original reason. So about Sirhali in the Panjáb the custom prevailed of burying the female children, when killed, under the door. The belief was that by this means subsequent children (sons it was hoped) would be born in their place: that is to say, the children buried would be born again of the more desired sex. Mr. Rose suggests with probability that the general Hindu practice of burying instead of burning the bodies of young children is explained in a similar manner.⁴ In Java a child who has died before receiving a name is buried without ceremony behind or near the house. Among the Karo-bataks a premature birth or a child under four days old is buried under the house.⁵ The Andamanese, whose belief and practice of naming have already been referred to, bury babies under the floor of their parents'

in touch with the departed spirit; and women who were especially attached to these infants during their life will frequently go and keep up an imaginary conversation with them for quite a long time" (Leonard, 191). But is this the real, or the original reason? They believe in reincarnation (See *ante*, p. 201 note).

¹ Roche, 91.

² Johnston, *Uganda*, ii. 749.

³ *Panjab N. and Q.* i. 123 (par. 925).

⁴ *Census of India*, 1901, xvii. 214.

⁵ Kruyt, 72, 242.

hut.¹ In Russia the peasants bury a still-born child under the floor.² The Chinese of the province of Kan-su cut it in pieces and bury it, in the belief that a boy will be born in a month afterwards.³ The Southern Slavs in burying a babe lift the little coffin thrice out of the grave and lay it down again. The cover of the coffin is never fastened at the head and feet of the corpse, because it is believed that if it were the mother would never bear again, or if she did the next birth would be very difficult.⁴ This alternative is probably late ; and both the former alternative and the ceremony of lifting the coffin thrice from the grave point to a belief in the child's return. The ancient Italians like the peoples of India forbore to burn the dead bodies of young children. They were buried under the eaves of the house.⁵ Recent excavations in Palestine have discovered beneath the floors of temples numerous remains of newborn children buried in large jars. Dr. Frazer has probably with justice interpreted these not as the remains of sacrifice, but as deposits in the precincts of a god regarded as above all the source of fertility, laid there "in the hope that quickened by divine power they might enter again into the mother's womb and again be born into the world."⁶ Among the northern Maidu of California a stillborn child must not be buried face downwards, else the mother will

¹ *Census of India*, 1901, iii. 65.

² Ralston, *Songs*, 136.

³ *Anthropos*, iii. 764.

⁴ Krauss, *Sitte und Brauch*, 545.

⁵ Pliny, vii. 15. See also Dieterich's observations, *Mutter Erde*, 21.

⁶ Frazer, *Adonis*, 82. A similar custom to that under discussion probably accounts for the absence of children's remains in prehistoric burial-places that has puzzled the veteran antiquary Canon Greenwell (*Archæologia*, lx. 306).

ever afterwards be barren.¹ In the legend of the manioc already cited the maiden from whose grave the manioc sprouted was buried in her parents' house. In a variant it is the maiden's infant child who is thus buried; and we are told that he was thus buried according to ancient custom.²

Among the rites for obtaining children referred to in the last chapter were attempts by women in India and elsewhere to possess themselves of the life of a little infant, or of an executed criminal or other corpse, in the hope that the life thus obtained would be born again of them.³ The subject was postponed for fuller discussion in connection with the subject of Transformation. Directing our attention first to the practice at Bombay of cutting off the end of a fruitful woman's robe, it might be thought that the object was merely to share, by a well-known magical process illustrated in practices elsewhere, in the fertility of the woman who owned the robe. That this is not so is shown by the requirement that in Guzerat the woman whose skirt is detached must be one pregnant for the first time, and the belief that she will thus be caused a miscarriage, while the woman who takes the skirt will bear a child.⁴ Similarly

¹ Dixon, *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xvii. 230.

² Carl Teschauer, *Anthropos*. i. 742. Many peoples bury adults in their huts. The hut is then usually abandoned, but by no means always: among tribes in various parts of the world it continues to be occupied. The question whether in such cases the burial has any relation to the belief in a fresh birth of the deceased requires examination for which I have had no opportunity. But even if the burial have no relation to the belief in question a considerable volume of evidence remains, of which examples are given above, that children are buried under or in close proximity to the parental hut for the purpose of being born again.

³ *Suprà*, pp. 69, 71, 75-77.

⁴ Dayá, 90.

we are told that among the Mohammedans in Oudh if a barren woman on a Sunday or a Tuesday tear off and swallow a piece of the wrapper of a fruitful woman it will cause her to conceive, but the other woman "considers the act as an ill omen" for herself.¹ In Guzerat it is clear that the intention is to transfer the child from one womb to the other; and although the practice in Oudh is described more vaguely we must interpret it to the same effect. This view is strengthened by the belief that when a child's shirt was steeped in water and the water drunk by a barren woman the child would die and be born again from the woman who had drunk the water, and by the general requirement in India that when, as often happens, a child is put to death for the purpose of securing offspring to a barren woman, that child must be a boy. "In the reported cases," says Mr. Rose, "there is only one in which the victim was a girl, and in that the parties concerned were Mohammedan fakirs."² The child's vitality is usually tested by torture previously to the final blow. Branding with hot metal is the favourite process; and having regard to the attitude taken by English magistrates to this ritual murder, the secret branding of a child unable to speak, and therefore to betray the torturer, is often held to satisfy the necessities of the case without murder.³

¹ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* iii. 215 (par. 467); iv. 161 (par. 373).

² *Census of Ind.* (1901), xvii. 214.

³ *N. Ind. N. and Q.* i. 148 (par. 911); Dayá, 90. I think the interpretation I have given of the torture is correct, though both that and the requirement of a bronze knife for actual despatch mentioned by Mr. Rose may point to confusion with the idea of a sacrifice. In any case, one kind of ritual murder, probably of late development, is the offering of human sacrifices to the gods for offspring. Professor Westermarck has collected a number of instances from various parts of the world which raise the suspicion

Murder, or a ritual survival of murder, is however by no means always necessary to obtain the child. We have found advantage taken of the death of one of special powers, as a saint, or of otherwise unexhausted powers, as an unmarried man or an executed criminal, to endeavour to secure a transfer to a barren woman of the departed life that she may reproduce it in a child. With these practices we must connect the stories attributing pregnancy to the absorption of a portion of a dead man's body, all of which point to a belief in the possibility of fertilisation by such means without sexual intercourse. Often in the stories the identity of the child with the deceased is expressly affirmed. The customs we have just been studying are in complete concord with this affirmation. It may be further suggested that here we have one at least of the causes which have concurred to produce so widely extended a custom as that which I have studied elsewhere of eating the corpses of the kin.¹ When we are told, for instance, of the Botocudos of South America that mothers ate their dead children as a mark of affec-

(though he does not express it) that the sacrificed life was expected to pass into the barren woman and be re-born. In the story he cites of King Somaka from the *Mahábhárata*, when the king's only son was sacrificed, we are expressly told that the king's one hundred wives all smelt the smell of the burnt offering and became pregnant of sons, the eldest of whom was the sacrificed son born again of his former mother (Westermarck, *Moral Ideas*, i. 457 sqq.).

The Paraiyans, or Pariahs, of Madras bury children in the ordinary burial-ground, unless the child be a first-born and a boy. It is then buried by the house or even within the house. The reason alleged is "that the corpse may not be carried off by a witch or sorcerer, as the body of a first-born child is supposed to possess special virtues" (*Madras Govt. Mus. Bull.* v. 82). There can be little doubt as to the real meaning of this.

¹ *Leg. Pers.* ii. 278, sqq.

tion,¹ we cannot help thinking of the common practice of burying children in their mother's hut, and of the analogous measures of the Hurons and Musquakie to obtain a return of the departed infant; and we ask whether the affection entertained by the Botocudo mother did not centre in the hope that by eating the body of the child she would get it back again in a new birth.

The North American tribes, less oppressed by external nature, had reached a higher plane of culture than the Botocudos. Long before the seventeenth century, when their doings are first recorded, the Hurons had abandoned such crude means of recovering their children, if they had ever made use of them. They and the other Indians of the plains and the Atlantic shores had arrived at a conception of personality based upon a subtler identity. It was this identity which they strove to retain in ways exemplified above, not only by Huron and Musquakie practices but also by those of the Tacullies. Their view of life was thus much nearer to metempsychosis, though metamorphosis was not wholly outgrown: it had still its place in their philosophy. We have observed the same phenomenon in the Old World; it has been frequently illustrated in the preceding pages. The Danâkil on the southern shore of the lower end of the Red Sea hold in spite of Islam that the souls, especially of their sorcerers and priests, seek new bodies, and that those who are most active in assistance during the last few days or hours of a dying sorcerer receive his powerful spirit in their first male offspring. Accordingly there is a busy coming and going

¹ Featherman, *Chiapo-Mar.* 355.

around the bed of a sorcerer sick unto death, people incessantly offering gifts and endeavouring to make themselves useful.¹ In the same spirit one of the prescriptions of our Anglo-Saxon forefathers directs a woman who has miscarried to go to the barrow of a deceased man and step thrice over it with certain words conjuring the effects of the miscarriage.² The Gipsy women in Hungary however require a material vehicle for the transfer of the life they seek, when at waxing moon they eat grass from the grave of a pregnant woman.³ So among the Southern Slavs the woman goes to a pregnant woman's grave, calls upon her by name, bites some of the grass off the grave, calls upon her again, conjuring her to give her her child, and then taking some earth from the grave

¹ Paulitschke, ii. 28. In a later passage merely the gift of sooth-saying is spoken of as thus obtained for the first-born among the children of these busy-bodies (*Ibid.* 61); but the passage cited above expressly connects the practice with the belief in *Seelenwanderung*, and speaks of receiving the sorcerer's *mächtigen Geist*. It is not clear whether the people referred to are men. If so, there has probably been a transfer of function from women similar to that in the case of *märchen* influenced by Islam, where the magical fruit is sometimes eaten by the husband and not by the wife (*Leg. Perseus*, i. 79). The Mohammedanism of these tribes is, however, somewhat superficial.

Many of the Nilotic tribes bury the dead outside the door of the hut in which they had lived. The Soudanese soldiers employed in Uganda have been required to abandon this practice in favour of burial in a cemetery. They have "more or less accepted the order," save in the case of children, "who are often buried just outside the hut of their parents; and whenever Soudanese lines have been moved from one place to another" a number of these little graves has generally been discovered (Major Meldon, *Journ. Afr. Soc.* vii. 127).

² *Sax. Leechd.* iii. 66.

³ Ploss, *Weib.* i. 439, citing von Wislocki.

binds it in her girdle.¹ These practices require no comment.

There remains the Australian evidence, which is important, because the aboriginal population of that continent is on the lowest stage of culture now extant, and it has been until the early part of the last century wholly cut off, as far as we know, from intercourse with other peoples. Prior to recent investigations it was known that the Australian natives believed in a posthumous existence in flesh and blood. Members of various tribes had repeatedly recognised white men as departed relations and acquaintances who had found their way back. This is the "Jump up White-fellow" belief which has been so often discussed since the time when the experiences of William Buckley were made public. He was a convict who escaped from the penal settlement at Port Phillip Bay in the year 1803, and was found by some of the Wudthaurung tribe carrying a piece of a broken spear. The fragment in question had been placed on the grave of one Murrangurk according to tribal custom by his kindred; and by this means Buckley was identified with the deceased. He lived with the natives for more than thirty years and married a native wife.² Since his time other white men have been similarly identified by natives in various parts of Australia as old friends and former members of their tribes; and the belief has been reported from the most widely sundered localities.

It is indeed by no means confined to Australia. It "may be traced northward," as Prof. Tylor says, "by the Torres Islands to New Caledonia, where the natives thought the white men to be spirits of the

¹ Krauss, *Volksgl.* 136.

² Dawson, 110; Howitt, 442

dead, who bring sickness, and assigned this reason for wishing to kill white men." The Bari of the White Nile thought the first white people they saw were departed spirits thus come back; and the same theory is entertained both by Negroes and Bantu along the coast of West Africa. In 1861 a missionary was recognised by a native of Corisco Island in the Gulf of Guinea as his brother, who had died at such a time and had gone to White Man's Land. A chief on the island of Fernando Po who died in 1898 announced that he would reappear in the person of a ship-captain. A short time after his death a European geologist went to study the rocks of the valley where the chief had dwelt, and was taken for an embodiment of the deceased coming to look once more upon his lands.¹ Among the Bavili of French Congo it is apparently held that the dead man does not necessarily return white. Mr. Dennett relates the case of a woman whom he knew, who had died and was buried. "When she rose from the dead she found herself a slave and married to a white man in Boma. She lived with him until he went to Europe, when he freed her." After various adventures she succeeded in getting

¹ Tylor, *op. cit.* 5; Howitt, *l.c.*; *J. A. I.* xvi. 342; Mathews, *Ethnol. Notes*, 147; *Journ. Am. F. L.* ix. 200; Curr, i. 339; Nassau, 57; Mgr. Arriango Coll, *Anthropos*, ii. 390. In one Australian case the natives of the Brisbane district, in spite of his denials, recognised in a runaway convict named Baker a deceased member of the tribe, and, we are told, "allotted to him as his own property the portion of land that had belonged to" the deceased (Lang, *Queensland*, 336). As the natives have strictly speaking no property in land, this can mean no more than that they assigned him exclusive hunting rights. But even so it is convincing proof of the strength of their belief. See as to the belief in North Queensland, Roth, *Bull.* v. ss. 63, 64.

back to her native town. "Her parents were rejoiced to see her again; but they will not believe that she is a human being and continue to treat her as the departed spirit (*chimbindi*) of their daughter."¹ The Andamanese recognise all natives of India and the Far East as *changa*, or persons endowed with the spirits of their ancestors.² The belief thus widely diffused does not involve new birth. But although the persons returned are recognised by bodily features and peculiarities, even by scars received in their previous existence, it does involve Transformation after death, or Transmigration into a new body, since the original body has been under the eyes of the relatives not merely buried (in which event resurrection may have taken place) but frequently burnt or dismembered according to custom.

During the last decade of the nineteenth century and since important discoveries have however been made, especially of the ceremonies and beliefs of the natives inhabiting the central, northern and north-eastern districts of the Australian continent. Chief among those to whom we are indebted for accessions to our knowledge so great as almost to revolutionise our view of the aboriginal culture, are Professor Baldwin Spencer and Mr. F. J. Gillen, who have published the results of their joint inquiries in two elaborate volumes. The information thus obtained, so far as it relates to the subject under immediate consideration here, is to the following effect. The central tribes are all divided, like those in other parts of the continent, into totem-clans. Every tribe is also divided into two exogamous intermarrying classes;

¹ Dennett, *F. L. Fjort*, 11.

² *Ind. Census*, 1901, iii. 63.

and these again are subdivided so as further to regulate sexual relations. But the birth of a child is not ascribed to sexual intercourse. That intercourse at most plays an accessory part. The child may come without it. Intercourse "merely as it were prepares the mother for the reception and birth also of an already-formed spirit child who inhabits one of the local totem centres."¹ On this point the explorers' evidence is emphatic and was confirmed by further inquiries made on their third journey. The Ura-bunna, the most southerly of the central Tribes, reckon descent in the female line only. Far in the past each of the totem-clans originated from a comparatively small number of individuals, who were half-human and half-animal or half-plant, after which the clan is named. They were possessed of more than human powers, and they deposited in the ground at certain spots where they performed sacred ceremonies a number of spirit-individuals, some of whom became men and women and formed the first series of totem-groups or clans. Since that time these spirit-individuals have been continually undergoing reincarnation. When one incarnation dies his spirit returns to the spot where the original deposit was made, and there awaits reincarnation. He chooses, subject to certain conditions with which we need not concern ourselves, the woman whom he will enter.²

¹ S. and G. *Cent. Tribes*, 265. It may be noted, in confirmation of the statement that these tribes do not ascribe the birth of a child to sexual intercourse, that among several of them at any rate (and, it may be suspected, now or at one time among all) the mother uses a different word from that employed by her husband to indicate the relationship of a son or daughter to the speaker (S. and G. *Cent. Tribes*, 76 *sqq.*, *North. Tribes*, 78 *sqq.*).

² S. and G. *North. Tribes*, 145, *sqq.*

Going northward, the next tribe met with is that of the Arunta. According to them the origin of the various totem-groups was somewhat similar. Their totemic ancestors were formed by two individuals called *Ungambikula* out of incomplete transformations of animals and plants, which they shaped into human beings. These newly formed men and women wandered in bands across the country, carrying objects called *Churinga* (a kind of bullroarer, usually of stone elaborately marked), every one of which was associated with the spirit-part of an individual. Sometimes each ancestor carried more than one of these *churinga*. At the various places where these ancestors ultimately "went into the ground," they left behind the *churinga* they were carrying. The period when these things happened is called the *Alcheringa*, a term not very happily rendered by "Dream-time," seeing that the Arunta believe the events to have actually occurred in an indefinite but far past period. "There are thus at the present day, dotted about all over the Arunta country, a very large number of places associated with these Alcheringa spirits, one group of whom will be Kangaroo, another Emu, another Hakea plant, and so on. When a woman conceives, it simply means that one of these spirits has gone inside her and, knowing where she first became aware that she was pregnant, the child when born is regarded as the reincarnation of one of the spirit-ancestors associated with that spot, and therefore it belongs to that totemic group." Thus every individual Arunta is a reincarnation of a mythical ancestor.¹

Further still to the north the Warramunga hold all

¹ S. and G. *op. cit.* 150.

the members of a totemic group to be reincarnations of a number of spirits, the emanations from the body of a single ancestor half-human, half-beast or plant. This belief, which is similar to that of the Urabunna, though not held by the Arunta, is found among the more northerly tribes, with one exception, right through to the Gulf of Carpentaria. The exception is that of the Gnanji, a wild and somewhat isolated people. For them this doctrine of reincarnation (in other respects identical) is limited by the denial of a spirit-part to women. "They were quite definite," we are told, "on this point. There are large numbers of spirit female-children, but they never undergo reincarnation."¹ Whence come the baby-girls we are not informed. The Warramunga and Urabunna on the other hand, believe that the sexes alternate with each successive incarnation.²

In the territory of all these tribes, therefore, there are certain spots where disembodied spirits were originally deposited, and where they congregate during the intervals of incarnation, ready to pounce on any suitable woman who may come near. Among the Arunta these spirits are associated with *churinga*, which they leave behind when they enter the womb. Search is made for the *churinga*; by it the spirit thus reincarnated is identified, and the child is named accordingly. The totem of the child is thus not reckoned by natural descent. The totems have become localised, and the totemic group to which the child belongs is determined by the place at which the mother first becomes aware of her condition, and by the *churinga* found there. In some of the more

¹ S. and G. *op. cit.* 161, 170.

² *Ibid.* 358 note, 530.

northern tribes however the totems descend strictly in the paternal line, and it is believed that a spirit seeking reincarnation will in general refuse to enter a woman other than the wife of a man of the proper totem.¹ It is possible by magic to cause a spirit to enter into a woman. About fifteen miles from Alice Springs in the territory of the Arunta there is a rounded stone projecting about three feet above the ground. It is called *Erathipa*, meaning *child*. On one side of it is "a round hole through which the spirit-children are supposed to be on the look-out for women who may chance to pass near, and it is firmly believed that visiting the stone will result in conception. . . . Not only may the women become pregnant by visiting the stone, but it is believed that by performing a very simple ceremony a malicious man may cause women even children who are at a distance to become so. . . . Or again, if a man and his wife both wish for a child, the man ties his hair girdle round the stone, rubs it and mutters: 'The woman my wife you (think) not good, look.'" Similar stones exist at other places.² Although an ancestor is thus reincarnated the natives have no hesitation about putting an inconvenient child to death as soon as it is born. "They believe that the spirit-part of the child goes back at once to the particular spot from whence it came, and can be born again at some subsequent time, even of the same woman."³

¹ S. and G. *op. cit.* 169, 175, 176, 273; *Cent. Tribes*, 124, 132, 138, 300.

² S. and G. *Cent. Tribes*, 336; *North. Tribes*, 271, 331, 450.

³ S. and G. *Cent. Tribes*, 51. As to the Kaitish and Unmatjera, see S. and G. *North. Tribes*, 506. As to the theory of multiple souls

The question presents itself whether the belief in reincarnation is found among other Australian tribes. The answer must be that it is found, but our knowledge of the tribes is too limited to enable us to say definitely that all of them have held it. Only among a few of the tribes have systematic and prolonged investigations taken place by persons whose attention has been directed to the point, and by them only within recent years; and the information we have is in all cases imperfect. In the west of Victoria the tribes from Avoca River to the boundary of South Australia and from the Murray River to the Main

held by these tribes and the Arunta, see *Cent. Tribes*, 513; *North. Tribes*, 450.

It is right to say that a somewhat different account from that outlined above of the philosophy of all these tribes is given by Mr. Strehlow, a German missionary who has lived for some years among the Arunta. He seems to have had his attention first called to the matter by inquiries addressed to him in consequence of the works just cited. He therefore prosecuted researches among the Arunta and Loritja, and has recently published the results through the Municipal Museum of Frankfort on the Main. Space does not allow me to examine these results at length. To some extent they confirm the statements of Spencer and Gillen. The sexual relations of men and women have nothing to do with birth. In some cases birth may be the voluntary reincarnation of a primeval ancestor. It is more usually the incarnation of a child-germ emanating from one of such primeval ancestors and not previously born (Strehlow, i. 15; ii. 51 *sqq.*). Reincarnation is a common feature of the belief of peoples in the lower culture, and is as we shall see widely held in Australia. Moreover the account given by Spencer and Gillen has been confirmed by independent inquiry among the Arunta and neighbouring tribes (Mathews, *Proc. R. Soc. N. S. Wales*, xl. 107, *sqq.*; xli. 147). Accordingly on the whole there seems little doubt that it may be safely trusted. Mr. Strehlow's report, however, agrees in some particulars with the beliefs of other tribes (*infra* p. 242); and it may very likely represent the opinions of a section of the Arunta and Loritja.

Range are reported to believe that every totem-clan has its own spirit-land called *mi-yur*, home or final resting-place, to which the souls of members of the clan go after death. There they congregate; and thence from time to time they emerge, and are born again in human shape. The tribes inhabiting the country from Beaufort towards Hexham and Wickliffe have only one spirit-land for all their clans. It is an island a short distance off the coast called by the natives Dhinmār, but known on the map as Lady Julia Percy Island. Thither every disembodied spirit makes its way, and there it remains until reincarnated.¹ The report I cite gives no further details as to the method of reincarnation; but presumably the spirits are born again into their own respective tribes and clans. In South Australia the tribe (now extinct) about Adelaide held that the spirits of the dead went to Pindi, the western land. At some period they returned from Pindi to be re-born, and in the interval took up their abode in trees.² The Nimbaldi tribe, about Mount Freeling, believe in "a spirit called Muree, which may be either a male or a female," and which meets a woman and throws a small waddy called *weetchu* under her thumb-nail or great toe-nail, and so enters her body. In due time she then gives birth to a child.³ The Euahlayi, whose country is the border between New South Wales and Queensland, hold that babies and children who die young without passing through

¹ Mathews, *Ethnol. Notes*, 91, 95.

² N. W. Thomas, *Man* (1904), 99 (par. 68), citing *Tasmanian Journ.* i. 64.

³ Mathews, *op. cit.* 148, citing Taplin, *F. L. &c. of S. Austr. Abor.* (Adelaide, 1879), 88. Compare the Arunta belief according to Strehlow, ii. 53.

the puberty rites are born again, either of their own mother or, if they prefer, of another woman. In the former case the child is called *millanboo* (the same again). A reason sometimes given for the marriage which often takes place of young men to old women is "that these young men were on earth before and loved these same women but died before their initiation, so could not marry until now in their reincarnation." Other babies seemed to be manufactured *ad hoc*. The process will be considered hereafter.¹ On the other side of the continent, near York in Western Australia, there is a stone inhabited by the spirits of children; and if a woman go "near that stone she will get one of these children. Sometimes they enter her through her mouth, sometimes through other parts of her body, but," says the lady who reports this, "so far as I have investigated [the natives] did not believe that procreation had anything to do with conception."² This belief seems similar to that of the Arunta.

It thus appears that in Australia there is a widespread belief in the reincarnation of the dead. We had already learnt that the belief in transformation, both into animal and vegetable forms, was found there. Beyond this however the Australian natives have developed the doctrine of the soul, or double, which after release by death may enter again into a woman and take flesh as a new child. And the testimony is express that sexual intercourse is not, at least among some tribes, held necessary for conception, but that it

¹ Mrs. Parker, 50, 56, 73, 89. As to the theory of multiple spirits see 35, 27, 29.

² Mrs. Bates, in a letter to Mr. Andrew Lang, quoted by him in *Man* (1906), 180 (par. 112).

is caused by the mere will of such a soul to return to human society. Even where, as among the tribes of North Queensland, we have no evidence of the belief in reincarnation of ancestors, sexual intercourse is excluded as a necessary condition of birth. These facts, occurring as they do among a race in a stage of culture lower than any other now upon the surface of the globe, materially assist the conclusion that pregnancy was widely held in early times to be caused by other than what we regard as the natural means.

The notion of a factory or warehouse of children whence they are sent forth to find mothers is shared by some of the Australian tribes with peoples in other continents. The Hidatsa of North America have a cavern near Knife River called Makadistati, the house of infants. It was supposed to extend far into the earth, but the entrance was only a span wide. "It was resorted to by the childless husband or the barren wife. There are those among them who imagine that in some way or other their children come from the Makadistati; and marks of contusion on an infant, arising from tight swaddling or other causes, are gravely attributed to kicks received from his former comrades when he was ejected from his subterranean home." Another account which appears to refer to the same place only mentions squaws as resorting to it and receiving from it "prolific virtue."¹ Precisely parallel to this cavern is a hill on the Daly River in the Northern Territory of Australia. It is called by the natives Alalk-yinga, the place of children. They believe that the children hereafter to be born are kept shut up there under the care of one old man

¹ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 516.

whose duty it is to prevent them from escaping and to supply them with water. The latter he does by means of an underground communication with the river, about a mile away. "When a child is to be born this old man sees to the business."¹

The question where this baby-factory was was solved by the ancient Mexicans in favour of the kingdom of the dead. Accordingly an epithet for that realm was *tlacapillachiualoya*, the place where the children of men are produced, or engendered.² The same solution has been reached by the Santals of the Rajmahal Hills, in India. Every Santal who bears the *sika*, or tribal mark, on his left forearm, after death enters the kingdom of the gods, and is employed by them "in grinding the bones of past generations with a pestle made of the wood of the castor-oil-tree in order to provide the gods with a good supply of material to produce the children yet unborn." This is the continual occupation to which a Santal looks forward in the next life, interrupted only by a periodical festival similar to those he loved on earth, or by a momentary

¹ Mathews, *Proc. R. Soc. N.S.W.* xl. 113; *Ethnol. Notes*, 148, citing *Trans. R. Soc. S. Austr.* xvii. 262.

² Preuss, *Arch. Religionsw.* vii. 234. Compare a tradition by which the origin of the present race of mankind was attributed to a bone of a previous race, fetched from Hell and sprinkled with the blood of sixteen hundred supernatural heroes. A boy and then a girl are thus formed from it; and they become the ancestors of all nations (Southey, *Commonpl. Bk.* iv. 142, quoting some authority not indicated). The Maidu of California in a cosmogonic legend speak of an Earthmaker who forms figures in shape like men, but barely as big as a tiny seed. These he plants by pairs in the earth at different places to grow into men and women. At the appointed time they come forth; the earlier races are all killed or transformed, and are supplanted by the pairs who have risen from the earth and their children (Dixon, *Journ. Am. F. L.* xvi. 33).

pause to prepare his tobacco-quad, or if a woman who has borne children to give suck to the child at her breast.¹ Similar material is believed by the peoples of Togoland in West Africa to be required for the production of new human beings. The underjaws of slaughtered enemies are consequently in Kunya brought by the Guan and dedicated to the fetish Kombi, an undergod of the great goddess Sia, by whom they are applied to this purpose.²

I hope that I have now made it plain that stories of metamorphosis, such as those we have found in the examination of the theme of Supernatural Birth, are founded upon the serious belief that at death men are not annihilated, but pass into fresh forms, sometimes appearing as plants and trees, sometimes as animals of the lower creation, and sometimes as men and women born again into their own kindred or among strangers. This is a creed held so widely that—though subject perhaps to varying stress according to the degree and direction of the evolving civilisation—it may yet be regarded as practically universal.

The relation between Transformation and Transmigration calls for some remark. In the examples I have set before the reader I have treated them as for our purpose equivalent. In many cases it is probable that our evidence is inaccurate, and that what the observer set down as metempsychosis really presented itself under a simpler conception to the people of whom he is speaking. Personality as conceived by savage thought is not bound to one definite, individual, relatively invariable form. The form may change, yet the personality remain. Tales soberly credited in all

¹ Bradley-Birt, 285.

² *Globus*, lxxxix. 12.

but the highest culture are full of shape-shifting. It would be as vain to attempt to persuade a peasant in remote parts of our own country that some poor old woman was not a witch capable of turning herself upon occasion into a hare, and in fact known to do so, as to persuade a Wiradjuri in New South Wales that a *bugin*, or medicine-man, was not able to turn himself at will into an animal, or even the stump of a tree or other inanimate object.

If such a change may take place in a living person still more freely may it take place by means of death. It is quite clear that in many of the instances mentioned in the foregoing pages the change is regarded as a direct bodily change and not a reincarnation of the soul ; and these might be paralleled without any difficulty from all parts of the world. Let it suffice to refer to the Welsh tale of Math ab Mathonwy. In that tale we are told of a hero named Llew Llawgyffes who could not be slain except when dressing after a bath. The bath must be arranged by the side of a river ; it must be well roofed over ; a buck must be brought and put beside the caldron ; then if the hero put one foot on the edge of the caldron and the other on the buck's back, in that attitude whoever struck him would cause his death. His treacherous wife Blodeuwedd concert's measures with her paramour Gronw Pebyr and succeeds in fulfilling the conditions. Gronw flung a poisoned dart and struck him on the side, so that the head of the dart remained in the wound. Llew Llawgyffes flew up in the form of an eagle and disappeared. He was afterwards traced by Gwydion, son of Don, and found in a miserable condition with his flesh putrefying from the wound. By means of incantations Gwydion got

possession of the bird and with the help of his magic wand restored him to his proper shape. Blodeuwedd was turned into an owl; "and for this reason is the owl hateful unto all birds. And even now the owl is called Blodeuwedd."¹ Sir John Rhys commenting on this and other Celtic stories draws attention to the fact that "none of these stories of shape-shifting and of being born again make any allusion to a soul." It is evident that the eagle in whose form Llew Llawgyffes flew away cannot be regarded as his soul. The decayed state of its body, the festering of the wound and the retransformation into a man are conclusive on this point. Yet the fatal wounding of the hero was foretold as his death and is treated in the story as his death. The story reaches us in a late form and only in a single manuscript of the fourteenth century. But its form is probably not later than the eleventh century; its substance is much earlier. It has undergone, as Sir John Rhys has unanswerably shown, in the process of transmission some misunderstanding as to the metamorphoses, which appears to have resulted in tampering with the original plot. But the aim of that tampering was to obscure the fact of Llew's death, not to blink his transformation.

Mr. Aston observes on the stories given above from the *Nihongi*: "The modern name for ghost testifies to the prevalence of this conception [that of bodily metamorphosis at death] in Japan. It is *bake-mono*, or 'transformation,' and is applied to foxes which change into human form as well as to the ghosts of the dead and to hobgoblins of uncertain origin. . . .

¹ *Llyr Coch*, 75; *Mabinogion*, 427; Nutt's ed. 74; Rhys, *Celtic F. L.* 609.

There are no proper ghosts in the *Kojiki* or *Nihongi*, although the writers of these works were fond of recording strange and miraculous occurrences. The metamorphosed appearances mentioned in them are never phantoms with a resemblance to the human form, and possess no spiritual qualities. Even now the *bake-mono*, though differing little from our ghost, is quite distinct from the human *mitama* or *tamashii* (soul)."¹ We may remind ourselves that a similar distinction is drawn by the Angoni and the Achewa in Central Africa between the animal or plant regarded as the reincorporation of a dead man and the *mzimu*, or spirit. With the former the surviving relatives do not concern themselves, except that they will not destroy or eat it; the latter is the object of a cult.²

In cases like these there is no second birth: the metamorphosis is direct. Nor is the evidence less cogent where the deceased is born again. When Bata in bull-form was slain two drops of his blood fell upon the door-posts and forthwith grew up into trees. When the trees were cut down a splinter entered the king's mistress' mouth and rendered her pregnant—of Bata once more. When an Ainu mother looks to see whether her baby's ears are already pierced there is no question of a soul taking flesh in a new body: it is a new birth of the old body of an ancestor. It is true that the Mongolian tale of Shêduir Van speaks of his soul as entering the empress' womb. Shêduir Van was a Khotogait prince executed for conspiracy against the Emperor of China. After his death the empress gave birth to a child; and the wise men declared that

¹ Aston, *Shinto*, 49. See *suprà*, p. 178.

² *Suprà*, p. 169.

the soul of Shêduir Van had, as he had foretold, entered her womb. How was the babe identified as the beheaded prince? By the cicatrice on its neck; thus showing, in spite of Buddhist contamination, that the idea underlying the incident is that of a new birth of the old body.¹ The far-spread story of the lovers, from whose grave two trees grew up and united their branches, is a story of Transformation and not of Metempsychosis. If I am right in the conclusion I have drawn that the stories of fish fruit worms stones and other objects entering the bodies of women as food or otherwise and rendering them pregnant present those various objects not merely as vehicles of fertilisation but as becoming human beings by the process of pregnancy and birth, then here we have once more examples of metamorphosis.

The truth is that the foundation of savage philosophy lies far down below Animism. The lines we draw between the lower animals and the vegetable and mineral kingdoms on the one hand and human beings on the other hand are not drawn in the lower culture. Man, interpreting all objects in the terms of his own consciousness, first endowed them with personality, but a personality such as I have described, vague and imperfectly crystallised, sufficiently fluid to run first in one mould and then in another, and even to divide into parts, without loss of identity. As experience gradually widened, the conception of personality became modified to bring it into harmony with observed phenomena. In the evolution which resulted dreams and trances played a prominent part. The doctrine of a soul or double, an inner, a separable and

¹ Gardner, *F. L. Journ.* iv. 30.

a more elusive self, emerged and like the prior conception of personality was applied not alone to human beings but also to the lower animals trees rocks and indeed to all external objects. But it must not be supposed that the soul was conceived as immaterial. Long ages elapsed before civilised thinkers arrived at this ; and the difficulties of such a concept are so great that even the highest religions, though paying lip-service to it, fall back in their rites their legends their promises and their threats on grosser and more material implications. The distinction between spirit and matter is unknown in the lower culture. The African, whether Negro or Bantu, as Miss Kingsley says, "does not believe in anything being soulless ; he regards even matter itself as a low form of soul, because not lively ;"¹ in his mind, that is to say, the confusion is complete. The same confusion appears in the ideas of peoples the most widely sundered in space and civilisation. To the savage as to our own forefathers and to the *folk* of all civilised countries still the idea of an incorporeal soul wanting every attribute of physical existence, such as a more refined philosophy demands, is incomprehensible. A man may not be able to see the soul, he may not be able to handle it, when it is united with the body that normally possesses it. But this kernel, this inner self of friend or foe, comes to him in dreams ; he beholds it in the snake or the toad the insect or the dove that haunts the tomb of one who was dear to him, or in the rose-bush or the lily growing upon the grave ; or he fetches it back in the shape of a white stone to his child who has sickened from its absence and is like to die. Finally,

¹ Kingsley, *Studies*, 199.

it is this that entering the body of a woman may of its own potentiality cause pregnancy, so that the babe she brings forth will be no other than the new manifestation of a pre-existing person. Thus though conceived as material its materiality is thin and subtle : it may animate any form and yet remain essentially the same. Its identity becomes the real identity of the man, pervading his entire being and transmissible from form to form. The idea of soul in this more evolved philosophy has in fact appropriated most of the attributes of the older and ruder idea of personality without entirely superseding it. Hence the distinction between Transformation and Transmigration is frequently so faint and indefinable. Transmigration is a natural development of Transformation, imperceptible because gradual, and dependent for its complete disclosure upon the degree of development of the doctrine of the soul.

CHAPTER IV

MOTHEIRRIGHT

Ignorance in the lower culture on the physiology of birth. Such ignorance was once greater and more widespread than now. For many ages the social organisation of mankind would not have necessitated the concentration of thought on the problem of paternity. Descent was and by many peoples still is reckoned exclusively through the mother. The social organisation implied by motherright. Kinship is founded on a community of blood actual or imputed. The Blood-Covenant. The father not recognised in motherright as belonging to the kin. His alien position and its consequences. The Nâyars. Combat between father and son. The Blood-feud. Children the property of the kin. The *potestas* in motherright. Evolution of the family. The mutual rights and duties of the children and their mother's brother. Father a wholly subordinate person. The origin of motherright not to be found in uncertainty of paternity. Paternity in patrilineal societies.

It has been shown in previous chapters that :

1. Stories of birth from other than what we now know as the only natural cause are told and believed all over the world.
2. The means to which in these stories birth is attributed are or have been actually adopted for the production of children.
3. It is also widely believed that birth is merely a new manifestation of a previously existing creature, either human or one of the lower animals

or even vegetables ; and conversely that a human being may after death take form by birth as one of the lower animals, or may grow up as a plant or tree.

4. The birth of a previously existing creature may result from the action of that creature, without procreation by masculine aid.

Put in another way these beliefs may be summed up by saying that in the contemplation of peoples in the lower culture birth is a phenomenon independent of the union of the sexes. By this it is not meant that at the present time everywhere among such peoples physiological knowledge is still in so backward a condition that the co-operation of the sexes is regarded as a matter of indifference in the production of children. That would be to contradict the facts. Today the vast majority of savage and barbarous nations are aware that sexual union is ordinarily a condition precedent to birth. Even among such peoples, however, exceptions are admitted without difficulty ; and there are peoples like certain Australian tribes who do not yet understand it. Their state of ignorance was probably once the state of other races and indeed of all humanity. The history of mankind so far as we can trace it, whether in written records or by the less direct but not less certain methods of scientific investigation, exhibits the slow and gradual encroachments of knowledge on the confines of almost boundless ignorance. That such ignorance should once have touched the hidden springs of life itself is no more incredible than that it should have extended to the cause of death. There are plenty of races who even yet attribute a death by

anything else than violence to the machinations of an evil-disposed person or spirit, no matter how old or enfeebled by privation or hardship the deceased may have been. Nor do they omit anything which may render their ignorance on this point unambiguous; they proceed to discover and punish the sorcerer; they expel the malicious spirit; they appease the enraged or arbitrary divinity.

Death has a character mysterious and awful, of which no familiarity has been able to divest it, and which not even the latest researches of physiologists have been able to dispel. Ignorance of the real cause of birth, it might be thought, on the other hand would not long survive the habitual commerce of men and women and the continual reproduction of the species. It would not, in our stage of civilisation and with our social regulations. [But the theory of the evolution of civilisation postulates the evolution of man, mentally and morally as well as physically. At the moment when the anthropoid became entitled to be properly denominated man his intellectual capacity was not that of a Shakspeare a Newton a Darwin, or even of an average Englishman of the twentieth century. He was only endowed with potentialities which, after an unknown series of generations and thanks to what we in our nescience variously dub a fortunate combination of circumstances or an over-ruling Providence, issued in that supreme result. The savage who has not been thus favoured is still by comparison undeveloped. His intellectual faculties are chiefly employed in winning material subsistence, in gratifying his passions, in fighting with his fellow-man and with the wild beasts, often in maintaining a doubtful conflict

against inclement skies unfruitful earth or tempestuous seas. Many of them, therefore, are dormant, like a bud before it has unfolded. His attention, not habitually directed to the problems of the universe, is easily tired. His knowledge is severely limited; his range of ideas is small. Credulous as a child, he is put off from the solution of a merely speculative question by a tale that chimes with his previous ideas, though it may transcend his actual experience. Hence many a deduction, many an induction, to us plain and obvious has been retarded, or never reached at all: he is still a savage.

During many ages the social organisation of mankind would not have necessitated the concentration of thought on the problem of paternity. Descent is still reckoned exclusively through the mother by a number of savage and barbarous peoples. This mode of reckoning descent is called by a useful term of German origin—Motherright. It would be impossible to undertake an exhaustive enumeration of the peoples among which motherright prevails. The civilised nations of Europe and European origin reckon descent and consequently kinship through both parents. A few others, chiefly more civilised nations like the Chinese and the Arabs, agree with them. Apart from these it may be roughly said that motherright is found in every quarter of the globe. Not that every people is in the stage of motherright: on the contrary many reckon through the father. But even where the latter is the case vestiges of the former are commonly to be traced. And the result of anthropological investigations during the past half-century has been to show that motherright everywhere pre-

ceded fatherright and the reckoning of descent in the modern civilised fashion through both parents.

This past universality of motherright points to a very early origin. It must have taken its rise in a condition of society ruder than any of which we have cognisance. Let us consider what social organisation it implies. Kinship is a sociological term. It is not synonymous with blood-relationship: it does not express a physiological fact. Many savage peoples are organised in totemic clans, each clan bearing usually the name of an animal or plant often supposed to be akin to the human members of the clan. Every member of the clan recognises every other member as of the kin. Inasmuch as these clans extend frequently through whole tribes and even to distant parts of a vast continent like North America or Australia, it is practically impossible that the members can be in a physiological sense blood-relations. Notwithstanding this, every member of the totem-clan, wherever he may be found, is entitled to all the privileges and subject to all the disabilities incident to his status. He is entitled to protection at the hands of his fellow-clansmen. He is liable to be called on to take part in the blood-feud of the clan, and to suffer by an act of vengeance for a wrong committed by some other member of the clan. Foremost among his disabilities is the prohibition to marry or have sexual relations with any woman within the kin. Consequently his children must all be children of women belonging to a different kin from his own.

Though kinship, however, is not equivalent to blood-relationship in our sense of the term, it is founded on the idea of common blood which all within the kin

possess and to which all outside the kin are strangers. A feeling of solidarity runs through the entire kin, so that it may be said without hyperbole that the kin is regarded as one entire life, one body, whereof each unit is more than metaphorically a member, a limb. The same blood runs through them all, and "the blood is the life." Literally they may not all be descended from a common ancestry. Descent is the normal, the typical, cause of kinship and a common blood. It is the legal presupposition: by birth a child enters a kin for good and ill. But kinship may also be acquired; and when once it is acquired by a stranger he ranks thenceforth for all purposes as one descended from the common ancestor. To acquire kinship a ceremony must be undergone: the blood of the candidate for admission into the kin must be mingled with that of the kin. This ceremony, no less than the words made use of in various languages to describe the members of the kin and their common bond, renders it clear that the bond is the bond of blood.

The mingling of blood—the Blood-covenant as it is called—is a simple though repulsive rite. It is sufficient that an incision be made in the neophyte's arm and the flowing blood sucked from it by one of the clansmen, upon whom the operation is repeated in turn by the neophyte. Originally, perhaps, all the clansmen assembled as witnesses if not as actual participants of the rite; and even yet participation by more than one representative is frequently required. The exact form is not always the same. Sometimes the blood is dropped into a cup and diluted with some other drink. Sometimes food eaten together is impregnated with the blood. Sometimes a species of inoculation is practised

or it is enough to rub the bleeding wounds together, so that the blood of both parties is mixed and smeared upon them both. Among certain tribes of Borneo the drops are allowed to fall upon a leaf, which is then made up into a cigar with tobacco and lighted and smoked alternately by both parties.¹ But whatever may be the exact form adopted, the essence of the rite is the same, and its range is extraordinarily wide. It is mentioned by classical writers as practised by the Arabs the Scythians the Lydians and Iberians of Asia Minor and apparently the Medes. Many passages of the Bible, many of the Egyptian *Book of the Dead*, are inexplicable apart from it. Ancient Arab historians are full of allusions to it. Odin and Loki entered into the bond, which means that it was customary among the Norsemen—as we know in fact from other sources. It is recorded by Giraldus of the Irish of his day ; and it still lingered as lately as two hundred years ago among the western islanders of Scotland. It is related of the Huns or Magyars and of the mediæval Roumanians. Joinville ascribes it to one of the tribes of the Caucasus ; and the Rabbi Petachia of Ratisbon, who travelled in Ukrainia in the twelfth century, found it there. In modern times every African traveller mentions it ; many of them have had to undergo the ceremony. In the neighbouring island of Madagascar it is well known. All over the Eastern Archipelago, in the Malay peninsula, among the Karens, the Siamese, the Dards on the northern border of our Indian empire and many of the aboriginal tribes of Bengal and Central India, the wild tribes of China, the Syrians of Lebanon and

¹ Roth, *Sarawak*, ii. 206.

the Bedouins, and among various autochthonous peoples of North and South America, the rite is or has been within recent times in use.¹ Nor has it ceased to be practised in Europe by the Gipsies and the Southern Slavs. In the French department of Aube, when a child bleeds he puts a little of his blood on the face or hands of one of his playfellows and says to him: "Thou shalt be my cousin." In like manner in New England, when a school-girl not many years since pricked her finger so that the blood came, one of her companions would say: "Oh! let me suck the blood; then we shall be friends." Something more than vestiges of the rite remain among the Italians of the Abruzzi. And the band of the Mala Vita, a society for criminal purposes in Southern Italy only broken up a few years ago, was a brotherhood formed by the blood-covenant. Indeed many secret societies both civilised and uncivilised have adopted an initiation-rite of which the blood-covenant forms part, either actually or by symbol representing an act once literally performed.

That the blood-covenant, whereby blood-brotherhood is assumed, is not a primeval rite is obvious from its artificial character. At the same time its barbarism and the wide area over which it is spread point with certainty to its early evolution, and the fact that it is in unison with conceptions essentially and universally human. It has its basis in ideas which must have been pre-existent. Even among races like the Polynesians, and the Turanian inhabitants of

¹ So far as I am aware it is expressly recorded only of the Seminoles in North America (Featherman, *Aoneo-Mar.* 172), a tribe in Yucatan and a tribe in Brazil (Trumbull, 54, 55, citing authorities); but practices in other tribes point to the underlying idea.

Northern Europe and Asia, where the rite itself may not be recorded, there are unmistakable traces of the influence of those ideas. On the other hand where, as among some of the peoples included above, it has ceased to be used for the purpose of admission to a clan, the rite or some transparent modification of it, has continued in use for the reconciliation of ancient foes or the solemnisation of a specially binding league.¹

In a society organised by the bond of blood, and where descent is reckoned through females only, the father is not recognised as belonging to the kin of the children. Among matrilineal peoples exogamy, or marriage outside the kin, is usually if not always compulsory. So far is this carried that the artificial tie of the blood-covenant is a barrier to marriage. When Cúchulainn in the Irish saga of *The Wooing of Emer* wounded his love, Dervorgil, in the form of a sea-bird with a stone from his sling, he became her blood-brother by sucking from the wound the stone with a clot of blood round it. "I cannot wed thee now," he said, "for I have drunk thy blood. But I will give thee to my companion here, Lugaid of the Red Stripes." And so it was done.² This tale beyond doubt reflects the custom among the ancient Irish. The islanders of Wetar in the East Indies, to select only one other example, represent even an earlier

¹ There is one doubtful account of its use among the descendants of Genghis Khan for this purpose (see the passage quoted and commented on by M. René Basset, *Rev. Trad. Pop.* x. 176). As to the subject generally, see Robertson Smith (*Kinship*; and *Rel. Sem.*); Trumbull, *The Blood Covenant* (London, 1887); Strack, *Das Blut* (München, 1900).

² Eleanor Hull, *The Cuchullin Saga*, 82.

stage in the development of the custom. They live in hamlets the inhabitants of which are usually related to one another, and often at odds with the inhabitants of adjacent hamlets. But sometimes these quarrels are made up and a blood-covenant is entered into, after which no intermarriage can take place.¹

The alien position of the father with regard to his children, and consequently the small account taken of him, has never been more vividly illustrated than by Miss Kingsley. She relates that on landing in French Congo she went to comply with the tiresome administrative regulations by reporting herself and obtaining a permit to reside in the colony. While she was waiting in the office of the *Directeur del' Administration* a black man was shown in. "He is clad in a blue serge coat, from underneath which float over a pair of blue canvas trousers the tails of a flannel shirt, and on his feet are a pair of ammunition boots that fairly hobble him. His name, the interpreter says, is Joseph. 'Who is your father?' says the official. Clerk interprets into trade English. 'Fader?' says Joseph. 'Yes, fader,' says the interpreter. 'My fader?' says Joseph. 'Yes,' says the interpreter; 'who's your fader?' 'Who my fader?' says Joseph. 'Take him away and let him think about it,' says the officer with a sad sardonic smile. Joseph is alarmed and volunteers name of mother; this is no good; this sort of information any fool can give; Government is collecting information of a more recondite and interesting character. Joseph is removed by Senegal soldiers, boots and all."² Nobody on the west coast of Africa reckons descent through his father. Whether he knows

¹ Riedel, 446.

² Kingsley, *Trav.* 109.

who is his father or not is very often of no consequence to his social or legal position. The native law of the Bavili (and the same is true of other tribes) draws no distinction between legitimate and illegitimate children. "Birth," we are told by a keen observer who has lived for many years in intimate converse with the natives, "sanctifies the child ;"¹ birth alone gives him status as a member of his mother's family. The French cast-iron regulations, made for a different race and a different latitude, puzzled and confounded poor Joseph by the unexpected and absurd questions they required to be put to him. Miss Kingsley sarcastically observes: "As he's going to Boma, in the Congo Free State, it can only be for ethnological purposes that the French Government are taking this trouble to get up his genealogy." Joseph does not understand the French government any more than the French government understands him ; and he has never traced his genealogy along those lines before.

Joseph was a member of a Bantu tribe ; but the case is the same among the Negroes. The Fanti of the Gold Coast may be taken as typical. Among them, while an intensity of affection, accounted for partly by the fact that the mothers have the exclusive care of the children, is felt for the mother, "the father is hardly known or [is] disregarded," notwithstanding he may be a wealthy and powerful man and the legal husband of the mother.² In North America Charlevoix says that among the Algonkin nations the children belonged to and only recognised their mother. The father was always a stranger, "so nevertheless that if he is not regarded as father he is always

¹ Dennett, *Journ. Afr. Soc.* i. 265.

² *J. A. I.* xxvi. 145.

respected as the master of the cabin.”¹ In Europe among the Transylvanian Gipsies “a man enters the clan of his wife, but does not really belong to it until she has borne a child. He never during his life shows the slightest concern for the welfare of his children, and the mother has to bear the whole burden of their maintenance. Even if the father is living, the son often never knows him, nor even has seen him.”² Among the Orang Mamaq of Sumatra the members of a *suku*, or clan, live together, and the feeling of kinship is very strong. As marriage within the clan is forbidden, husband and wife rarely dwell under one roof; when they do, it is because the husband goes to the wife’s home. But he does not become a member of the family, which consists merely of the mother and her children. The latter belong solely to their mother’s clan; the father has no rights over them; and there is no kinship between him and them. In consequence of the spread of foreign influences the true family has begun to develop in a section of these people inhabiting the district of Tiga Loeroeng. The husband and wife usually live together, but the home is with the wife’s clan. Though the husband is considered a member of the family he exercises little power over the children. They belong to their mother’s *suku*, and the *potestas*, as usual in such cases, is in the hands of her eldest brother.³

A corollary of the principle that the father is not akin to his children is that children of the same father by different mothers are not reckoned as brothers and

¹ Charlevoix, *Histoire de la Nouvelle France*, v. 424.

² Potter, 116, citing von Wislocki, *Vom wandernde Zigeuner-volke*.

³ *Bijdragen*, xxxix. 43, 44.

sisters. This is the rule of the Papuan tribe settled about Mowat on the Daudai coast of British New Guinea,¹ and indeed wherever motherright is pure and uncomplicated by rules which prescribe or presume the marriage of two or more sisters respectively to two or more brothers. Such children may accordingly intermarry. This permission however sometimes tends to be restricted, as among the Bayaka, of whom we are told that "marriage between children of the same mother is prohibited; between children of the same father it occurs, but is considered unseemly."² On the other hand it sometimes persists for a time, even a considerable time, among patrilineal peoples. By the laws of Athens children of the same father, but apparently not of the same mother, were allowed to intermarry.³ The same rule prevailed in Japan.⁴ According to Hebrew legend Sarah was the daughter of Abraham's father, but not of his mother. And when Amnon, King David's son, sought to ravish his half-sister Tamar, in the course of her protest and struggles she said: "Now therefore I pray thee, speak unto the king; for he will not withhold me from thee."⁵ That is: while she resented the indignity

¹ Haddon, *J. A. I.* xix. 467. The Yorubas of the Slave Coast of West Africa now reckon descent through the father. They perhaps owe the change to intercourse with the Mohammedan tribes of the interior. Be this as it may, so strong even yet is the influence of uterine kinship that children of the same father by different mothers are by many natives hardly considered true blood-relations (Ellis, *Yoruba*, 176).

² *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 45.

³ Maclennan, *Studies*, i. 223, quoting the *Leges Atticæ*.

⁴ *Rev. Hist. Rel.* l. 328 note; Aston, *Shinto*, 249. Traces are also found among the Slavs (Kovalevsky, 13).

⁵ *Gen.* xx. 12; 2 *Sam.* xiii. 13.

offered by her brother out of mere passing lust, marriage with him would have been legitimate and honourable. It is not necessary to contend that these stories are narratives of literal fact. There is no trustworthy evidence that they are. At the same time they are of high antiquity, and must have originated in a social condition where the incidents were not so far removed from daily life as to be incredible or even surprising. In that social condition kinship must have been counted only through the mother, or matrilineal having passed into patrilineal descent certain vestigial customs must have remained over from the prior stage. The incidents cited are therefore justly regarded as among the witnesses preserved to us that before the dawn of history the ancient Hebrews had traversed the stage of mother-right.

Among the inhabitants of Southern India the Nambútiri Brahmans are the aristocracy. They are a sacerdotal and landowning caste. Next to them in rank are the Nâyars whose organisation and customs have often been the subject of discussion by anthropologists. They seem to have been in former times the military caste of the western coast. They present a typical case of mother-right, but one that has been emphasised and preserved for the advantage of the Nambútiri Brahmans, since their virtual subjugation by that intrusive caste. The Nambútiris are of Aryan origin. Like all other Indian Aryans they are patrilineal. In order to maintain their supremacy, the Brahmans everywhere follow a custom known as *hypergamy*, by which a man may marry or have sexual relations with a woman of lower rank, but no man of

lower rank may marry into a caste above his own. Among the Nambútiris a further rule obtains by which the eldest son alone enters into lawful wedlock. He, indeed, may have as many as four wives; but his brothers are in general prohibited from marriage, or at all events their marriages are extremely rare. But this is not to say that younger sons are condemned to a life of celibacy. Their needs are supplied by the Nâyars. Before a Nâyar maiden attains puberty she is required to be married by the rite of tying the *tâli*, a small golden ornament worn on the neck, and the ordinary badge of marriage among the Dravidian peoples of Southern India. It is not quite clear whether this ceremony confers the rights of a husband on the *manaválan*, or bridegroom. Whether it does so or not, on the fourth day he is required to divorce her by cutting in two the cloth which she wears. The ceremonies having all been performed in the house where she and her family reside, the *manaválan* departs and has no more to do with her. The next business is to get her a real husband. It is arranged by the *káranavan*, or head of the family, with the head of the bridegroom's family. No religious formality is required, as with the previous rite. All that is necessary is the consent of the bride and bridegroom and of their respective families. In South Malabar husband and wife do not even live together. The wife continues to reside with her own family, and the husband visits her there. In North Malabar a special ceremony is performed, after which the bridegroom is allowed to take the bride to live at his house; but (and this is important) in case of his death she must leave the house and return to her own home at once,

before his body is carried out. She has neither part nor lot in the funeral ceremonies, nor in any property of her husband. Both in North and South Malabar either party may terminate the union and contract a new one at pleasure. It is matter of dispute whether a woman may have more than one husband (and consequently whether a husband may have more than one wife) at the same time. The older accounts affirmed it. Nowadays it is fiercely denied, though there is distinct evidence of it at a recent date in Travancore. The probability is that this was the custom, but that it is dying out under modern influences.¹ "In consequence of this strange manner of propagating the species," we are told, "no Nair knows his father, and every man looks upon his sister's children as his heirs. He indeed looks upon them with the same fondness that fathers in other parts of the world have for their own children; and he would be considered an unnatural monster were he to show such signs of grief at the death of a child, which, from long cohabitation and love with its mother, he might suppose to be his own, as he did at the death of a child of his sister. A man's mother manages his family; and after her death his eldest sister assumes the direction. Brothers almost always live under the same roof; but if one of the family separates from the rest he is always accompanied by his favourite sister. . . . A man's movable property after his death is divided among the sons and daughters of all his sisters. His landed estate is managed by the eldest

¹ *Madras Govt. Mus. Bull.* iii. 33, 34, 228 sqq.; *Ind. Census*, 1901 (Cochin), xx. 152, 160; (Travancore), xxvi. 327 sqq.; *J. A. I.* xii. 288 sqq.; Thurston, 115 sqq.

male of the family ; but each individual has a right to a share of the income." ¹

Now the way in which the Nâyars supply the sexual needs of the Nambútiris is by providing them with consorts who, not being married by Brahman rites, are not regarded as legitimate wives by the Nambútiris, though the union is quite regular by Nâyar custom. The Brahman rule of hypergamy is entirely in harmony with this, for a Brahman may have sexual relations with a woman of any caste. Among many Nâyar families the women mate with none but Nambútiris, and all Nâyar women must mate either with Nambútiris or with Nâyars. The children of such unions, whether with Nambútiris or with Nâyars, reckon as Nâyars, and belong to the mother's family and clan. A Nambútiri father cannot therefore touch his own children by his Nâyar consort without pollution, which requires ceremonial bathing to remove.² Similar marriage customs are followed by other castes in the south of India.³

The fact that the children do not belong to the father's kin leads in extreme cases to father and son's being found in arms against one another. The population of the Mortlock Islands is divided into stocks or kins. Each kin inhabits a separate district and forms a little state. As the children belong to the mother's stock each of these districts comprises the group of persons exclusively tracing descent from the same maternal ancestor. It also comprises as residents

¹ Buchanan, *Journey*, ii. 412. Cf. *Madras Govt. Mus. Bull.* iii. 45; *Ind. Cens.* 1901, xx. 154 sqq.

² *Madras Govt. Mus. Bull.* iii. 67, 225.

³ In addition to the authorities cited in previous notes, see Mateer, 172, 82, 87, 103.

more or less permanent the husbands of women of the stock ; for the rule of exogamy prevails, and the men who are thus married to women of another stock are required to take up their abode with them and cultivate their land. Beside this, however, they do not cease to possess their own land at their own home, the produce of which for the most part they bring to their wives' families. Only elder men and chiefs are allowed to bring their wives and children to live with them ; but such wives and children do not cease to belong to their own home and stock ; the children as they grow up very often visit it ; the sons cultivate property there which belongs to them ; and their allegiance is due to it. The writer to whom we are indebted for the information states generally of the Caroline Islands (but apparently his statement is to be understood more definitely of the social arrangements of the Mortlock Islanders) that "the children are real children only to the mother ; to the father on the other hand they are strangers not belonging to his kin. In case of war between two kins father and son take opposite sides as enemies."¹ The population of Malekula, one of the islands of the New Hebrides, appears to be similarly organised. Though members of more stocks than one may live mingled in the same village, the villages to which they properly belong are well known, for "in speaking of the men of a village natives never forget to tell you the villages to which the different individuals belong." Descent is reckoned through the mother ; in war the children take the side of her kin, "even although they

¹ Wilken, *Verwantschap*, 756, citing an article by Kubary in the *Mitt. der geog. Gesellschaft in Hamburg*.

may live in another village.”¹ Among the Papuas about Blanche Bay a man’s sons follow their maternal uncle, and oppose their father and his kindred in battle.²

Many cases of personal combat between father and son have been collected by Mr. Potter in his book on *Sohrab and Rustem* from literature and popular tradition in various parts of the world, especially from the older civilised countries of Europe and Southern Asia. The learned author traces them with great probability to the customs involved in the reckoning of matrilineal descent. In most cases, it is true, the antagonists engage one another in ignorance of their relationship. This is natural, since the tales have usually received the form in which they are now told among peoples no longer in the stage of motherright. To such peoples a combat between father and son would seem unnatural, and must be explained away. An archaic custom, to be considered more fully hereafter, by which women received transitory lovers, has favoured the prevalent type of explanation. Many of the examples of combat brought forward in Mr. Potter’s work, exhibit the combatants as champions on opposite sides in a war between two peoples, and may be referred to customs of the kind just illustrated. There are, however, a certain number defiant of such a classification. Among them is a legend of the Ingush of the Caucasus, not mentioned by Mr. Potter. It relates that a certain Chopa consorted in the forest with a supernatural lady, who bore him two daughters. To put his courage to proof on one occasion she left

¹ *Rep. Australian Ass.* iv. 698, 706.

² *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 352, quoting Hahl.

him alone in the forest, warning him that at midnight he would see the Forest-man, another supernatural being who haunted its gloomy depths. Accordingly at midnight he met the monster, and at once fired on him, wounding him fatally. The dying monster revealed himself as the brother of the lady with whom Chopa dwelt. She herself afterwards cast it in his teeth that he had murdered her brother. But she did not refuse to continue cohabitation on that account, and a son was born as the result. Fearful that he might avenge his uncle's death, Chopa, as his son grew up, ceased to resort to the forest. His forecast was justified; for one day he met his son; a struggle ensued; and the son left his father, not indeed slain, but wounded and robbed, by way of vengeance for his uncle's death.¹

This is no mere story of a battle between contending peoples; it is an example of a much more poignant character. We may disregard the supernatural elements of the tale as not for our present purpose relevant. The tribes of the Caucasus have now long since passed from motherright, but there linger among them more than one relic of the former social condition. The blood-feud is an institution not peculiar to tribes reckoning descent through females; and it is still in force. By virtue of its requirements every member of a kin, one of whom had suffered at the hands of a member of another kin, was bound to avenge the wrong upon the latter kin. Such is the solidarity between members of a kin that vengeance might be taken upon any member of the offending kin, though he might be personally quite innocent. In the

¹ Darinsky, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 192, citing Achrijeff.

growth of civilisation vengeance has gradually come to be concentrated upon the offender only. Under motherright relatives through the mother were alone liable to the duty of vengeance ; and where the father or a member of his kin was guilty, he would not be spared in pursuit of the end in view. It may be confidently said that a few generations ago an Ingush would not have scrupled—indeed, would have regarded it as his duty—to avenge his kin even upon his own father, just as Chopa's son does, if not in a more extreme fashion.

The subject of the blood-feud is so important in this connection that it is worth while following it further. In so doing we will confine ourselves to some of those cases in which our reports bring out the position of the husband and father in strong contrast to his wife and her kin, including his children. Starting then from the Caucasus, among the Chechen (a tribe related to the Ingush) the murderer of a son, although he might be subjected to no blood-feud or ransom, was compelled formally to make his peace with the relations of the victim's mother ; and in fact it sometimes happened that the other sons (where there were any) avenged their brother's death on their own father. Among the Kumiks if one murdered his brother by a different mother a blood-feud arose between him and the surviving brothers born of the mother of the murdered man. Blood-feud cannot arise between members of the same kin ; hence if a brother by the same mother were murdered there would of course be none. In southern Daghestan the murderer of a wife was required to pay her kinsmen ransom ; and if she left sons by him they shared

in the sum paid.¹ If a Chevsur husband murder his wife, he is required to pay blood-money to her brother.² In our own island among the ancient Welsh, the law declared that when a man was murdered compensation for the personal injury or indignity to him (called *saraad*) was due as well as the *galanas* or blood-money, compensation for his value as a member of the stock. Of the *saraad* or compensation for the personal affront the wife was entitled to a share. In the *galanas* or compensation to the stock she had no interest: it was divided among his relatives. In the same way if a wife were slain her husband obtained a share of the *saraad*, but to the *galanas* he had no claim. And inasmuch as the liability to pay was commensurate with the right to receive *galanas* neither husband nor wife was liable for homicide by the other.³

Turning to the African continent we shall find the same rule in even a more startling form, for mother-right is still in full force over a large part of its area, and where that stage has been passed much more than traces linger. The Beni Amer on the shores of the Red Sea and in the Barka valley have accepted Islam, and with it of course a very different method of social organisation from that of mother-right, but not without concessions to the older family ties. Thus when a woman is murdered, the duty of revenge falls not on her husband but on her blood-relations.⁴ Further to the south, the Kunáma have not yet wholly surrendered to the Mohammedan propaganda, and

¹ Darinsky, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 196, 197.

² Kovalevsky, *L'Anthropologie*, iv. 273.

³ *Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales*, 109, 110, 112, 113, 199, 226, 253, 342, 364, 398, 554, 555. All the Welsh codes were practically the same in this respect.

⁴ Munzinger, 321.

even among converts the acceptance of the new faith is superficial. A Kunáma husband never avenges his wife's death unless the murder be committed in his presence. That duty falls in the first place on her children, failing them on her brothers by the same mother or on her sister's son. Conversely, neither a man's father nor his children are responsible for him, but his brothers by the same mother or his sister's son; and they pay or receive as the case may be the price of blood. The father who kills or sells his own child is brought to account by the child's uncle on the mother's side.¹

On the other side of the continent in Gaboon and in Ashanti we are told that when a woman gets into a "palaver," or lawsuit, her own family and not her husband becomes involved.² In German South-west Africa the old matrilineal organisation of the Herero in *oma-anda* (pl. of *eanda*), or clans, is in process of supersession by a corresponding patrilineal organisation in *otuzo* (pl. of *oruzo*), which has taken over most of the characteristic rights and duties of the *oma-anda*. The blood-feud, however, remains in the *eanda*, and has not yet passed to the *oruzo*. Consequently if a father neglect a child so that it dies—nay, apparently if his wife or child die without any fault on his part—he is compelled to pay compensation to his wife's kin.³ Further north, among the Mandombe the husband on his wife's death, whatever may be the cause of death, pays a blood-fine to her relatives. Among the

¹ Munzinger, 488, 490, 499, 503.

² Bowdich, 437, 260.

³ Dannert, 10; Kohler, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 307, quoting authorities.

Ganguellas when a woman dies in childbed, her husband pays not only the expense of burial but also compensation to her kin; if he fail in doing so, he becomes their slave.¹ The Wazaramo of the Lake Region also have a custom that the parents of a woman who dies in childbed demand a certain sum from "the man that killed their daughter."² The Baganda attribute death in childbed to adultery. In such a case the woman's relatives fine the husband, because they say they did not marry her to two men, and he has allowed her adultery by negligence. The fine is two women, or two cows two goats two hoes and two bark-cloths.³ The Bambala, inhabiting the Congo State between the rivers Inzia and Kwilu, require a husband "to abstain from his wife for about a year after childbirth, during which time the child is suckled; nor may he resume intercourse without his father-in-law's permission, which is granted on payment of *Kutusa Mwana*, a present of two goats. It is believed that an infraction of this rule would prove fatal to the woman, and in the event of her death soon after childbirth the husband is accused of being the cause and heavily fined, or more often compelled to submit to the poison ordeal."⁴ The permission of the father-in-law is an indication of the decay of strict matrilineal organisation. Among the Basanga on the south-west of Lake Moeru children other than those of slaves belong entirely to the mother and her kin. Consequently, if a child were "lost or devoured by wild

¹ Kohler, *loc. cit.* citing Serpa Pinto.

² Burton, *Lake Regions*, i. 115.

³ Rev. J. Roscoe, *J. A. I.* xxxii. 39.

Torday and Joyce, *J. A. I.* xxxv. 410.

animals, the father would have to pay its value to his wife's relations."¹

The child is regarded by many of the African peoples as so entirely the property of the kin that he is liable to be given in pledge for their debts. Among the Bavili "the mother alone has the right to pawn her child; but she must first consult the father, so that he may have the chance of giving her goods to save the pledging. The father cannot pledge his child. The brother can pawn the sister, or the uncle his niece, the mother being dead. But the father being alive the uncle must first go to him to give him the chance of helping him out of his difficulty by means of a loan of goods. . . . A person is never free from being pawned in this way." The father, however, always has the right to ransom the child.² This is doubtless one stage on the way to fatherright. On the Ivory Coast the Alladians take account only of the maternal descent. As among the Bavili, there is no distinction between legitimate and illegitimate children. The whole organisation is based on uterine parentage. "The father's authority scarcely exists, and from the civil point of view he is not the parent of his children." Children cannot be sold, but they may be pledged for the debts of their *etiocos* or kindred. The father cannot pledge them: he is not one of the kin. But the maternal uncle may do so, without any limit of age; though if he seek to pledge a married niece he must first give her husband the opportunity of making the necessary loan. The father cannot be made responsible for his children's debts; the mother is

¹ Arnot, *Garenganze*, 242.

² Dennett, *Journ. Afr. Soc.* i. 266.

responsible, and may even be taken in pledge for them. But she cannot pledge them for her debts without the authority of her brother, or other the eldest *etioco*.¹ Among the Gã of the Gold Coast the uncles or aunts, especially if older than the mother, can take the children away, make use of them, pledge or give them in marriage at their pleasure.²

On the other side of the Indian Ocean and on many of the Pacific islands the alien character of husband and father is as strongly marked as in any African tribe. On Yaluit, one of the Marshall Islands, there is no distinction between legitimate and illegitimate children. On Nauru, another of the same group, although fatherright has begun to develop and has succeeded in excluding illegitimate children from their mother's inheritance, motherright is still so strong that when a man is slain his children are excluded from the weregeld, which falls to his brothers and sisters.³ In the Talauer Islands of the East Indies in case of the wife's adultery compensation is made on the part of the guilty man to her parents. Among the aboriginal tribes of Manipur "on the death of a wife her father demands *munda* (literally *bone-money*) from the husband, or if he be dead the late husband's nearest relative. On the death of a child *munda* is also demanded by the wife's father."⁴ In the case of two of these tribes, the Kukis and the Kabui Nagas, the sum payable on a wife's death is the same as that

¹ *Journ. Afr. Soc.* i. 411; Clozel and Villamur, 399. The Brignans are a stage nearer to full fatherright. The maternal uncle's right among them does not arise until the father's death (*Ibid.* 461).

² *Globus*, xciv. 137.

³ Kohler, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 423, 422, citing authorities.

⁴ *J. A. I.* xvi. 138, 355.

originally paid for her as bride at the time of marriage.¹ On the Tami Islands when a child dies the father makes presents to the mother's kin. He calls it "buying the child"; but obviously, as Dr. Kohler remarks, the father is held responsible for the death, and redeems his liability with a gift.² The Maori father is in a much worse plight, for though descent is reckoned in the paternal line fatherright is hardly yet followed out to its logical consequences. When a child dies or even meets with an accident unattended with fatal results the mother's relatives headed by her brother turn out in force against the father. He must defend himself until he is wounded. Blood once drawn the combat ceases; but the attacking party plunders his house and appropriates everything on which hands can be laid, finally sitting down to a feast provided by the bereaved father.³ The entire clan in fact is held to have been injured because one of its members (as under uterine descent the child would be) has suffered, and his father (who does not belong to the clan) is held responsible and makes in this way compensation.

¹ *J. A. I.* xxxi. 305. If the parents be dead, the husband has to pay their heirs.

² *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 351. A similar custom in Fiji, *Anthropos*, i. 93.

³ *Out New Zealand*, 110; Wilken, *Verwants.* 757, citing Bastian. So Mr. Shortland relates that "on a certain occasion when the wife of a young chief had been guilty of infidelity, her father uncles and other relations to the number of nearly one hundred made a descent on the village of her husband and father-in-law, and remained there three days feasting on their pigs, which they caught and killed without opposition." The reason they gave for acting in this manner was that the wife had been tempted to commit the fault in order to avenge herself for her husband's neglect (Shortland, 235). The blame of her misconduct was thus laid to his charge and reparation exacted by her insulted relatives.

An illustration still more abhorrent to our feelings of the alien character of the father is given by Mr. J. C. Callbreath as occurring within his own experience among the Tahl-tan of British Columbia. "Kinship," he says, "so far as marriage or inheritance of property goes, is with the mother exclusively; and the father is not considered a relative by blood. At his death his children inherit none of his property, which all goes to the relatives on his mother's side. Even though a man's father or his children may be starving, they would get none of his property at his death. I have known an instance where a rich Indian would not go out, or even contribute to send others out, to search for his aged and blind father who was lost and starving in the mountains. Not counting his father as a relative, he said: 'Let his people go and search for him.' Yet this man was an over-average good Indian."¹ The Haida of Queen Charlotte Islands are divided into two strictly exogamic clans, the Raven and the Eagle. Marriage within the clan was viewed "almost as incest is by us. On the other hand, the members of the opposite clan were frequently considered downright enemies. Even husbands and wives did not hesitate to betray each other to death in the interests of their own families. At times it almost appears as if each marriage were an alliance between opposite tribes; a man begetting offspring rather for his wife than for himself, and being inclined to see his real descendants rather in his sister's children than in his own. They it was who succeeded to his position and carried down his family line."²

¹ Quoted by Dr. Dawson, *Ann. Rep. Geolog. Survey Canada*, 1887, p. 7 of offprint.

² Swanton, *Jesup Exped.* v. 62.

Enough has now been said to exhibit the alien position occupied among matrilineal peoples by the father in regard to his children. Other aspects of the social organisation will come under discussion hereafter. Meanwhile, it remains to complete the picture by showing how the duties of head of the family are fulfilled, and in whom the authority—or, according to the technical term, the *potestas*—is vested. We have seen that among many of the African peoples the mother's brother has greater rights over a child than the father, and that the duty of blood-revenge falls to him, even against the father. Wherever progress has been made in the organisation of the family, and motherright is still the basis of organisation, as over perhaps the greater part of the African continent, the supreme power is vested in the mother's brother or maternal uncle. In Loango the uncle is addressed as *Tate* (father). He exercises paternal authority over his nephew, whom he can even sell. The father has no power; and if the husband and wife separate the children follow the mother as belonging to her brother. They inherit from their mother; the father's property on the other hand goes at his death to his brother (by the same mother) or to his sister's sons.¹

The customs of the peoples of the Lower Congo are the same. Around the missionary settlement of Wathen a woman is married by means of a bride-price, the bulk of which is paid to her mother's family, though the father receives a portion. But the wife is not bought as a slave is bought. The husband acquires merely the right to her companionship, and

¹ Bastian, *Loango-Küste*, i. 166.

in case of her death to another wife in her place. He has no control over his children by her. They belong to their mother's family; and as they grow up they go to live with their uncles.¹ Among the Igalwas the father's authority over his children is very slight. "The really responsible male relative," says Miss Kingsley, "is the mother's eldest brother. From him must leave to marry be obtained for either girl or boy; to him and the mother must the present be taken which is exacted on the marriage of a girl; and should the mother die, on him and not on the father, lies the responsibility of rearing the children; they go to his house, and he treats and regards them as nearer and dearer to himself than his own children, and at his death, after his own brothers by the same mother, they become his heirs."² Two kinds of marriage are known among the Bambala. The first is child-marriage. "A little boy of his own free will may declare that a certain little girl is his wife; by this simple act he acquires a prescriptive right to her. He visits his future parents-in-law and takes them insignificant presents. When he is of mature age he gives a larger present, of the value of about 2000 *djimbu* (a small shell of the species *Olivella Nana*), and then he is allowed to cohabit with her. Their children belong to the eldest maternal uncle. This form of marriage is attended by no special ceremony. If the girl, when of age, is unwilling, he cannot coerce her; but if she marries another man, the latter must make him a present of several thousand *djimbu*." The other form of marriage is contracted between adults. The man pays a bride-price from 10,000 to 15,000

¹ Bentley, ii. 333.

² Kingsley, *Trav.* 224.

djimbu to the father or maternal uncle of the bride. In this case the children belong to the father ; but "parents have little authority over their children, who leave them at a very early age." "A man's property is inherited by the eldest son of his eldest sister, or in default by his eldest brother." The mother's brother is the guardian of his sister's children. Here, as we have already seen reason to think, fatherright is beginning to make inroads on the original organisation. This is confirmed by the further statement that "kinship is reckoned very far on the female side," but "in the male line not beyond the uncle and grandfather,"¹ indicating that some kinship is now reckoned on the paternal side. The Bayaka, neighbours of the Bambala, and like them a Bantu people, dwell in small villages, often consisting of not more than two or three huts, presided over by a chief. "Each married woman has a separate hut where she lives with her children, and the husband moves from one to the other ; unmarried men live together, several in a hut." "A child belongs to the village of his maternal uncle." The inhabitants of a village regard themselves as akin. It is added that "relationship on the female side is considered closer than that on the male side."² Among the Bangala of the Cassange Valley the chieftainship is elective. This is not unusual where female kinship prevails; for primogeniture has not yet developed, and among a band of equal brothers he who has proved himself the most capable is often preferred. Our information as to the Bangala is very defective. We are told: "The chief is chosen from three families in rotation.

¹ *J. A. I.* xxxv. 410, 411.

² *Ibid.* xxxvi. 43, 45.

A chief's brother inherits in preference to his son. The sons of a sister belong to her brother; and he often sells his nephews to pay his debts."¹ It may be said generally that motherright prevails throughout Angola. "The closest relation is that of mother and child, the next that of nephew or niece and uncle or aunt. The uncle owns his nephews and nieces; he can sell them, and they are his heirs, not only in private property, but also in the chiefship, if he be a chief."² The father has, among the Kimbunda, no power over his children, even when they are young. Only his children by slaves are considered his property and can inherit from him.³

To avoid further repetition we may leave the foregoing to stand as examples of the organisation of the western Bantu. They exhibit the mother's brother or maternal uncle as the head of the family with almost absolute power over his sister's children, in which the authority of the father is however beginning to make breaches. Among the Negroes I have already referred to the Alladians. It may be added that the eldest of the *etiocos*, whether man or woman, is the head of the family. Although during the father's lifetime the children reside with their mother in his house, on his death the sons go to live with their mother's brother, unless he consent to her retaining them while very young; the daughters remain with her, but under their uncle's tutelage. Polygamy prevails, but the children of the same father by different mothers scarcely consider that there is any tie between them. Marriages are arranged by the *etiocos* in council; and

¹ Livingstone, *Miss. Trav.* 434.

² Chatelain, 8.

³ Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 23, citing Magyar.

apparently unless the bride be a mere child the bride-price is paid to them.¹ The Ewhe-speaking peoples also trace kinship through females, except the upper classes of Dahomey, among which male kinship is the rule. "The eldest brother is the head of the family, and his heir the brother next in age to himself; if he has no brother his heir is the eldest son of his eldest sister . . . Members of a family have a right to be fed and clothed by the family head; and the latter has in his turn a right to pawn and in some cases to sell them. The family collectively is responsible for all crimes and injuries to person or property committed by any one of its members, and each member is assessable for a share of the compensation to be paid. On the other hand, each member of the family receives a share of the compensation paid to it for any crime or injury committed against the person or property of any of its members. Compensation is always demanded from the family instead of from the individual wrong-doer, and is paid to the family instead of to the individual wronged."²

Among the Ewhe of Anglo in Upper Guinea the maternal uncle has more authority over his sister's sons than their father. Since they succeed to him at his death he requires from them labour and support in his lifetime. The nephew accompanies his uncle on trading journeys, carrying provisions cowries and merchandise. Under his uncle's tuition he thus gradually learns to trade, besides other useful work such as weaving and so forth. By-and-by he begins to trade

¹ Clozel, 391, 392, 393, 394, 397. As to the Yoruba and the Egbas, see Ellis, *Yoruba*, 176; *Journ. Afr. Soc.* i. 88.

² Ellis, *Ewe*, 207, 208, 209.

on behalf of his father or uncle, accounts to him for the proceeds and receives a share of the profit. And at length his father and uncle together negotiate a bride for him. The mother has naturally the charge and teaching of her daughter; but the father is consulted as to her marriage and cheerfully takes his share of the brandy and other gifts furnished by the bridegroom.¹ The Fanti Customary Laws have been expounded by Mr. Sarbah, a native barrister, in an elaborate treatise which throws much light on the present condition of the Fanti family. Without discussing details, many of which are foreign to our present purpose, it may be stated generally that the Fanti are matrilineal. The head of the family is usually (but not always) the eldest male member in the line of descent. He has control over all the members; he is their natural guardian; he alone can sue or be sued, as the representative of the family, respecting claims on the family possessions. Within his compound the head of a family reigns supreme not only over his younger brothers and sisters and the children of the latter but also over his own wives and children. But he cannot pawn his child without the concurrence of the mother's relations; and children who have left his compound to reside with their maternal uncle are no longer under his power: they are wholly subject to their uncle.² The Negro has carried these customs in even a more archaic form to South America. The Bush Negro husband in Surinam does not live with his wife and often has wives in several different places. The maternal uncle supplies his place in the family.³

¹ *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxxviii. 43.

² Sarbah, 31, 39, 50, 86, 5, 9.

³ Potter, 115, citing *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xi. 420.

Among the peoples of the Eastern side of the African continent the Kunáma of northern Abyssinia are as we have seen not yet wholly emancipated from the stage of motherright. The father has a right to his son's earnings until the son marries. But his power extends no further : a child's life and liberty belong to the maternal uncle. In case of death the inheritance goes first to the uterine brother, then to the sister's sons by seniority, failing them to the sisters. The Barea and Baze, who are still without doubt matrilineal hold the relationship between a man and his sister's children to be very close, but they entirely disregard that between father and son. It is the more remarkable that they agree in this since the sexual morality of these two tribes is very different. Among the latter the matrimonial tie is very slight, and adultery is not resented ; while among the former the reverse is the case, and adultery is very rare. Both prefer as children daughters to sons ; a woman returns to her mother's house for her first delivery ; her son often receives her brother's or father's name ; her brother can sell her child, but her husband cannot.¹ Among the Bogos when a youth comes of age he presents himself before daybreak at the house of his mother's brother, who comes forth, ceremonially shaves his head, gives him his blessing and a gift of a lance and a young cow.² There could hardly be a plainer recognition of the uncle's position as head of the family. In defiance of

¹ Munzinger, 477, 490, 527, 528. See however the Table of Kinship, p. 448, which seems to relate only to the Kunama.

² Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 16, citing Munzinger. Compare Kilhwch's application to his cousin King Arthur to cut his hair and grant him a boon (*Y Llyvyr Coch*, 102 ; Nutt's *Mabinogion*, 103).

Moslem law, to which the Suahili of the east coast have nominally submitted, Suahili children are the property not of the parents but of the mother's brother who can sell any or all of his nephews or nieces. Popular opinion, indeed, compels him to do so, if it be necessary.¹ Their neighbours, the still heathen Wanyika who occupy the hinterland of Mombasa, follow the same rule. "Children become the property of their mother, or rather of her brother to be disposed of as he pleases: the only one who has no voice in the matter is the putative father."²

We have already seen that the Nâyars of Southern India are in the stage of motherright. In theory the ancestral property is indivisible, belonging to the entire family, and no one can acquire individual property, except movables and jewels obtained by gift or otherwise. Division however under modern influences is coming more and more into practice. "The family property is enjoyed by all in common as a kind of commonwealth or civil family, administered by a *káranavan*, or head of the family—either the maternal uncle or the eldest brother. The common property is vested in him as executive officer or trustee, but without power to make arbitrary alienation. He is authorised to alienate it only to meet necessities, in order to save the property from greater loss, or for some similar purpose." It is the *káranavan* who arranges his sister's matrimonial affairs, and subject perhaps to her consent changes her "husband" from time to time. It has been mentioned that the wife has no part in the funeral rites of her husband. The duty of performing funeral rites is always among the

¹ Burton, *Zanzibar*, i. 437.

² *Id.* ii. 88.

propertied castes of India as elsewhere connected with the right to succession. "A man's sister's son, and a woman's own son, as their respective nearest blood-relatives, perform (if their age permits) the funeral rites on their decease, and observe mourning remaining one year without shaving or cutting the hair."¹ It is accordingly on them that the movables of the deceased devolve. The Malays of the Padang Highlands of Sumatra have institutions bearing many points of similarity. On marriage neither husband nor wife changes abode. The husband merely visits the wife, and the fact of his conjugal relation to her is disclosed only in the form and intimacy of his visits. As in the case of the kindred Orang Mamaq, the husband has no rights over his children, who belong wholly to the wife's *suku*, or clan; her eldest brother is the head of the family and exercises the rights and duties of a father to her children.² The husband of a Papuan woman about Blanche Bay has a right to his wife's labour, and wields certain authority over her. But the power over life and limb is vested in her uncle or her brother. It is even her brother, not her husband, who punishes with death her adultery. He makes good to the husband the price he has paid for her and takes his part against the adulterer. She does not wholly leave her family on marriage; it is to them she looks for nursing in case of sickness. The husband has no rights over any property she may leave. If she die childless it returns to her family; if there be children, both they and her property go to the owner of the *potestas*, that is to say, her uncle or

¹ *J. A. I.* xii. 292.

² Wilken, *Verwantschap*, 678; *Bijdragen*, xxxix. 43.

brother. Her ordinary oath is by her brother; her husband's is by his brother-in-law. Her sons as we have seen take their uncle's side in war against their own father and his relations. Though the father often names his children the right to do so is also exercised by the maternal uncle. On the Tami Islands the masculine relatives of a woman dispose of her in marriage; but the decisive word belongs to her brothers. They are called the owners of her children, who though they may reside in their father's village are only regarded as strangers there. In their uncle's village they have rights of inheritance and there alone can they attain the highest positions. Both about Blanche Bay and on the Tami Islands the dignity of chief is inherited by the nephew from his mother's brother.¹

In Melanesi kindred is reckoned through the mother. On the Gazelle Peninsula of New Pomerania the mother's brother is the head of the family. The father cannot decide anything about his children. He rules his mother and sisters; but he has the disposal of his wife only when he has paid the bride-price. Even then she can leave him for the most trifling cause and seek refuge and protection among her own kin. Thus wife and children do not really belong to the husband and father, but to the mother's maternal uncle or brother. Neither the wife nor the children belong to the husband's clan, nor do they inherit from him. At death the property of husband or wife goes to the relatives of

¹ *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 348, 349, 344, 352, 351, 353. Similar customs seem to obtain among the Wedau and Wamira of Bartle Bay; but our information is not nearly so definite (*Colonial Reports*, No. 168, *Brit. New Guinea*, 1896, 40).

the deceased; the male children of a woman succeed to her brother.¹ On the island of Efate in the New Hebrides a kindred or family reckoning descent from the same mother in the female line is called *nakainanga*. It has no chief, but the older male members exercise "a kind of parental authority over it." "All the members of a *nakainanga* in a particular place were to a large extent responsible for the conduct of any one member; for instance, they had to pay a fine incurred by him, if he could not pay it himself." Hence it was the duty of a man to instruct his sister's son, not his own son, because he was not of the same *nakainanga* and the father would not be responsible for him. The chief of a village has a right to appoint his successor. He appoints not his own son, "but in preference to all others his sister's son, who by the law of the *nakainanga* is considered nearer and dearer to him than his own son, and to be his proper heir."² The claims of a nephew upon his uncle have been carried to extraordinary lengths in some of the Melanesian islands, as in Fiji, where a maternal uncle can hardly deny his nephew anything he chooses to demand. Everywhere the relation of uncle and nephew is more intimate than that of father and son. Speaking generally a man's property at death descends to his sister's children, usually rather to the male children. There is now a tendency, however, to substitute inheritance from the father.³ In the western islands of Torres Straits motherright has given way to fatherright probably within the last

¹ Father Josef Meier, *Anthropos*, ii. 380.

² Rev. D. Macdonald, in *Rep. Austr. Ass.* iv. 722, 723.

³ Codrington, 34, 59, *sqq.*; McLennan, *Studies*, ii. 222, *sqq.*

hundred years. The relation of maternal uncle and nephew still brings with it similar rights and authority to those in Fiji, or even in some respects greater. The relation is called *wadwam* and is reciprocal, no distinction in privileges being drawn between uncle and nephew. The *wadwam* was not merely entitled to take anything belonging to the man to whom he stood in this relation; he might stop a fight in which his *wadwam* was concerned. The *mowai* or guardians of a boy during the initiation ceremonies were his *wadwam*. "It seemed quite clear," says Dr. Rivers, "that the chief *mowai* was the eldest brother of the mother and the second *mowai* was the next in order of seniority either in the family of the mother or in the clan." On the island of Muralug, though under the present patrilineal system the bride's father must give consent to her marriage and receives the bride-price, it is her brother who arranges what presents are to be made in return and other details. The bridegroom must supply a bride in exchange; failing a sister it is the duty of the *wadwam* to give his daughter. Moreover in paying the bride-price the bridegroom's *wadwam* made the actual presentation on both Muralug and Mabuiag. These customs point to the mother's brother as wielding the authority in the former matrilineal stage.¹ The interference of the bride's brother in the arrangements for marriage may perhaps be ascribed to his interest in getting a bride in return.

Among many of the tribes we have mentioned a true family life has hardly yet arisen. It may be said to be in course of formation; the consciousness

¹ Rivers, *Torres Str. Rep.* v. 145, 147, 231.

of kinship exists, but it has not yet become fully organised as we understand it. Relationships are still described by terms which include many others than those we recognise by the names we are obliged to employ as equivalents. Thus the term used by the western islanders of Torres Straits for brother, *tukoiab*, is not only the reciprocal term used by brothers for one another and by sisters for one another; it is also used "for all men of the same generation on the father's side, corresponding to first second and third cousins, etc., through the male side, for all men of the same generation in the mother's clan, for all men of the same generation in the father's mother's clan, for the sons of a brother and sister, for the sons of two sisters."¹ The term *wadwam* had a corresponding extension. It must not be supposed that the consciousness of kinship has not outrun these terms. Men are aware that those whom we should describe as their "own brothers" are nearer to them than those whom we call their third cousins. And doubtless the rights and duties belonging to a *tukoiab* or a *wadwam* are emphasised in the case of these nearer kin. Still the others are by no means excluded from such rights and duties; they may claim the former and be called on to perform the latter. Neither the language nor the law has yet succeeded in defining degrees of relationship more closely. We are accordingly warranted in believing that both language and law represent a stage in the evolution of society when the consciousness of the kinship was vaguer than it has since become.

It is always necessary to bear in mind the differences

¹ Rivers, *Torres Str. Rep.* v. 130.

in value between our terms for degrees of kinship and those of peoples in savagery and barbarism—differences not only of extension but often of exclusion. They are of importance in considering the evolution of kinship. For our present point, however, they are not material: the headship of the kin is vested in some male member whose claims are founded on seniority, on election, or on special qualifications such as wisdom or renown in war. As the family begins to develop within the wider circle of the kin and relationships become more defined, there emerges a head of each inner group owing his position to the same causes and qualifications. The nomenclature of his relations to the female members, whether brother uncle or son, gradually approximates to our conception of those terms, though not precisely coinciding with them until a high degree of civilisation is reached.

Bearing in mind these differences we turn to Australia where the aboriginal population is in a lower degree of savagery than any other race whose institutions have been investigated. The family has hardly begun to be distinguishable from the kin in general. The authority of the father, even among those tribes which have advanced to paternal descent, is non-existent after the early years of childhood. When a boy has attained puberty and passed through the rites which make him an adult member of the clan or the tribe he is as a rule subject only to the authority of the elders in whom the government of the tribe is vested. With a girl the case is somewhat different: She is always *in manu*. Practically, however, the power exercised over her before marriage seems to be limited to the right of

betrothal: after marriage the husband keeps her in subjection. Apart from the father however there is little concentration of authority. Such as there is tends to the hands of those members of the kin who have a direct interest in its exercise. They are as a rule the brothers of the girl or of her mother, who would be entitled on her marriage to obtain a bride in exchange. Among the Dieri the right of betrothal is exercised by the mother with the concurrence of her brothers. Betrothal often takes place in earliest infancy. When the bridegroom is also an infant it is entered into on his behalf by his mother; but in any case of difficulty it would seem that her brothers are called in.¹ Among the Tatathi and Keramin on the Murray River "girls are very frequently promised when children, and when marriageable are taken to the future husband's camp by the mother or mother's brother."² "In the Wollaroi it is the mother who promises her daughter to some man of her selection, but to this rule there is the exception that brothers also exchanged their sisters without the direct interventions of their mothers. . . In cases of elopement with the wife of another man it was the Wollaroi practice for the abductor to stand out before a number of the woman's kindred, who were armed with spears, he having merely a spear for his protection to turn them aside."³ Here we are reminded of the duty of the woman's brothers among the Papuans of Blanche Bay to avenge her adultery; for the word *kindred* probably means her brothers. The reason for the interference of the brothers is given by Mr. Howitt in his account of the customs of the Wakelbura tribe

¹ Howitt, 177, 167.

² *Id.* 195.

³ *Id.* 217.

(now extinct). The Wakelbura mother exercised the right of betrothal as soon as her daughter was born. If the child on growing up consented to the match or had been compelled to it, and afterwards eloped with another man, her brothers "might almost kill her, because they would thereby lose the woman by whose exchange they would obtain a wife for one of them."¹ In none of these cases had the father anything to do with the matter. The growing *patria potestas*, however, has made itself felt among many of the matrilineal tribes; though in most of them the consent of the kindred is required.²

Among the Haida the growth of *patria potestas* has been hindered by the custom, similar to that among the peoples of the Lower Congo, by which the children settle and build houses in the town of their mother's brothers, whose successors in the family organisation they are. The term *dágalañ*, which we translate *brothers*, as used by a woman, was applied to all men of her clan in her own generation. Each of the two clans into which the tribe was divided was subdivided into families. "The fundamental unit of Haida society was the family, and the family chief was the highest functionary. Generally the family chief was also town chief, . . . but the large places were usually inhabited by several families. In this case the town-chief stood first socially among the family chiefs." War might be declared by the chief of any family,

¹ Howitt, 222. In the Mukjarawaint tribe the paternal grandparents had a voice in the disposal of their grand-daughter. But there no doubt the paternal grandfather was the uncle, own or tribal, of the mother, and consequently one of the elder men of the grand-daughter's kin (*Id.* 243).

² *Id.* 210, 216, 227, 243, 251, 260.

and that "without reference to any council ; but it is quite certain that he must have obtained the acquiescence of his house-chiefs if he intended the whole family to participate. In fact, the stories speak of meetings *en masse* to 'talk over' important questions. For each household into which a family was subdivided was a family in miniature, over which the house-chief's power was almost absolute. Once having obtained his position, he was only limited by the other chiefs and the barriers raised by custom. He could call his nephews together to make war on his own account. . . . Success in amassing property generally governed the selection of a new chief of the town the family or the house. It might be the brother, own nephew, or a more distant relation, of the predecessor. Two are known to have succeeded to one position. The election seems to have been a foregone conclusion ; but in so far as any choice was exercised, it appears to have rested in the case of a family or town-chief with the house-chiefs, while the sentiment of a household probably had weight in deciding between claimants to a doubtful position in a single house. Only the town-chief's own family had anything directly to say about his election. A chief's household was made up of those of his own immediate family who had no places for themselves, his nephews his retainers or servants, and the slaves. A man's sisters' sons were his right-hand men. They, or at least one of them, came to live with him when quite young, were trained by him, and spoke or acted for him in all social matters. The one who it was expected would succeed him was often his son-in-law as well."¹

¹ Swanton, *Jesup Exped.* v. 66, 63, 68, 69.

A large number of the aboriginal peoples on the mainland of North America reckoned descent in the female line. Conspicuous among them were the Iroquois. The Iroquoian *gens* or kin was ruled by chiefs of two grades distinguished by Morgan as sachem and common chiefs. The sachem was the official head of the *gens* and was hereditary. The actual occupant of the office was elected by the adult members of the *gens*, male and female, "an own brother or the son of an own sister being most likely to be preferred." In the same way, when a man died, though all his clansmen seem to have had a legal right to share his effects, in practice those effects were appropriated by his nearest relations within the *gens*; that is to say, his own brothers and sisters and maternal uncles divided them. A woman's property was taken by her children and sisters, to the exclusion of her brothers.¹ These rules point to the fact that the family was in course of evolution within the *gens*. If so, an authority was probably developing within that family distinct from the general authority of the sachem, though doubtless subordinate to it. A report made by an official for Indian affairs and including two of the Iroquoian tribes with tribes belonging to the Hurons and Algonkins states that in marriages the brothers and uncles of the woman on the maternal side are consulted as to the proposed match, "and sometimes the father; but this is only a compliment, as his approbation or opposition is of no avail."² Another account, however, attributes the arrangement of the marriage to the mother.³ Morgan

¹ Morgan, *Anc. Soc.* 64, 71, 76.

² McLennan, *Studies*, ii. 339.

³ Kohler, 60, citing Morgan, *League*, 321. Morgan says that

illustrates the position of the maternal uncle among other tribes from usages of the time at which his inquiries were made. "Amongst the Choctas," he says, "if a boy is to be placed at school his uncle, instead of his father, takes him to the mission and makes the arrangement. An uncle among the Winnebagoes may require services of a nephew, or administer correction, which his own father would neither ask nor attempt. In like manner with the Iowas and Otoes an uncle may appropriate to his own use his nephew's horse or his gun or other personal property without being questioned, which his father would have no recognised right to do. But over his nieces this same authority is more significant, from his participation in their marriage contracts, which in many Indian nations are founded upon a consideration in the nature of presents."¹

The foregoing will suffice to identify the persons in whom the *potestas* is vested where mother-right is supreme. In the first instance it vests in the elders of the kin at large. As the consciousness of kin becomes gradually more vivid and defined the elders of the inchoate family absorb the headship of their more immediate kin and administer its concerns. Gradually the headship becomes concentrated in the hands of one man, often chosen by the family from among a small number specially qualified by age experience wisdom or courage, or designated by propinquity of blood to the predecessor in office. The way is thus

the Iroquois recognised "no right in the father to the custody of his children's persons or to their nurture" (McLennan, *Studies*, i. 271, quoting *League*, 327).

¹ Morgan, *Syst. Consang.* 158.

prepared for the transition from mother-right to father-right. Meanwhile, when the family under mother-right emerges the power is found to be wielded not by the husband but by the wife's brothers, or her maternal uncles, a circle constantly narrowing until the definition of these terms approximates to our own, one of whom takes ultimately the lead and appropriates the greater part or sometimes the whole of the *potestas*. Nor does the transition to the reckoning of descent through the father entirely and at once divest him of it. Enough survives in his hands to form very material evidence of the more archaic social organisation which preceded the establishment of father-right.

Such being the social organisation of mother-right, it is obvious that the father is a wholly subordinate personage, whose identity is of comparatively small importance. A juridical system, it has grown out of the consciousness of kin. The origin of the consciousness of kin it is not my purpose here to investigate. However originated, it was confined to kinship through one parent only: the other parent was disregarded. The assertion has often been made that the reason for reckoning kinship exclusively through the mother is that paternity is uncertain. There is undeniably a distinction between maternity and paternity in this respect. As it has been cynically put, maternity is a question of fact, paternity a question of opinion. This, for example, is the cause assigned by the old Dutch writer Schouten for the rules of inheritance among the Nâyars;¹ and since his day it has been assigned for similar rules of many other peoples.

Uncertainty of fatherhood would be a good reason

¹ Schouten, 458, 459.

for reckoning kinship only through females, and for the disinheritance of a man's children in favour of his sister's children, if only tribes whose conjugal relations were as loose as those of the Nâyars reckoned kinship in this way. Motherright, however, is the rule of numerous peoples where there is no reasonable doubt of the paternity: Among the coastal tribes of western Africa from the equator to the Congo the husband buys his wives ; they are taken into his dwelling and belong to him. The laws against adultery are very severe. The punishment is death, and it is sometimes carried out, though now generally commuted for a fine. Severe as the law is, it is increased in severity by the exceedingly wide definition of the offence. It is "often only a matter of laying your hand, even in self-defence from a virago, on a woman, or brushing against her in the path."¹ In Mayumbe, so jealously are the married women guarded that the husband may even put them to death if any other man so much as touch them unknowingly.² Yet, as we have seen, motherright is the law ; and at the father's death the children obtain nothing of his property, save what he may have previously made over to them. The Ondonga of German South-west Africa also reckon descent through the mother only, and children inherit nothing from the father. On marriage the husband establishes a werft of his own and takes his wife to live there. Polygyny is practised wherever a man has the means to do so, but on the woman's part strict fidelity is required. Contrary to the customs of many savage and barbarous natives, the woman married for the first time is expected to be a

¹ Kingsley, *Trav.* 497.

² Bastian, *Loango-Küste*, i. 168.

virgin.¹ Among the Ondonga therefore in ordinary cases there can be little doubt on the subject of paternity.

On the other side of the continent the Wayao and Mang'anja of the Shire Highlands trace descent through the mother. Like other Bantu nations they practise polygyny whenever circumstances permit. But the husband requires strict fidelity on the part of his wife. Adultery is looked upon as a very serious crime; and where the man is not speared or shot, he is made to pay damages, or is sold into slavery. The wife, says Miss Werner, speaking in general terms but with special reference to these tribes, "is frequently let off with a warning the first time, but for a second offence either killed or divorced and sent back to her relatives, who in such a case must return whatever present was made at the marriage. Sometimes she drinks *mwavi* [*i.e.*, submits to the ordeal of poison], and is of course accounted guilty if she dies."² We have already noted the rarity of adultery among the Barea of northern Abyssinia. How easily broken is the conjugal tie on the Gazelle Peninsula of New Pomerania we also know. Yet while it lasts the husband watches over his wife with jealousy. He has all the more need since there is, owing to the prevailing polygamy, a dearth of unmarried women. Men who cannot afford to buy a wife seek other men's wives. They lay constant snares for them, make use of philtres and every sort of enticement. The husband therefore if he wish to preserve his wife's fidelity follows her about and takes every means to

¹ Steinmetz, *Rechtsverhält.* 328, 335, 330, 332.

² Werner, 265.

protect her chastity. In case of adultery the punishment is severe ; both parties were before the German occupation put to death without more ado. Countless wars have been occasioned by adultery.¹

Allowance must of course be made for the persistence of a juridical system after the reason for it has passed away. If we found motherright wherever there was uncertainty of paternity we might perhaps be right in assuming that when we found it where there was none, it was merely a survival from a stage in which morality was laxer. This, however, is by no means the case. The Káfirs of the Hindu-Kush practise the strictest fatherright but that Káfir would be of a highly sporting disposition who ventured to stake much on the authenticity of any child of whom he was legally the father. Sir George Robertson says : " Young women are very immoral, not because their natural disposition is either better or worse than that of women of other tribes and races, but because public opinion is all in favour of what may be called 'gallantry.' When a woman is discovered in an intrigue a great outcry is made, and the neighbours rush to the scene with much laughter. A goat is sent for on the spot for a peace-making feast between the gallant and the husband. Of course the neighbours also partake of the feast ; the husband and wife both look very happy, and so does every one else except the lover, who has to pay for the goat, and who knows that he or his family must also pay the full penalty, sooner or later." The customary penalty is six cows. " There are several households in Kámdesh whose sole property in cows consists of the

¹ Father Josef Meier, *Anthropos*, ii. 380.

number thus paid." "Divorce is easy," he goes on subsequently to say. "A man sells his wife or sends her away. . . . If a woman behaves very badly, and her husband, although he dislikes her, cannot dispose of her, he may send her back to her parents. I remember an instance of this kind. The woman was the prettiest I ever saw in Káfiristán, and would have been considered a beauty anywhere; but she was so bad and troublesome that no one would take her. She was sent back to her father's house. If any one were found intriguing with her he would have to pay the usual fine to the husband. If a girl were born to her, the woman would keep her; if a son, the husband would claim him."¹

In many countries indeed where fatherright is well settled as the juridical system husbands are far from squeamish over what we should call their wives' virtue, or over their children's paternity. As the general subject of marital complacency will be more fully treated in a subsequent chapter we will confine our attention here to a few examples having regard more particularly to the relation between the woman's husband and the children she bears. I pass over the *jus primæ noctis*, of which examples are to be found in Indian custom.² Subject to any uncertainty arising from this cause, the husband might perhaps be able to count upon begetting his wife's children. As a matter of fact he is often quite careless on the subject. The Bâwariyas, a hunting and criminal tribe in the

¹ Robertson, *Káfirs*, 533, 536.

² The last case I have met with is that of Zikrís, an heretical Mohammedan sect in Baluchistan, among whom the Mulla exercises the right. His touch is supposed to sanctify and cleanse the bride (*Ind. Cens.* 1901, v. 45).

United Provinces (formerly the North-west Province), have a low standard of sexual morality. In the Muzaffarnagar district it is extremely rare for a woman to live with her husband. "Almost invariably she lives with another man; but whoever he may be the official husband is responsible for the children."¹ Among the Sumuwárs, a cultivating tribe of Nepal, in most cases girls are married after they are grown up to men of their own choice; and sexual intercourse before marriage is tacitly recognised on the understanding that in the event of pregnancy the girl will be married without delay. Divorce is permitted on the ground of adultery or misconduct on the part of the wife; and divorced women may marry again in the same manner as widows, that is to say, by simple cohabitation without any ceremony at all. Their children by the second husband are deemed legitimate. In case of divorce the first husband usually keeps his own children; "but if the divorced wife is allowed to take them with her, as sometimes happens, they are treated as the children of her second husband."² Among the Reddies of Tinnevely in Southern India a young woman of sixteen or twenty years of age is frequently married to a boy of five or six years or even younger. She, however, lives with some other man, a relative on the maternal side, perhaps an uncle or cousin, but not with one of her father's relatives. Occasionally it may be the boy-husband's nominal father with whom she cohabits. Any children

¹ V. A. Smith, *N. Ind N. and Q.* i. 51 (par. 387). Mr. Vincent Smith describes the Bâwariyas as not a tribe but "a specially organised predatory caste." The description in the text is Mr. Crooke's (*Tribes and Castes*, i. 228).

² Risley, ii. 282.

so begotten are affiliated on the boy-husband. When he grows up his wife is old and probably past child-bearing. He therefore in his turn cohabits with some other boy's wife in a similar manner and procreates children for him.¹ Among the Malaiâlis of the Salem district "the sons when mere children are married to mature females, and the father-in-law of the bride assumes the performance of the procreative function, thus assuring for himself and his son a descendant to take them out of Put. When the putative father comes of age and in their turn his wife's male offspring are married he performs for them the same office which his father did for him. Thus not only is the religious idea involved in the words Putra and Kumâran (both meaning son) carried out, but also the premature strain on the generative faculties which this tradition entails is avoided." The word *putra* means one who saves from Put, a hell into which those who have not produced a son fall. The custom described is in fact widespread in the south of India, and as we shall see hereafter is by no means confined to that country.²

More than this, libertinage is practised under the sanction of religion to procure fecundity in women. We need not insist on mythological stories of barren women who have been embraced by gods and thereby obtained issue, nor on the imitation in modern times of these ancient tales by devotees who passing the

¹ Shortt, *Trans. Ethn. Soc.* N. S. vii. 194, 264 note. It is not clear that this is a case of polyandry, which it is understood the Reddies repudiate. Rather it would seem that the nominal husband and father never cohabits with his "wife" at all.

² Thurston, 49 *sqq.*, 108; *Trans. Ethnol. Soc.* N. S. vii. 264; *Ind. Cens.* 1901, xv. 141, 181.

night at such temples as that of Tirupati in the Carnatic believe that they receive the embraces of Vishnu.¹ There are other temples where barren women hope to achieve their hearts' desire for children by granting their favours at a yearly festival in the month of January to a fixed number of mortal men in pursuance of a vow previously made.² A Thotigar in fulfilment of certain vows will place his wife during the festival of Soobramaniya in a solitary hut on the roadside and watching for travellers will beg the first person he meets to go in and have intercourse with her. This is repeated until the number of strangers has been procured, though it necessitate bringing her again and again to the place.³

A story from the *Jātaka* relates to one of the higher castes. The righteous king Okkāka, who ruled in the city of Kusāvati, had sixteen thousand wives; but his chief wife Silavatī had neither son nor daughter. As he had no son to perpetuate his race his subjects assembled at the door of his palace and began to complain, in fear lest a stranger should seize the kingdom and destroy it. The king opened his window and parleyed with them. They advised him: "First of all send out into the streets for a whole week a band of dancing women of low degree—giving the act a religious sanction—and if one of them shall give birth to a son, well and good. Otherwise send out a company of fairly good standing, and finally a band of the highest rank. Surely among so many one woman will be found of sufficient merit to bear a son." These women must have been in some way attached to

¹ Dubois 601.

² *Ibid.* 603.

³ *Trans. Ethn. Soc.* N. S. vii. 264.

his court or members of his harem, though it is not explicitly so stated. However, compliance with the advice was not followed by conception on the part of any of them. The king was in despair, and when the men of the city renewed their reproaches he asked them again what he was to do. "Sire," they answered "these women must be immoral and void of merit. They have not sufficient merit to conceive a son. But because they do not conceive you are not to relax your efforts. The queen-consort, *Silavatī*, is a virtuous woman. Send her out into the streets. A son will be born to her." The tale avers that "the king readily assented, and proclaimed by beat of drum that on the seventh day from that time the people were to assemble and the king would expose *Silavatī*—giving the act a religious character. And on the seventh day he had the queen magnificently arrayed and carried down from the palace and exposed in the streets." But *Sakka* came from heaven to the rescue disguised as a brahman and with merely a touch of his thumb rendered her pregnant of the *Bodhisatta*.¹

If we turn from Buddhist tales to the sacred law of the Hindus we find an unmistakable emphasis laid on the necessity for children, and above all for a male child. A son is an absolute necessity to carry on the ancestral rites. "He only," says the great law-book of *Manu*, "is a perfect man who consists [of three persons united], his wife, himself, and his offspring." "Immediately on the birth of his first-born a man is [called] the father of a son and is freed from the debt to the manes; that [son], therefore, is worthy to receive the whole estate. That son alone on whom

¹ *Jātaka*, v. 141 (Story No. 531).

he throws his debt and through whom he obtains immortality, is begotten for [the fulfilment of] the law."¹ A son being so important, where a man failed to beget a son on his wife various devices were resorted to in order to supply his place. A daughter might be appointed to bear a son who would fulfil the rites. Or a son of another member of the same caste might be given with certain rites by his parents and adopted by the sonless man. A son so adopted would cease to have any claim on his own father and family and would be deemed instead to be the son of him to whom he had been transferred, would perform his funeral rites and take his estate.² But there was still another course which, repugnant though it may be to our moral code, was at least fraught with more regard for the purity of the race than that suggested by the men of Kusâvati to their king. After expounding the duty of a husband to guard his wife and to keep her pure, because "offspring, [the due performance of] religious rites, faithful service, highest conjugal happiness and heavenly bliss for the ancestors and oneself depend on one's wife alone," and proclaiming that "she who, controlling her thoughts speech and acts, violates not her duty towards her lord, dwells with him [after death] in heaven, and in this world is called by the virtuous a faithful [wife]," Bhrigu is represented as plunging into a grave discussion whether the male issue of a woman belongs to her lord or to the begetter. "Those who, having no property in a field, but possessing seed-corn, sow it in another's soil, do indeed not receive the grain of the crop which may spring

¹ *Sacred Books*, xxv. 335, 346. Cf. xiv. 271.

² *Id.* xxv. 353, 355, 361

up. If [one man's] bull were to beget a hundred calves on another man's cows, they would belong to the owner of the cows. . . . Thus," he decides, "men who have no marital property in women, but sow their seed in the soil of others, benefit the owner of the woman, but the giver of the seed reaps no advantage." This is preliminary to a declaration of the law applicable to women "in times of misfortune," that is to say when there is no male offspring. In spite of the taboo which hedges alike the wife of an elder brother and the wife of a younger brother, the breach of which would make both guilty parties outcasts, "on failure of issue [by her husband] a woman who has been authorised, may obtain [in the] proper [manner prescribed], the desired offspring by [cohabitation with] a brother-in-law or [with some other] *sapinda*" [of the husband]. She may, it seems, be authorised for this purpose by her husband or after his death by his relatives; but when once the object is accomplished cohabitation must cease. However, if the son born be not fit to offer the *Srâddhas*, a second may be begotten. A son so begotten would be deemed the son of the husband, whether such husband was in fact living or dead at the time of his procreation.¹

This was the law throughout Vedic times. There is reason to think indeed that as formulated by Manu it limited the pre-existing custom. A *sapinda* is a kinsman within six degrees, that is to say, a descendant of the same great-grandfather. But it is noteworthy in all the early examples of the *Niyoga*, as the custom of authorisation by the husband was called,

¹ *Sacred Books*, xxv. 327-338; cf. ii. 267, 302, 303.

that a stranger was the person appointed as the agent to beget a child.¹ Moreover the ceremonies which hedged round the accomplishment of the agent's duties, whether appointed by the relatives after the husband's death, or as it seems by the husband in his lifetime, display an anxiety to reduce the act itself to a minimum. And later law-books disclose an effort to get rid of it altogether.² But as the law stands in *Manu*, not merely sons begotten by an appointed *sapinda* on a wife or widow are recognised as the husband's sons. The illegitimate son of an unmarried girl who afterwards marries, a son born of a bride already pregnant at the time of her marriage, and even a son born of a wife's adultery are also all deemed to be the husband's sons.³ In fact, as a recent commentator on the Hindu law says, it is a law "in which twelve sorts of sons are recognised, the majority of whom have no blood-relationship to their own [nominal] father."⁴ The Chinese also esteem it so important to have children that it is looked upon as somewhat of an infamy to be destitute of them. There are husbands, at least in the province of Fo-Kien and doubtless elsewhere, who for this purpose force their wives to entertain other men and invite or even pay some friend to have intercourse with them. The girls who are not already delivered over to their intended father-in-law's custody at an early age are very dissolute. A law-suit arising out of a claim by a family that a girl on marriage is not found a virgin is no uncommon event; but money is always deemed a sufficient com-

¹ Mayne, 84. See also McLennan, *Pat. Theory*, 269.

² *Sac. Bks.* ii. 130.

³ *Ibid.* xxv. 362, 363.

⁴ Mayne, 73; *cf.* 81. See also Jolly, 71.

pensation to enable the bridegroom to accept his bride as if nothing had happened.¹ So among the Hill tribes of Northern Aracan sexual intercourse before marriage is unrestricted, "and it is considered rather a good thing," we are told, "to marry a girl in the family-way, even though by another man."²

In the same way in ancient Arabia when a husband paid a bride-price all the children borne by his wife were his, and were reckoned to his kin. This, says Professor Robertson Smith, "is the fundamental doctrine of Mohammedan law: the son is reckoned to the bed on which he is born. But in old Arab law this doctrine is developed with a logical thoroughness at which our views of property stand aghast." And he shows by an examination of cases that "when a man desired a goodly seed he might call upon his wife to cohabit with another man till she became pregnant by him," and in such a case the child would be the husband's; that the child of a woman already pregnant by another man at her marriage would belong to the husband; that when a mother married again after divorce or the death of her previous husband if she were allowed to take her children with her they might become incorporated in her new husband's stock; that the husband might lead his wife to a guest, or on going a journey might get a friend to supply his place in his absence, or might enter into a partnership of conjugal rights with another man in return for service; yet in all these cases he would be reckoned the father of her

¹ Father Jaime Masip, *Anthropos*, ii. 716.

² *J. A. I.* ii. 239.

children.¹ It is true that at the period referred to (at and before the time of Mohammed) the social organisation was undergoing a revolution: the present system had not yet completely taken the place of motherright. But some of these practices continued into quite modern times, and some, like the hospitality-rite of leading a wife to a guest, are well-known practices among many patrilineal peoples. It is even asserted to have been the custom in the Netherlands in comparatively modern times.²

Pursuing our inquiries on the continent of Africa we find numerous examples of the indifference of the husband to the actual paternity of the children who are reckoned to him. Only a few can be mentioned here. Among the Dinkas of Bahr-el-Ghazal when a man dies his wives become the wives of his sons, except of course their respective mothers. If a son have children by a wife so inherited they are looked upon as brothers and not as sons: that is, they are reckoned to his father. So, if a *beng* (sheikh, or head of a village) be "too old to be sexually efficient, he nevertheless continues to take wives, but these cohabit with his sons. Children so begotten are regarded as the children of the sheikh and as the brothers of their actual fathers." Adultery indeed is punished with the death of the male offender,³ if caught in the act; but the definition of adultery is limited as among many other peoples to sexual relations without the husband's consent. Among the Dinkas in general marriage is concluded by the payment of a bride-price.

¹ Robertson Smith, *Kinship*, 107, *sqq.*

² Ploss, *Weib*, i. 300.

³ Capt. S. L. Cummins, *J. A. I.* xxxiv. 151.

The dissolution of a marriage may be effected by the repayment of all the cattle given for the bride-price and all their young. On such repayment the marriage is "broken" and the woman returns to her father. When she marries again all the children of her former husband, except such as may have been left with him by arrangement when the marriage was "broken," are regarded as the children of the second husband. If within two years of a marriage the wife fail to give birth to a child her husband may sue for return of the cattle on the ground that she is unable to conceive. But before doing so he "must have had recourse to the tribal custom of permitting one of his male relations to cohabit with" her, in order to support the allegation of barrenness: that his other wives may have borne is no proof in his favour. It is the duty of a widow to raise up children to her husband by cohabiting with her dead husband's brother or some other of his near relations. Any children born in consequence, or from any other connection, are considered those of the deceased, irrespective of the time that may have elapsed since his death. Even when a man dies childless, leaving only a widow who is past the age of child-bearing, or leaving an only daughter, no sons and no widows capable of bearing, an heir must still be provided. The duty of providing the heir lies upon the widow or daughter as the case may be; and in default of male relations she holds the property in trust for the future heir. Any children the daughter may have will be reckoned to her husband, not to her father; and adoption seems to be unknown. The difficulty therefore looks insoluble; and to us the strangest of all the Dinka customs is that by which

the widow or daughter left in this embarrassing position fulfils her duty. She "marries" in the name of the deceased a girl whom she selects and whose bride-price she pays out of his herds. It is then incumbent on her to arrange for a man to cohabit with the bride in order to produce children. A widow whose husband has left no male relations arranges for one of her own to act as husband; in default of male relations of her own she may appoint any man she pleases. The children resulting from the connection are in name and rights of inheritance those of the deceased, the natural father having no claim on them whatsoever.¹

This is carrying the custom of raising up seed to the deceased, with which we are familiar in the laws of the Hebrews and the Hindus, further than in any other case with which I am acquainted. In a more restricted form it is common to many of the African tribes. Among the Wadjagga when a man dies without children or unmarried his father if living takes a wife in his name; and any children she bears will count as the sons of the deceased, their actual father being regarded as their grandfather.² Macheng, a chief of the Bamangwato, was the legal son and successor of Khari. He was not born until some years after Khari's death. Khari had had other sons, but not by the woman whom he had appointed head-wife. Having paid her price in cattle she and her offspring were to be reckoned to him, although the children were not born for a dozen years after his death. Macheng was her son. He had to make good his claim against the powerful chief Sekhome, who

¹ MS. Collection of Dinka Laws by Capt. Hugh D. E. O'Sullivan

² Gutmann, *Globus*, xcii. 3.

was an elder and undoubted son of Khari, but by another wife. "It is not etiquette," says the missionary who witnessed and who best tells the tale of the contest, "ever to refer to the man who thus raises up seed to another, in connection with such children. They are not his children. They are the children of him who is dead. . . . Even the most ardent friends of Sekhome admit that according to their customs Macheng is the rightful chief."¹ And it was not merely his personal character or the fortunate concatenation of events, but quite as much the legal strength of his title, that gave him ultimate victory over Sekhome. The same custom is reported of the Bahurutsi and of the Bavenda.²

Among the Baroswi of Mashonaland there is a recognised practice for an old man with young wives to allow a younger man to raise up children for him.³ Among the Bavenda a man will sometimes give one of his wives to a friend; but any child she may have by that friend belongs to the former husband.⁴ A Mosuto chief inherits his father's wives "as well as his other possessions. These wives, as a rule, each chief distributes amongst his councillors and favourites; but their children are always called his, thus giving him a considerable source of wealth, as the sons work for him and the daughters bring him large dowries of cattle. Fidelity either from the husband or wife is a virtue rarely to be found amongst the heathen; but its absence creates no trouble as long as it is not

¹ Mackenzie, *Ten Years*, 364.

² Stow, *Races*, 525.

³ *Journ. Afr. Soc.* iv. 315.

⁴ Rev. E. Gottschling, *J. A. I.* xxxv. 373.

discovered.”¹ This remark by a lady who has resided for some years in Basutoland is probably to be understood, so far as regards the wife, by assuming a general knowledge on the part of the husband of his wife’s habits, at which he winks unless open scandal result. Mr. Mabile, an official and the son of a missionary, tells us that “adultery is general: every man has his mistress and every woman her lover.”² The lady just quoted adds: “In cases where a chief wishes to retain the services of a man, he will bestow one of his wives upon him for the length of time his services are required; but any children born of this marriage belong to the chief.”³ It is hardly exact to speak of such a connection or of similar relations previously mentioned in the present paragraph, whether among the Bavenda or the Basuto, as a marriage, because in none of the cases would a bride-price have been paid. The wife temporarily bestowed upon a follower is in law the chief’s wife still; and for this reason it is that the children she may bear will belong to him.⁴ What really happens is that the chief lends a wife to a follower, usually a headman, in order to “raise children to the kraal.”⁵ Nor are we surprised to find that among the Basuto, as among other peoples whom we shall consider hereafter, it is a hospitable duty on the part of a chief when visited by another chief to offer him one of his women during his stay.⁶ Of the coast-tribes parallel customs are recorded. If the pregnancy be the

¹ Martin, 87.

² *Journ. Afr. Soc.* v. 365.

³ Martin, *loc. cit.*

⁴ K. Endemann, *Zeits. f. Ethn.* vi. 40.

⁵ Hewat, 108.

⁶ *Zeits. f. Ethn.* vi. 33.

result of adultery the child will belong to the husband.¹ As an old writer says, "he is so far from revenging his wife's infidelity upon her that he prefers to accept the bastard child as his own." This however does not prevent his bringing her partner in the offence before the chief for punishment; and he receives one half of the fine inflicted, which consists of cattle.² Similar customs may be said to be general among such of the Bantu tribes as are patrilineal. Among the Nilotic tribes the rule of the Kavirondo is that any children of a woman at the time of her marriage, whether they be legitimate or not, become her husband's by virtue of marriage.³

Turning now to the true Negroes we find in Buna on the Ivory Coast a social condition in which father-right is predominant, but has not yet succeeded in stamping out all vestiges of the more archaic stage. The family is strongly organised, its head being the eldest male, who is absolute master. All the children born during a marriage are the husband's property, even those who are the fruit of adultery. In case of divorce where the wife is known to be pregnant the child subsequently born belongs to the husband; if, however, her pregnancy be not then known she retains the child.⁴ In Seguela parentage runs in the paternal line by preference, and the family is similarly organised. Every child born during the marriage belongs to the husband. In case of lengthened absence of the husband the wife is authorised to live in concubinage

¹ Kidd, 229, 231, 357; Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 472; *Cape Rep. Native Laws*, Evidence, 136.

² Alberti, 141.

³ G. A. S. Northcote, *J. A. I.* xxxvii. 62.

⁴ Clozel, 308-312.

with another man, preferably a member of the family. At his return the husband takes her back, together with any children born during his absence.¹ The Krumen of Sassandra reckon descent on both sides, but we are told that the female side is of little importance. The descendants of a common ancestor in the male line dwell together in the same village and form a clan. Since polygamy is here as elsewhere among the Negroes practically unlimited, infidelity to one wife leads to no more serious consequence than little tiffs. Adultery by the wife herself is hardly graver, the French official report tells us; and everything is comfortably arranged, if she only share with her husband the presents she has received from her lover. Some husbands, indeed, especially old chiefs who are inclined to violence, revenge themselves; but it is rare to find a really jealous husband. Sometimes, but very seldom, the husband demands a divorce when the wife is thoroughly abandoned. Conformably with these easy-going morals the law declares no distinction between legitimate illegitimate and adulterine children. *Is pater quem nuptiæ demonstrant* admits of no exception. The husband is considered the father, even though he has been absent for ten years, of any children his wife may have borne in the meantime.² The Krumen of Cavally reckon descent only on the male side. There is no distinction between legitimate and illegitimate children. The children are the wealth of the family and they are always welcome, even when the husband knows he is not the real father. They belong to him in all cases. He may however inflict

¹ Clozel, 330, 331. Women may inherit in certain cases (*Id.* 335).

² *Id.* 495, 497, 498.

corporal punishment on his adulterous wife, or even send her back to her family and obtain repayment of the bride-price. He may also institute a palaver against the adulterer for damages, which may be settled if he so please by an exchange of wives. The *patria potestas* vests in the eldest male of the highest generation living, and devolves with the property on his next brother at his death. When there are no brothers the eldest son inherits.¹ In the foregoing cases the marriage rites are of the most restricted character. On the other hand, among the Andoni of Southern Nigeria (if I am right in thinking them patrilineal) an elaborate ceremony is performed. Two stout sticks of a certain wood called *odiri*, about four feet long, are supplied by the Juju priests from the sacred grove. They are sharpened at the end and first laid on the ground in a corner of the bridegroom's house by the priests. The bride and bridegroom are then made to place their feet on them. The priest kills a goat and sprinkles its blood on their feet and on the sticks. The stakes are then driven by their sharpened ends into the ground in the corner of the house, and there they remain until they fall to pieces. From that moment the wife and all the children she may bear, by whomsoever begotten, are the husband's property. The marriage is indissoluble. Even if she leave her husband and have children by chiefs or kings they must be delivered up to him on his demand. When she dies she cannot be buried save by him; any other person undertaking this important function would incur heavy punishment; before the days of British rule it was death.²

¹ Clozel, 507, 511, 512, 515.

² *Journ. Afr. Soc.* iv. 414; Leonard, 414.

Islam is not necessarily a religion of high civilisation. It has made extensive conquests in Africa by reason of its power of adaptation to lower stages of culture. By Mohammedan law kinship is reckoned through both lines ; but such preponderant importance is attached to the paternal side that semi-civilised African populations professing Islam may for our purpose be regarded as patrilineal. Just as among patrilineal peoples where fatherright is carried out to its logical term, great importance is attributed to the purity of Mohammedan women. On the other hand the law, by the aid of the physiological ignorance of the early doctors who framed it, stretches beyond all probability the presumption of legitimacy in its doctrine of the possibility of very lengthened gestations. A famous Maghribin saint named Sîdî Nâïl left his home and went on pilgrimage to Mecca where he abode for two years and a half. At length he returned to find that his wife Cheliha had only a short time before given birth to a son. Even the credulity of the faithful, supported by the law, has had the greatest difficulty in digesting the legitimacy of this child. Yet the saint himself seems to have accepted him, and his sonship has been duly attested by heaven ; for it is especially among his descendants that the gift of miracles possessed by Sîdî Nâïl has been perpetuated.¹ In the same way the Bayâzi, an heretical sect of which the bulk of the Arab population of Zanzibar consists, allow legitimacy to children born within two years after the husband's death. The Shafei, another sect, extend the period to four years.² Mohammedan law, exaggerated by these heretical sects, seems indeed

¹ *Rev. Hist. Rel.* xli. 315.

² Burton, *Zanzibar*, i. 403.

a device for gathering into the husband's kin all the children of his wives to whom any semblance of a claim can be made. Among the Galla of north-eastern Africa, who are Moslem, the illegitimate children of a woman married by the solemn rite of the *rakkó* are legally descendants of the husband.¹

Customs similar to those prescribed in the ancient Indian law-books have even been in use in Europe. A Spartan law attributed to Lycurgus required an old man who had a young wife to introduce to her a young man whose bodily and mental qualities he approved, that he might beget children on her.² The primary object indeed of this law and of others fathered on the same law-giver was said to be what is called in modern scientific jargon Eugenics. However that may have been as regards the form in which they are reported to us, there can be little doubt that they are formulations of pre-existing custom which enabled the continuance of the husband's family by another man. At all events at Athens a law ascribed to Solon was in force which provided that if the next-of-kin who had in accordance with law successfully claimed an heiress for himself were impotent, his place should be supplied by some of his relatives (*cum mariti adgnatis concubito*). This as McLennan points out is identical with the law of Manu cited above. In both cases the object was to

Paulitschke, ii. 142. As to the *rakkó* see *Ibid.* 47. I am not aware whether the Boni, a subject people among the Galla and Somali, are Mohammedans, or whether they are, as has been suggested, of Galla origin. "There is no divorce among these people, all the children of one woman, by whatever father, are the property of the woman's original husband, if alive; if dead, of her brother" (Capt. Salkeld, *Man* (1905), 169 (par. 94).

² Xenophon, *Rep. Laced.* i. 9; Plutarch, *Lycurgus*.

provide heirs ; and the children took the estate as soon as they were able to perform the duties to their legal ancestors.¹ The old peasant customals of Germany, especially of Westphalia, lay it down that an impotent husband shall perform the ceremony of taking his wife on his back over nine fences and then calling a neighbour to act as his substitute. If he cannot find one who is able and willing, he is to adorn her with new clothes, hang a purse at her side with money to spend and send her to a *kermess*, in the hope of finding some one there to help her.² Grimm, commenting on these curious prescriptions, admits that there is no historical record of any such actual transaction, but observes that they are plainly and seriously prescribed and that their memory lingers in tradition, instancing an old poem on Saint Elizabeth. He suggests that in the customals all the details are not mentioned, that probably the rite was only performed where serious detriment would result from the want of an heir, and that the husband's choice of a substitute was not unlimited. In any case he holds the custom to be very archaic, though in the records it appears adapted to the circumstances of mediæval peasant-proprietors.

The foregoing examples are all chosen from peoples among whom fatherright is the rule, or who deduce kinship through both parents with preference for the father, as in the highest civilisations. Where these customs are in vogue the husband cannot be sure of the paternity of the children born of his wife. On the

¹ Plutarch, *Solon* ; McLennan, *Studies*, i. 223 ; Seebohm, *Greek Tribal Soc.* 23.

² Grimm, *Rechtsalt.* 443. The details of the ceremony vary in different places.

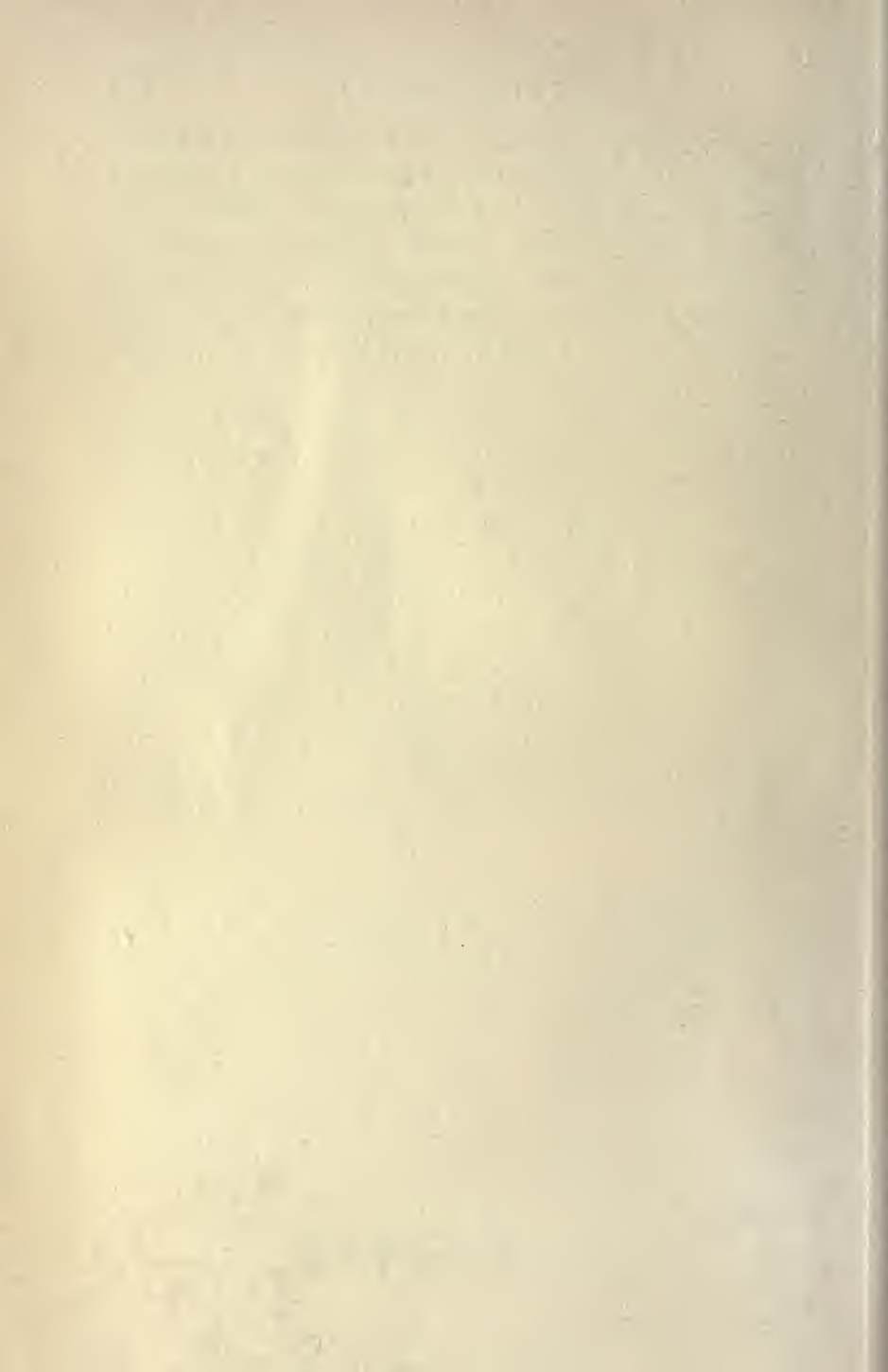
contrary he is often sure that the children belonging to him, reckoned of his kin and inheriting his property, are not in fact heirs of his body. They may even be born long after his death as the result of intercourse between his wives and other men. The list might be indefinitely lengthened if the customs of peoples among whom fatherright though predominant is imperfectly developed were considered. Thus in Madagascar motherright has left much more than traces. The hindrances on marriage of relatives are greater on the mother's side than on the father's. Children of two sisters by the same mother cannot intermarry, nor can their descendants. On the other hand children and grandchildren of a brother and sister by the same mother may intermarry on the performance of a slight ceremony prescribed to remove the disqualification of consanguinity. The royal family and nobles trace their lineage, contrary to the general practice, through the mother and not through the father. Yet so great a calamity is it counted that a man should die without posterity that if an elder brother die childless his next brother must take the widow and raise up seed to the deceased.¹ This involves sexual relations only after the husband's death between the widow and his brother. But the Malagasy customs are further-reaching still; for all the children of a married woman belong to her husband, whoever may beget them. Divorce is a frequent occurrence and for trivial causes. When it takes place, not only are the children previously born retained by the husband, but any whom the wife may afterwards bear to another man belong to the husband

¹ Ellis, i. 164; Sibree, 246.

who has divorced her. And he hastens to secure them by taking a present to each one as it is born ; a ceremony which appears to constitute a formal claim to them. In the ceremony of divorce the husband's final word to his wife is an injunction to remember that though she is now at liberty to marry any one else, all her future children will belong to him, the husband divorcing her.¹

Motherright then is found not merely where paternity is uncertain, but also where it is practically certain. Fatherright on the other hand is found not merely where paternity is certain, but also where it is uncertain and even where the legal father is known not to have begotten the children. Nay, the institutions of fatherright often require provision for, and very generally permit, the procreation by other men of children for the nominal father. It follows therefore that the uncertainty of paternity cannot be historically the reason for the reckoning of descent exclusively through the mother. Some other reason must be discovered.

¹ Verbal information to me by Rev. T. Rowlands, L.M.S., Missionary to the Betsileo. The information does not agree with that in Ellis, *Hist. Mad.* i. 173. Possibly the latter refers to (or includes) children of tender age who are necessarily left with their mother for the time.









GR
450
H3
v.1

Hartland, Edwin Sidney
Primitive paternity

ROBERTS LIBRARY

DUE DATE

DEC 15 1989

CA

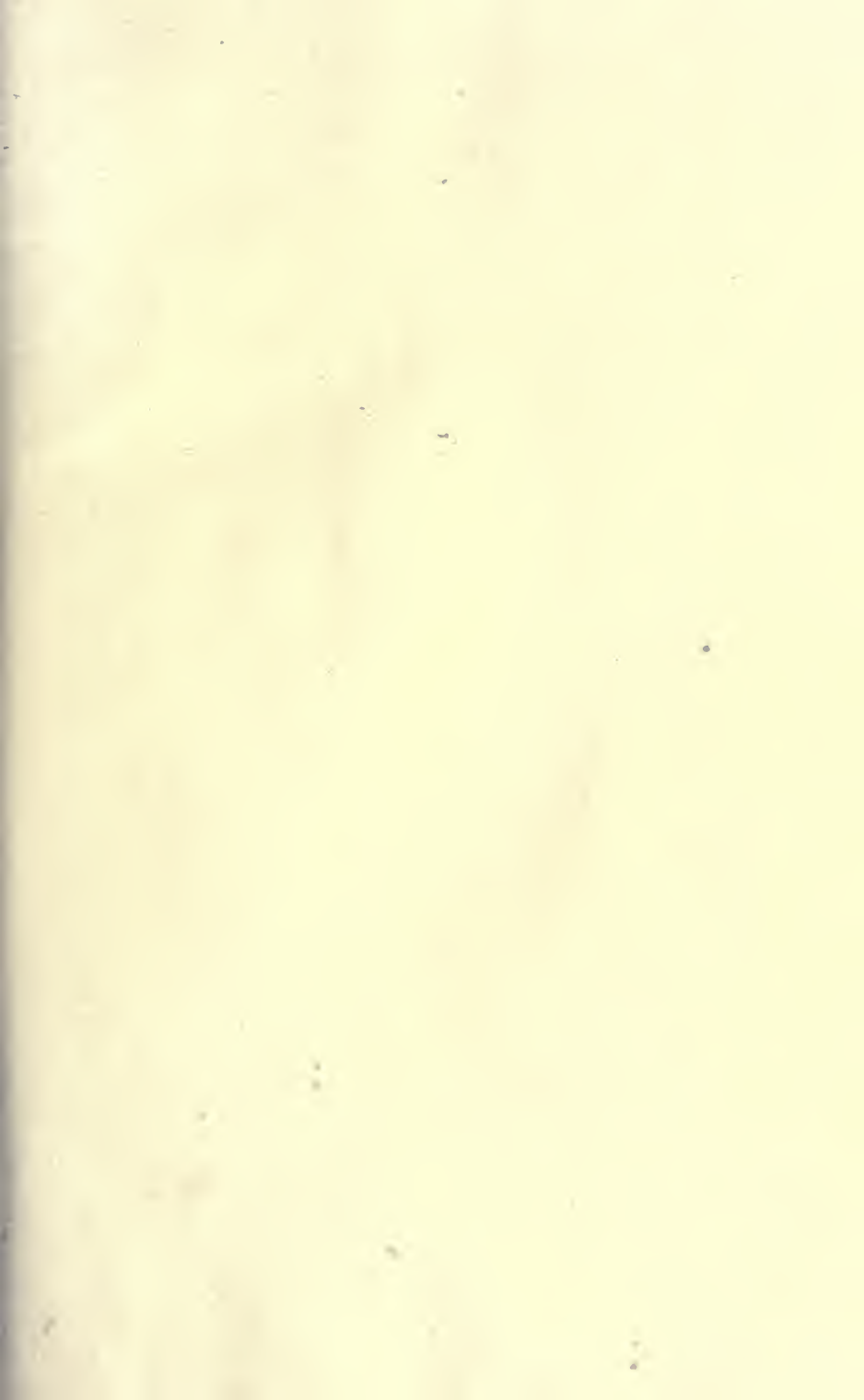



UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 01437152 0







Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



PRIMITIVE PATERNITY

VOLUME II

F. An.

THE FOLK-LORE SOCIETY

FOR COLLECTING AND PRINTING

RELICS OF POPULAR ANTIQUITIES, &c.

ESTABLISHED IN
THE YEAR MDCCLXXVIII.



Alter et Idem

PUBLICATIONS
OF
THE FOLK-LORE SOCIETY

[LXVII.]

[1910]

107369
17/1/11

PRIMITIVE PATERNITY
THE MYTH OF SUPERNATURAL
BIRTH IN RELATION TO THE
HISTORY OF THE FAMILY

BY
EDWIN SIDNEY HARTLAND
F.S.A

AUTHOR OF "THE LEGEND OF PERSEUS," ETC.

VOLUME II

LONDON : DAVID NUTT
AT THE SIGN OF THE PHŒNIX
57-59 LONG ACRE
1910

GR
450
H3
v. 2

CONTENTS

CHAPTER V

RISE OF FATHERRIGHT

The stages through which conjugal relations have passed are not uniform but dependent on environment and other influences. The stages to be reviewed therefore are not necessarily consecutive. Frailty of the conjugal bond. The entertainment of temporary husbands at the wife's home. Relations beginning with secret visits by the lover tend to become open and permanent. Cupid and Psyche. Secret relations between husband and wife. Open visits by husband. Polygamous visiting husbands. Marriages in which the husband goes to reside permanently with his wife. Commutation of the husband's permanent residence in his wife's family. Husband's probation as a relic of an earlier custom of visiting. Effect of payment of bride-price. Husband's permanent residence in his wife's family: its tendency to patrilineal reckoning. Evolution of fatherright among various peoples of the Old and New Worlds. Summary: general course of the evolution of conjugal relations, and reasons for the inevitable decay and supersession of motherright. The reckoning of kinship through the father is not founded on blood, but is a social convention.

Pp. 1-100

CHAPTER VI

MARITAL JEALOUSY

Continence not a savage virtue. Female chastity a slow growth from the limitations imposed by the masculine sense of ownership upon the gratification of sexual instincts. In the lower culture jealousy operates only feebly or within limits. Examination of cases among matrilineal peoples. Survival of matrilineal freedom into fatherright. Peoples in a state of transition or where kinship is

CONTENTS

reckoned through both parents: Eskimo. Patrilineal peoples. Polyandry: the Todas and other peoples of India and the neighbouring countries. Sexual morality. Religious and other ritual observances. Wide distribution of practices implying defective jealousy. General indifference to the actual paternity of a child. Value of children. Fatherright fosters indifference to paternity.

Pp. 101-248

CHAPTER VII

PHYSIOLOGICAL IGNORANCE ON THE SUBJECT OF CONCEPTION. CONCLUSION

The foregoing considerations lead to the conclusion that paternity was not understood by early man, and even yet the cause of birth is more or less of a mystery to some peoples in the lower culture. Reasons for this ignorance: among others the disproportion of births to acts of sexual union. Every woman in the lower stages of culture is accustomed to intercourse. Premature intercourse very widespread. It is not only unproductive, but it impairs fertility. Even where the true cause of birth has been discovered it has been nowhere held invariable and indispensable. In Australia and a few other countries it is still unrecognised. Summary of the argument.

Pp. 249-286

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL APPENDIX

Pp. 287-309

INDEX

Pp. 311-328

CHAPTER V

RISE OF FATHERRIGHT

The stages through which conjugal relations have passed are not uniform but dependent on environment and other influences. The stages to be reviewed therefore are not necessarily consecutive. Frailty of the conjugal bond. The entertainment of temporary husbands at the wife's home. Relations beginning with secret visits by the lover tend to become open and permanent. Cupid and Psyche. Secret relations between husband and wife. Open visits by husband. Polygamous visiting husbands. Marriages in which the husband goes to reside permanently with his wife. Commutation of the husband's permanent residence in his wife's family. Husband's probation as a relic of an earlier custom of visiting. Effect of payment of bride-price. Husband's permanent residence in his wife's family: its tendency to patrilineal reckoning. Evolution of fatherright among various peoples of the Old and New Worlds. Summary: general course of the evolution of conjugal relations, and reasons for the inevitable decay and supersession of motherright. The reckoning of kinship through the father is not founded on blood, but is a social convention.

Our general consideration of the social organisation implied by motherright has disclosed that the children are not recognised as belonging to the kin of the father, that their position in the community into which they are born does not depend upon him, consequently that he has little control over them and takes little

interest in them, that the authority over them is vested in the head of the mother's kin at large or (where the true family has begun to emerge) in the head of the mother's family—usually the eldest male, her brother or uncle,—and finally that the chasm between the father and husband on the one side and the wife and her kin on the other is so wide that he is liable to them in the blood-feud, in which even his children join against him and inflict the extreme reprisal of death or receive a share of the compensation paid in its place. As the rights and position of the father are gradually strengthened inroads are made on this social organisation, so that all its characteristics are now seldom found in full force even where descent is still reckoned in the maternal line. The customs adduced from various parts of the world are however sufficient to show what was originally involved in the organisation. An exhaustive examination of the social condition of peoples in the lower culture, had that been possible within the limits of this essay, would have exhibited it still more clearly without diverging it is believed in any essential respect from the lines thus laid down.

We next proceed to examine some of the stages by which fatherright has become dominant over a large portion of the earth. The way for this inquiry has been prepared by a consideration of the cause formerly and sometimes even yet alleged for the reckoning of descent through the mother only, namely, the greater certainty. I have proved that this is not the cause. It is in fact a crude attempt by persons accustomed to a very different social condition to solve the unexpected and in their view wholly exceptional problem of motherright. So far from being exceptional, mother-

right however is probably the earliest mode of reckoning kin by descent. It may be said without fear of contradiction that while no case is known where matrilineal reckoning betrays evidence of having been preceded by paternal descent, the converse has been observed in every part of the world. Cases may exist of tribes reckoning descent through the father in which no trace remains of reckoning through the mother. The mere existence of such cases is wholly insufficient to disprove a prior stage of motherright, or even to shift the burden of proof. We may admit that where the man takes a wife from among her own kin and brings her to reside with his, the local community which results is in effect a patrilineal kin, if the children continue with the parents. This custom, where it has obtained, has doubtless been one of the causes contributing to the rise of fatherright. But it is by no means universal ; that it is primitive has never been shown ; and it is usually found qualified with customs and institutions logically inconsistent with fatherright. Nor is it sufficient of itself to displace the reckoning of kinship through the mother. In fact, it is found so frequently combined with matrilineal reckoning that even anthropologists who reject the prior claims of paternal descent have often assumed it to be the original form of society and have been greatly embarrassed thereby in their attempts to account for motherright.

A brief consideration of some of the stages through which the relations of the sexes have passed will, it is hoped, throw light on the derivation of patrilineal reckoning. Our inquiry will be limited to those more or less permanent relations recognised by law or custom and entailing rights and duties, however feeble

and limited, upon the parties entering into them. The stages we shall review are not necessarily successive, still less immediately consecutive. Anthropological knowledge does not warrant our laying down any uniform succession of stages through which conjugal relations must have passed. On the contrary the varying environment of humanity has dictated different modes of life according to the kind of food, its plentifulness and the dangers and difficulties attending its collection, the enemies human and non-human to be subdued or at all events avoided, and the general conditions of climate, soil, land and water. Each of these different modes of life has necessitated the adaptation of conjugal relations, not merely for the satisfaction of physical impulses, but for the gratification of the desire for human companionship and for the preservation of the species. Moreover, these modes of life once formed are not unchangeable. They are modified from time to time by the degree of material civilisation attained, by contact with surrounding peoples and by other influences; and the modifications have entailed further adaptation of the relations between the sexes.

Among most nations in the lower culture the severance of the matrimonial bond is no difficult matter—at all events on the side of the man, and frequently also on that of the woman. The will of the individual parties to the bond is often the only factor in the case. Where this is not so, where the birth of children strengthens the connection of husband and wife, or where the kindred on either side claim an interest in its continuance, even there separation is usually a mere matter of negotiation and arrangement. In

comparatively few cases is anything like judicial interference invoked, such as we are accustomed to associate with the term Divorce. The Semitic nations are notorious for the frailty of the conjugal relation, though probably they have not been laxer than many others. Their ancient civilisations and ancient barbarism alike have preserved evidence which goes to show in the words of a recent writer "that the primitive Semitic marriage-tie was an evanescent bond."¹ The legislation in the book of Deuteronomy and that of the Arabian prophet were framed under patriarchal influence. Consequently they witness and perpetuate the power of the husband to put away his wife on the smallest pretext, or without any pretext at all, but they have not taken equal care of the wife's rights. Enough, however, remains in old Arab literature and modern customs, and even in the pages of the Old Testament itself, to render it probable that originally these rights were correlative to those of the husband.

The late Professor Robertson Smith collected a number of instances proving that the primitive Arabs were matrilineal, and that a husband was little if anything more than a temporary lover who could be dismissed, or could depart, at pleasure. We may cite two of these instances. "Ibn Batuta in the fourteenth century of our era found that the women of Zebîd were perfectly ready to marry strangers. The husband might depart when he pleased, but his wife in that case could never be induced to follow him. She bade him a friendly adieu and took upon herself the whole charge of any child of the marriage." He goes on to

¹ Barton, 45.

quote from another author: "The women in the Jâhiliya, or some of them, had the right to dismiss their husbands, and the form of dismissal was this. If they lived in a tent they turned it round, so that if the door faced east it now faced west, and when the man saw this he knew that he was dismissed and did not enter." "The tent, therefore," he comments, "belonged to the woman, the husband was received in her tent and at her good pleasure." And he points out that this agrees with the account given by Ammianus Marcellinus of Saracen marriages. "According to Ammianus, marriage is a temporary contract for which the wife receives a price. After the fixed term she can depart if she so chooses, and 'to give the union an appearance of marriage the wife offers her spouse a spear and a tent by way of dowry.'" Here it is probable, as Robertson Smith supposes, that what is meant is that the husband occupies the wife's tent and is liable to serve in war with her people, so long as he remains with her. At the end of the term, whether he depart or she dismiss him, he leaves behind the spear and tent, just as the Roman *dos* returned to the wife upon divorce.¹ This kind of union for a term is said to have been recognised by Mohammed, though it is irregular by Moslem law. It was apparently intended to give security to the husband, who usually made a gift to the wife as the price of consent. It was a purely personal contract between him and her, without any intervention by the kin on either side; and it seems to have grown out of an earlier stage in which the woman, dwelling amid her own people, received and dismissed her lovers at pleasure. Even to-day a

¹ Robertson Smith, *Kinship*, 64 *sqq.*

Shiite sectary going on pilgrimage to Mecca frequently contracts one of these temporary marriages either for a certain number of days or for the duration of the visit. At the end of the time all relations between him and his temporary wife cease, both parties resuming their liberty. A child born of such a connection is regarded as a blessing for his family; "he will be venerated as a saint, for he has been begotten in the land of the Imâms."¹

Sometimes the husband, instead of residing with the wife during the marriage, is a mere visitor who comes and goes from time to time. Passages cited by Robertson Smith from Arab literature appear to show that this arrangement also was not very uncommon among the Arabs. The marriage of Samson at Timnah, which had such tragic consequences for his wife and her father, is also an example. It was obviously not intended that she should follow him, but that she should remain with her own kindred and he should visit her there. When he goes away in a rage, having cause to complain of her treachery, she comforts herself with another man, perhaps under the impression that he has deserted her for good, but in any case in the exercise of a woman's rights in that stage of nuptial evolution. The husband's visits in a marriage of the kind I am referring to are sometimes open, sometimes secret. In either case they are well understood; and the secrecy, when they are secret, becomes more and more nominal. In some cases it continues until the birth of a child, or for a definite period. Where a lasting tie is formed the relation tends to become open and avowed, and the husband is found

¹ *Anthropos*, ii. 418; iii. 186.

as a permanent, privileged guest. Ultimately, among some peoples he succeeds to the headship of the household ; more often he is allowed to remove his wife and children to his own dwelling.

Before proceeding to illustrate this process it may be observed that the story of Cupid and Psyche is founded on the custom by which a husband visits his wife only in secret and by night. Breach of the taboo results in separation and a series of adventures ending in the open and permanent union of the lovers. Variants of the story are found all over the eastern continent and are not unknown on the western. I do not propose to examine them now. I only wish to refer to them in general terms as evidence of the wide extension of the custom of secret relations between husband and wife. For though tales may travel very far from their place of origin, they are unlikely to obtain any great popularity—still less to root themselves in the form of sagas, as many of these stories have done, among widely sundered peoples—unless they are in some measure consonant with custom and therefore capable of being understood in their essential details.

I have already mentioned the matrimonial arrangements of the Nâyars of South Malabar. Among other examples in the Indian Empire may be cited the Syntengs of the Jaintia Hills in Assam. The Synteng husband visits his wife at her mother's house. "In Jowai," says Major Gurdon, "some people admitted to me that the husband came to his mother-in-law's house only after dark, and that he did not eat, smoke, or even partake of betel-nut there, the idea being that because none of his earnings go to support this house,

therefore it is not etiquette for him to partake of food or other refreshment there. If a Synteng house is visited, it is unusual to find the husbands of any of the married daughters there, although the sons of the family may be seen in the house when they have returned from work." Elsewhere the same writer says that both among the Syntengs and their neighbours the Khasis, whose marital relations we shall consider directly, there is "no gainsaying the fact that the husband, at least in theory, is a stranger in his wife's home, and it is certain that he can take no part in the rites and ceremonies of his wife's family, and that his ashes after death can find no place within the wife's family tomb, except in certain cases among the Syntengs." The exception is thus stated: "Amongst the Syntengs occasionally a widow is allowed to keep her husband's bones after his death, on condition that she does not remarry; the idea being that as long as the bones remain in the widow's keeping the spirit of her husband is still with her. On this account many wives who revere their husband's memories, and who do not contemplate remarriage, purposely keep the bones for a long time. If a widow marries, even after the customary taboo period of one year, whilst her husband's bones are still in her keeping, she is generally looked down upon. Her children in such a case perform the ceremony of handing over the bones of their father to his clan in a building specially erected for the purpose. The widow cannot enter therein, or even go near it, whilst the ceremony is proceeding, no matter whether the *jing sang*, or the price for removing the taboo after the husband's death, has been paid

to the husband's clan or not." It is plain that the retention by the widow of her husband's bones is quite exceptional; and unless she be an old woman it is probably of a very short duration. The husband is usually buried with his own clan, and his wife with hers. With the Khasis however the marriage-bond is, externally at least, of a stronger character. Among them the husband not merely visits, he goes to live with his wife in her mother's house. All the wife's earnings go to her mother, who expends them for the maintenance of the family. "After one or two children are born, and if a married couple get on well together, the husband frequently removes his wife and family to a house of his own; and from the time the wife leaves her mother's house she and her husband pool their earnings, which are expended for the support of the family."¹

If we compare the customs of the Syntengs and Khasis with those of the Menangkabau Malays of the Padang Highlands of Sumatra mentioned in the last chapter, it will be clear that we have here an example of the evolution of conjugal relations as a first stage in the evolution of kinship. Like the Syntengs and the Khasis the Menangkabau Malays reckon descent through the mother. The *suku*, or clan, is continued only through her; and marriage within the clan is forbidden. As Wilken says, "a necessary consequence of this is that the woman at marriage remains in the settlement occupied by her own clan. In fact she never forsakes the house in which she was born and has grown up. But the husband on his side also remains with his own clan in its settlement; no more

¹ Gurdon, 76, 82.

than his wife does he forsake his birthplace. Marriage thus results in no dwelling together of the married pair. Married life reveals itself merely in the form of visits which the husband pays to his wife. He comes, that is to say, by day, helps her in her work in the rice-fields and takes his midday meal with her. This at least is the way it begins. Later the visits are more seldom paid by day; the man comes privately in the evening to his wife's house, and stays there if he be a faithful husband until the following morning." This is parallel to the case of the Synteng husband; but it is instructive to find that the kindred populations lower down the Indragiri valley, who have come more into contact with the outside world have more and more modified these strictly matrilineal customs. Thus among the inhabitants of Tiga Loeroeng, though the organisation of the *suku* is preserved, the husband almost universally goes to live with his wife. He either enters her house or builds a separate dwelling for her and himself in the settlement of her *suku*. This is the first step towards fatherright. As yet, however, the father has little authority over his children, who still look to their mother's brother. They inherit a part of any property their father may leave at his death, in common with his sister's children, and are liable for half his debts. In case of separation between husband and wife the children follow the mother. Still lower down the valley the ties of motherright are further loosened. Exogamy is not insisted on. When a marriage takes place between members of the different *sukus* the question where the married pair are to reside depends on the relative strength numbers and consideration of their respective

sukus. If the husband's be the stronger he builds the home in the *kampong*, or settlement, of his *suku* and takes his bride thither. The children then belong to the *suku* in which they are born and brought up, and the mother's brothers have no rights over them. Yet in case of separation the mother takes the children back with her and they lose all rights in their father's *suku*.¹

In Formosa, according to old Dutch accounts, the "laws of wedlock were most curious, a married man not residing permanently with his wife until he was fifty years old, and it was a great disgrace should a woman give birth to a child before her thirty-seventh year." The more recent and exact information of a Japanese official who has made a study of the natives and is said to be the foremost authority upon them may perhaps explain these peculiarities. According to this gentleman the Tsalisen about Mount Kurayao in the high central range of the island effect their marriages thus. "The consent of the parents on both sides must be obtained, and the preliminary arrangements must be placed in the care of a middleman. After matters have been definitely arranged a month is allowed to intervene, and on an appointed day the suitor visits the house of his intended and a simple ceremony sanctions the right of the couple to come together. The woman remains at the home of her mother until a child is born, when she removes to the house of her husband, and the marriage is then

¹ Wilken, *Verwantschap*, 678 ; *Bijdragen*, xxxix. 43. The Sakais of the banks of the Mandau and Rokan Kiri in Sumatra have an organisation and customs similar to those of Tiga Loeroeng (*Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xxi. 322).

considered to have been effected. Should she be without issue, however, her suitor ceases to call, and all familiarity between the couple comes to an end. Both parties are now free to seek a mate elsewhere." Among the Paiwans of the hilly plains of the south "the young brave goes to the house of his beloved with fuel and water, which he places before the door. If the damsel puts them to the use for which they are intended, it signifies her acceptance. The young husband then takes up his residence among his wife's family for a few years, performing such duties as by custom falls to the men. He then removes his wife to his own house and holds there a festival to celebrate the event. The various relatives attend and offer presents of wine and betel-nuts." Among the Puyumas of the south-east, "if a woman favours the attention of a certain suitor and marriage is decided upon, the man transfers himself to the house and family of the wife. The obtaining of a husband is thus chiefly under the control of the woman and her family. It is the wife's family that is responsible for the young husband. The latter's family have renounced all further claim to him. As a son he partakes of what the house offers, but possesses no authority over the family, nor is the house or property his, until the death of his wife's parents, when as the husband of the sole owner he comes into certain rights which custom grants him." The Amis are neighbours of the Puyumas. Like them they have come under Chinese influence. But it has not sufficed to induce them to abandon their ancient marriage customs, which are similar to those of the Puyumas.¹ Thus

¹ Davidson, 15, 573, 575, 577, 579.

while in the other cases the sojourn of the husband in his wife's home is of a temporary character, leading to the removal of his wife and children to his own home, with the Puyumas and Amis he enters the wife's family permanently and eventually becomes its head.

In Japan it would seem that descent was originally matrilineal. The wife remained with her own relatives and the husband had only the right of visiting her by night. The word for *marriage* signified *to slip by night into the house*. It was only in the fourteenth century of our era that the husband's residence became the centre of family life and marriage became a regular dwelling together by the married pair. Even now when a man marries an only daughter he goes to live at her house and the children take her family name. There is moreover another type of marriage in which a man who has daughters but no son adopts a stranger and gives him one of his daughters in marriage. Children born of this union are considered as heirs of their maternal grandfather, and their father has a far from enviable position in the family.¹

An interesting relic of marriage in which the husband visited his wife only in secret is found among the

¹ *L'Année Soc.* viii. 422, citing Kojiro Twasaky, *Das Japanische Erbrecht*; 410, citing F. Tsugaru, *Die Lehre von der Jap. Adoption*. See also *Ibid.* v. 343, citing T. Fukuda, *Die gesellsch. und wirtsch. Entwicklung in Japan*. "En effet, quand l'homme ne pouvait acheter sa femme ou la capturer, il n'avait pas le droit de l'emmenner chez lui; il ne pouvait avoir de commerce avec elle que dans la maison de ses beaux-parents et les enfants, issus d'une telle union, appartenaient à la famille de la mère." If Morgan's information be correct the husband not merely of the only daughter, but of the eldest daughter goes to her father's house to reside and takes her family name (*Morgan, Syst. Consang.* 428).

wandering Tipperah, or as they call themselves Mrung, of Bengal. When a match is "made with the consent of the parents the young man has to serve three years in his father-in-law's house before he obtains his wife or is formally married. During the period of probation his sweetheart is to all intents and purposes a wife to him. On the wedding night, however, the bridegroom has to sleep with his wife surreptitiously, entering the house by stealth and leaving it before dawn. He then absents himself for four days, during which time he makes a round of visits among all his friends. On the fourth day he is escorted back with great ceremony, and has to give another feast to his *cortège*."¹

The Yakuts at present reckon descent through the father; but there are indications in language in tradition and in existing customs of a more archaic stage. Among such indications is the rule that a bride is not given to her husband immediately after the marriage, even though the bride-price which is always exacted may have been paid. She is retained at home either under pretence of getting ready her outfit or of her youth and inexperience, formerly for four or five years, but now for somewhat less. Meanwhile the bridegroom visits her from time to time, bringing in his hand a substantial present to her parents. If the bride-price have been paid he is sometimes admitted to reside with her in her parents' home.² The Yakuts are polygamous; and a man who is obliged to make frequent journeys has a wife in every place.³ The custom of the Aleutian islanders is to marry a girl from another village. After marriage the bride

¹ Risley, *Tribes*, ii. 325.

² *J. A. I.* xxxi. 84, 80, 83.

³ Potter, 138, quoting de Lesseps. *Cf. J. A. I.* xxxi. 94.

remains in her father's house for a certain time or until the birth of a child. The bridegroom is at liberty to visit her and to stay for days at a time, but not to remove her to his own village until the expiration of the customary period unless a child be born meanwhile.¹

Among some of the Turcomans a married daughter is retained for a year in her parents' house. Meanwhile the husband can have only stolen interviews with her; and if caught he is required to give her parents a considerable present. These proceedings continue until the birth of the first child.² In the Sinaitic peninsula it is usual to capture the bride by force. The bridegroom flings his mantle (called *aba*) over her, saying, "No one shall cover thee but I," and forthwith carries her off to his own tent. But among the Mezeyne tribe the flinging of the *aba* is the signal for her escape to the mountains, whither her bridegroom at once pursues her. She allows herself of course to be caught, and they spend the night together in the open air. With the dawn she flees again, this time back to her home. There she abides and meets her husband only by night until conception has taken place, when at last she enters her husband's tent.³

In the Caucasus a Cherkess, though he has taken his wife to live with him, dare not show himself in public with her. For six or eight weeks he visits her in secret, entering it is said by the window. It is at any time a gross breach of propriety to speak to him

¹ F. A. Golder, *Journ. Am. F. L.* xx. 134, translating Veniaminov.

² Post, *Studien*, 242, citing Vambéry; McLennan, *Studies*, i. 186, citing Fraser.

³ Löbel, 42; McLennan, *op. cit.* 181, citing Burckhardt. A later stage in the evolution of this ceremony is described by Jaussen, 53 note.

of her as his wife, or to inquire after her health.¹ Among the Ossetes the bride is taken to her husband's abode, but he himself goes to live at his foster-father's or in the house of a friend. Thence he visits her secretly and by night. At the end of a year or even longer she is allowed to pay a visit to her parents, whom she has not seen since her marriage. It is only after she returns with gifts from them to her husband's relatives that she is publicly recognised as his wife. But no man dare caress his own children in the presence of other people : he would become such an object of contempt that nobody would give him his hand, and any one might without being liable to punishment spit in his face.² The Chevsurs, who are strict exogamists, on the other hand leave the wife for a year at least in her own family. The relations between her and her husband are not recognised. They are so far secret that husband and wife do not speak to one another nor even look at each other in the presence of strangers, until at all events the first child is born. The Chechen bridegroom has a right to visit his bride between the betrothal and the wedding ; but he must keep out of the way of her parents. Both among the Chechens and the Ingush he must always avoid his mother-in-law : her glance is of evil omen. Among the Transcaucasian Tartars the bridegroom ordinarily visits the

¹ Löbel, 70 ; Darinsky, *Zeits. vergl. Rechstw.* xiv. 188 ; Potter, 135 note, citing Wake ; Kovalevsky, *L'Anthrop.* iv. 268.

² *Rev. Hist. Rel.* xlii. 459, citing Borisievitch ; Darinsky, *loc. cit.* The Ossetes who are now in the stage of fatherright with strongly developed patriarchal institutions, preserve another relic of an earlier stage in the custom of a married woman to return during pregnancy to her parents' house and there to be delivered (*Globus*, lxxxviii. 24).

bride by night. And he is most solicitous to keep these interviews from the knowledge of other people. For the youth of the village and among them the brothers and kinsmen of the bride lie in wait for him and beat him without pity as he comes away from the house. Customs such as these are in fact found among almost all the tribes of the Caucasus.¹

There are substantial reasons, one of which has been mentioned in the last chapter, for believing that in prehistoric Greece kinship was counted only through the mother. According to Plutarch (whose testimony is important though we may reject the cause he assigns) the relations between husband and wife in Sparta were at first secret; the husband's visits were nocturnal only, and were conducted with precautions against discovery by the rest of the family. Nor was this secrecy of short duration. Sometimes it lasted for years and children had been born before husband and wife had an interview by daylight.² A similar cause to that alleged by Plutarch is still given by the Albanian population of Turkey for the same custom. "A romantic reserve," we are told, "surrounds the interviews between the young couple, who, especially if the husband be one of a numerous family and have no private apartments, can only meet in secret until they have children of their own. The mountaineers cherish this custom which, they contend, by surrounding with a halo of romance and mystery the relations of the young couple tends to keep their love for each other fresh and warm."³ In both cases doubtless the cause assigned is a subsequent invention to account for a

¹ Kovalevsky, *L'Anthrop.* iv. 272; Darinsky, *op. cit.* 188 sqq., 204.

² Plut. *Lycurgus.*

³ Garnett, *Wom.* ii. 257.

custom no longer understood. The story told by Pausanias about Ulysses' marriage points to a custom in Lacedæmon of the husband's going to reside with his wife's family. After Icarius (it runs) had given Penelope in marriage to the hero, "he tried to induce his son-in-law to take up his abode in Lacedæmon. Failing in the attempt he next besought his daughter to stay behind. And when she was setting out for Ithaca he followed the chariot, entreating her. Ulysses stood it for a time; but at last he told Penelope either to follow him freely, or if she liked her father better to go back to Lacedæmon. They say that she answered nothing, but simply drew down her veil in reply to the question. So Icarius, seeing that she wished to depart with Ulysses let her go, and set up an image of modesty" at the point of the road where she let down her veil.¹ In the island of Kythnos to-day, though the marriage is public and solemnised with rejoicings, the bride does not leave her parental home; the bridegroom comes to live with her there. On her parents' death the eldest daughter succeeds to the house; and if a girl have not the prospect of this succession another house must be provided by herself or her family, otherwise she cannot obtain a husband.²

Among the ancient Cantabrians the daughters succeeded their parents though, Strabo tells us, they were required to provide wives for their brothers, by which is doubtless meant that they provided the funds to enable them to obtain wives, who were probably not brought home.³ What was perhaps a relic of this rule

¹ Pausanias, iii. 20 (10), Frazer's translation.

² Hauteceœur, *Kythnos*, 17.

³ Strabo, iii. 4, 18.

existed until recent times among the Basques. The eldest child whether son or daughter inherited. When the eldest child was a daughter her husband came to live at his wife's house with her parents. There he played a very limited part in the family; the real power was hers. The eldest son was not allowed to marry an heiress, nor the eldest daughter an heir.¹ As we have seen in a previous chapter, a Transylvanian Gypsy enters his wife's clan, but his complete union with it is not recognised until she has borne him a child.² Previous to that time his relation is obviously provisional and probably in earlier times was not recognised.³

The custom by which the wife continues to live at her own home and there receives the visits, open or

¹ *L'Année Soc.* iii. 379; Simcox, i. 212, 461. Cf. the Japanese custom, *supra*, p. 14. There is reason to suspect that a somewhat similar custom prevailed among the ancient Egyptians. On succession and on the position of women in general among the Basques, see A. R. Whiteway, *Eng. Hist. Rev.* xv. 625 *sqq.*

² Potter, 116, citing von Wlislöcki. I have not von Wlislöcki's work before me and cannot judge of the exact force of the word translated *clan*; but it is unimportant for our present purpose.

³ Secret cohabitation does not appear in all of these modern examples: but it may be observed that in the north of Europe the nocturnal visits of an accepted lover are or were until quite recent years an ordinary part of the courtship. They are reported from Sweden, Germany, Switzerland, Holland, Scotland, the Lake District of England, and from Wales. Although the interviews take place upon or even in the lady's bed the pair are supposed to be dressed and to confine themselves to innocent endearments. It is only natural that the hypothesis imperfectly corresponds to the facts. Little harm is thought of whatever may take place if marriage follow in due course. So usual is the practice referred to that there are special verbs in the languages of all the countries named to describe it. See Potter, 133 *sqq.*; Liebrecht, 379; Lloyd, 346. Cf. the North American and other practices, *infra*, pp. 31, 66, 85, 89, 90.

secret, of her husband is found among many natives of Africa, and there as elsewhere it is often the preliminary of a more permanent cohabitation. Among the Bari of the Upper Nile the bride remains for the first few weeks of the marriage in her father's house and there receives her husband's visits.¹ The Mohammedan profession of the Beni Amer of Abyssinia is not unalloyed with many of their earlier customs. The wife is indeed taken to the husband's dwelling. But she has the right to return at any time to her mother's house, where she stays for months at a time, letting her husband know that he may visit her if he cares for her. She may on the other hand put an end to the marriage altogether at her own good pleasure by simply returning home; the husband of course has a similar right to leave her. The most usual form of marriage is by payment of a bride-price, which is not retained by the bride's father but becomes a common provision for the married pair, and of an additional gift to her relatives. Further, the bridegroom makes a present to her after the consummation of the marriage. Virginity is prized in a bride and is secured by an operation performed at a tender age. After the birth of the first child the operation is repeated, and requires a fresh present before it can be undone. A woman as a rule cares little for her husband and is always ready for an act of infidelity, especially where there is a prospect of gain. She tyrannises over him, many a time not stopping short of ruining and then leaving him. But she prizes her brother above everything.²

The people of Sarae, somewhat further to the south,

¹ Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 395, citing Brun-Rollet.

² Munzinger, 324, 319, 320, 326.

are nominally Christians. Among them also the women hold a position of much consideration. Betrothal is procured by payment and is entered into very early. At marriage the bride's father must give the young couple five times the value of the sum received by him at betrothal. The bridegroom however is supposed to pay him a small bride-price. The actual payment is commonly postponed, and separation renders the claim void. The wife, in addition to the natural hold on her own family, has a special defender and sureties to protect her from her husband. In her earlier married life too she is accustomed to spend a great part of the year in her father's house, and her husband visits her there.¹

Among the Wakamba the customary bride-price is paid either in one sum or by poorer people in instalments. Until it is all paid up the bridegroom cannot enter publicly into possession of the bride. She remains in the meantime in her father's custody, where he is at liberty to visit her. Any children already born are transferred to him by the public celebration of the marriage.² So the Mosuto bridegroom after payment of the first instalment or earnest of the bride-price is entitled to conjugal intercourse with the bride in her parents' house. This continues until he fetches her home; but any children born before the bride-price is paid up, belongs to her father or his heirs.³ The Basuto, albeit in the stage of fatherright, preserve many relics of matrilineal institutions, to which these are to be reckoned. On the island of Fernando Po

¹ Munzinger, 387.

² J. M. Hildebrandt, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* x. 401.

³ *Id.* vi. 39.

the first wife (for the people are polygynists) is obtained by two years' service. During this period the girl remains in a hut concealed as much as possible from public gaze. Though courtship goes on, conjugal intimacy is not permitted until the two years have expired. The girl as bride is still further detained in the hut until unequivocal symptoms of motherhood appear, or failing them for eighteen months. At last she makes her appearance in public as wife, surrounded by a troop of singing and dancing maidens, and a feast is held.¹

For a polygamous people reckoning kinship through the mother it is almost a matter of course, where the political conditions permit, that a man who can afford it should have wives in different places with whom he lives by turns. Among the Babwende in the neighbourhood of Stanley Pool on the Congo, the wife remains at her own town among her kinsfolk; the husband sojourns with her for awhile and then goes on to another, returning from time to time as he feels inclined. The missionary who records the custom attributes it to the peculiarly excitable character of the tribe, which renders it dangerous for a woman to live where she has not the protection of her relatives.² The custom is found however among other tribes of West Africa. Miss Kingsley records it as a characteristic of the native trader, and ascribes it to the necessity of an alliance in every village he is accustomed to visit. "I know myself," she says, "one gentleman whose wives stretch over three hundred miles of country, with a good wife base in a coast town as well. This system of judiciously conducted alliances

¹ Allen and Thomson, ii. 203.

² Bentley, ii. 44.

gives the black trader a security nothing else can, because naturally he marries into influential families at each village, and all his wife's relations on the mother's side regard him as one of themselves and look after him and his interests."¹ Such reasons may help to strengthen and perpetuate a form of marriage which would otherwise tend to be submerged beneath the husband's desire for exclusive possession ; but it must have originated independently in the practice of mother-right. Among the Wayao and Mang'anja of the Shire Highlands, south of Lake Nyassa, a man on marrying leaves his own village and goes to live at his wife's, though as an alternative he now sometimes pays a bride-price and takes the bride away. If, as frequently happens, he has more than one wife, he spends his time with each of them in turn at her own village. If all the children of any of his wives die he may leave her altogether.² We have already found an example of this kind of marriage among the Yakuts, and we shall find others elsewhere. Among the Bassa Komo of Nigeria visits are paid on both sides. Marriage is usually effected by an exchange of sisters or other female relatives. "Husband and wife do not live in the same house ; but all the men live in one part of the village and the women in another. The wife visits the husband or *vice versa*. The women look after all the children, but when four years old the boys go to work and live with their fathers." The woman's consent is necessary to the marriage, and she is supposed to be faithful to her husband ; but he may

¹ Kingsley, *Trav.* 315.

² Duff Macdonald, i. 136, 140, 146 ; Werner, 132, 133 ; Rattray, 116, 202.

marry as many wives as he has sisters or female relatives undisposed of. The tribe practising this curious form of conjugal arrangement appears to reckon kinship through the father.¹

The Bororó of Central Brazil obtain their livelihood chiefly by hunting; they reckon their lineage through the mother, and are still in the stage of savagery. According to von den Steinen the men (except the heads of households) live together in a common house. After marriage the husband continues to dwell there by day when he is not on a hunting expedition: he visits his wife at her parents' home only by night, where the young couple are allowed a hearth to themselves. This mode of life goes on until the death of the wife's parents, when the husband becomes the head of the household and takes up his permanent abode there.² A more recent traveller gives additional details and a somewhat different account. He tells us that the proposal of marriage always comes from the woman. After acceptance the man waits for several days, because he is ashamed to be seen entering his bride's house. Occasionally her father fetches him late at night that he may not be hurt by the gibes and mockery of the men in the *bahito* (common house.) "After marriage the man stays in the house of the bride until he has a family of his own, when he builds a house for himself."³ These two accounts are not irreconcilable. The sense of shame spoken of in

¹ *Journ. Afr. Soc.* viii. 15, 17.

² Von den Steinen, 501.

³ *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 390. The Abipones required payment of a bride-price; but the husband lived with his wife's parents until after the birth of a child, or at all events for some time, when he was allowed to take her to a separate hut (Dobrizhoffer, ii. 208).

the latter account (which is said to be accentuated when neither husband nor wife has had sexual intercourse before) points to secret intercourse as the ordinary mode of marriage. This inference is confirmed by von den Steinen's statement that the consent of parents is not required. They neither give nor receive anything for the marriage, which is evidently regarded as a matter concerning only the contracting parties themselves. If the parents object, strife ensues and the matter may have to be decided by force. Residence in a separate dwelling after children have made their appearance may be dependent on circumstances. Where for instance there are more daughters than one in a family it is obvious that the husbands of all of them cannot ultimately succeed to the headship of the household, and in such a case separate dwellings would be necessary.

An interesting counterpart to the practice of the Bororó is found among the Bontoc Igorot inhabiting the central part of Northern Luzon in the Philippines. There not the men but the unmarried girls of each village live in a large building called the *olâg*. Sexual intimacy is a preliminary to marriage, which rarely takes place prior to pregnancy. Infant betrothal is practised ; but it is subject to the confirmation of the parties when they grow up, and family quarrels on the subject are said to be common. When a young couple wish to marry, if the parents consent, the girl continues to sleep in the *olâg* and the youth spends most of his nights with her ; but they take their meals with the girl's parents, and the youth gives his labour to the family. This is the visiting stage. It continues for some months, until either she becomes pregnant or he

transfers his affections to another girl. When pregnancy occurs the girl's father builds or gives her a house, and the marriage ceremony takes place immediately on occupation of the dwelling. The preliminary union is therefore a trial union, the object being to ascertain whether the marriage will be fruitful. During this period it is to be observed that though the girl, as not yet married, continues to sleep in the *olâg* both she and her lover are in fact part of her parents' household; and when the period comes to an end it is the girl's father who provides them with a home.¹ The Igorot now recognise kinship through both father and mother.

The Molucca islands afford examples of almost all grades of conjugal relation. In the Luang-Sermata group the husband enters his wife's family; and if he wed a girl in another village he is practically lost to his kin. A man may have as many as five wives, each of whom of course lives apart from the others, besides less regular connections. In such cases he must be a mere visitor at his wives' homes.² Likewise in the Babar Archipelago the husband follows the wife and dwells in her house; and the children belong to the wife's family. Contrary to the practice in the Luang-Sermata group a bride-price is paid, but it seems only to carry the right to cohabitation, not to removal. When rich enough a man may marry as many as seven wives, each of whom continues to live in her maternal home. On the other hand it is a glory to capture a woman from another village and bring her away, in which case, whether compensation be paid or not, the children follow the father.³ On the

¹ Jenks, 68.

² Riedel, 324.

³ *Id.* 351.

islands of Ambon and Uliase there are two kinds of betrothal, the secret and the open, preceded both alike by intimate acquaintance and sexual intercourse. Secret betrothal ends in elopement. Open betrothal means a formal offer of marriage made on the bridegroom's behalf by his relatives. On its acceptance he establishes himself in his bride's dwelling, helping her parents in their daily work and contributing to the expenses of the household. He is not allowed to eat with his wife or her parents, nor to speak to her in their presence ; and if he leave the house temporarily he must let them know whither he is going. But he cohabits clandestinely with her. This position, which is practically one of servitude, may last for years ; and the children born while it lasts belong to the mother's family. Sometimes, instead of going to reside in the family, the bridegroom merely visits his bride once or twice a week until the time for the formal ceremony, which is dependent on the payment of the bride-price, is fixed. When payment is made a feast is held, the bride is handed over to the bridegroom and conducted to his dwelling. Elopement is said to have been the primitive form of marriage in these islands ; but so far as I am aware the assertion does not rest on any substantial evidence. It is accomplished by the help of the bridegroom's relatives. The bride's parents are then appeased by payment, and the bride enters her husband's dwelling and family.¹ Here it is clear that the payment of the bride-price effects the transfer of the wife and her children—at least her future children—from her family to her husband's. On the island of Makisar marriage may take place by elopement and

¹ Riedel, 67.

subsequent payment of compensation. The children then follow the father. It seems more usual to conclude a formal agreement between the families. The young couple in this event live for awhile with the bridegroom's parents, until they set up a house of their own ; but the children follow the mother. With permission of the first wife a man may marry as many as five wives ; and the later wives dwell with their parents or in separate dwellings, except in case of poverty, when all the wives live under one roof of which the first is mistress.¹ Conversely on the island of Wetar the pair live at the wife's home until they get a separate dwelling ; but a bride-price is paid and divided between the bride's parents and the other members of her family. This assures the children to the father. He is, however, in nowise bound to care for them, but leaves this duty entirely to their mother.²

On the island of Serang intercourse between unmarried youths and girls is unrestrained. When a pair after some experience of one another in this way determine to live together, the fact is announced to the girl's parents. If they do not object the youth enters their house without any formality, and is considered as a member of the family. Nothing is said by the girl's parents about bride-price ; but this is usually paid as soon as she becomes pregnant, or after a satisfactory trial of married life. An exchange of presents between the families takes place on the public recognition of the marriage. When payment of the bride-price is completed the wife enters her husband's family ; but this does not discharge him from the duty of making constant gifts to her parents in order to

¹ Riedel, 415.

² *Id.* 447.

keep alive his right to her and her children. In some districts children born before payment of the bride-price remain with their mother's parents. If the bride-price be not paid the husband remains in the wife's family and the lands of his kindred become security for the payment. Needy youths work out the bride-price; or by agreement some of the children may be taken by the bride's parents in discharge of it.¹ On the Tanembar and Timorlaut islands marriage is always preceded by sexual intercourse. A bride-price must be paid. It is an honour to the bridegroom to pay it all up at once. Indeed it is more than an honour: it is a substantial advantage. For although he is at liberty to marry after payment of one instalment, he has no right to take the bride away from her parents' dwelling, and they retain some power over her. Moreover in case of separation the children follow her. But payment of the bride-price changes all that. It enables him to take the bride to his own dwelling. It gives him full rights over her, and the children follow him in case of separation, unless he give her cause by grave ill-treatment. In the latter event she is empowered to take them with her, as well as all the property she may have acquired during the marriage. If by ill-luck he cannot complete the payment he lives in *matrimonium injustum*, or *beena* marriage, and once children are born he is bound to the service of his wife's parents so long as they survive.²

One way of marriage on the Watubela Islands is by agreement to which the kin on both sides are parties. A bride-price is paid, gifts are exchanged and the

¹ Riedel, 131.

² *Id.* 300.

bride is formally handed over to her husband in his home. But side by side with this there is another way, by which the youth having gained his sweetheart's favour comes secretly to sleep with her and remains in her apartment until discovered by her parents. When this happens, declaring his passion for their daughter he gives himself wholly up to them to be dealt with as they decide, or as it is figuratively expressed "to be marked as their slave." If they are willing he stays in his wife's house, enters her family and works for her and her parents. His children then follow their mother; but if later he be in a position to pay the bride-price the children follow him and he obtains full rights over them as in the more formal marriage previously mentioned. If the parents are unwilling for the marriage, the youth on being discovered is compelled to leave the house and pay compensation equivalent to a sovereign of our money. Monogamy is the rule.¹ In the Romang Archipelago unmarried girls are allowed unrestricted intercourse with men. A youth intending to marry pays repeated visits to the house of his beloved, to whom he offers a *sarong*, or scarf, and some glass beads. If these things are accepted he stays in the house and endeavours to obtain her utmost favours openly in the presence of her parents or relatives. When this happens the latter flare up in a rage, abuse him and demand immediate payment of the bride-price; they snatch up their weapons and rush off to the dwelling of the youth's parents or relatives as if they will fight them. The youth's relatives, thus attacked, on their part seize their weapons and issuing forth inquire what is the

¹ Riedel, 206.

matter, at the same time standing on their guard against assault. At last one of the assailants asks whether the bride-price will be paid. On an affirmative answer being returned both parties separate as friends and in a high state of merriment over the scene which has taken place. The youth remains in his wife's house and being incorporated into her family loses all rights in his parents' house. The first-born child is yielded to the wife's parents, and in return the bride-price is repaid. The other children belong to their mother.¹ On the islands of Leti, Moa and Lakor no bride-price is paid; the husband lives in his wife's house until he builds a separate dwelling; and of the children the boys follow their mother and are incorporated in her family, while the girls belong to their father.² The population of the Seranglao and Gorong Archipelago has accepted Islam. This has naturally affected the marriage customs; but an interesting relic of the earlier conditions is found. As soon as the marriage is agreed on and before the bride-price is paid the bridegroom is entitled to resort by day to the bride's father's dwelling and there to eat and drink, in which case the bride must serve him. He is further entitled to pass the nights there, sharing the bed with his bride, in order, it is said, that they may learn to know one another. In return he is bound to yield a portion of his earnings to the bride, and to help her parents. But apparently he is not supposed to consummate the marriage until payment of the bride-price. This, however, is not always paid at once. Any children born before payment is completed follow the

¹ Riedel, 464.

² *Id.* 390, 392.

mother's family ; but subsequent payment secures them to the father.¹

In Talauer, Sengir and the other small islands between Celebes and the Philippines motherright is the rule. The husband goes to reside in the wife's house and becomes a member of her family. The marriage-bond, however, is loose, for divorces frequently occur. As a bride-price is paid, it is only rich men who can afford the luxury of frequent change of wives. In Talauer in case of the wife's adultery her paramour has to pay a fine not to her husband, but to her parents.² On the island of Engano the husband almost always enters at marriage the family of his wife ; and so close is the bond thus created that her death is very far from dissolving it. If he afterwards contract a marriage in another family that of his deceased wife is entitled to compensation. The reason of this is partly, at any rate, economic ; for on entering a family by marriage the husband works in the fields of his new relations and thus contributes to the support of the entire circle. A new marriage means a transfer of his labour, of the benefit of which the family of his former wife is thus deprived.³ On

¹ Riedel, 171 *sqq.* The intervention of the *imam* in the marriage ceremonies is of course proper, but it seems to be not essential if the bride-price have been paid.

² Hickson, *J. A. I.* xvi. 138.

³ Modigliani, *Isola*, 215. A small payment is made for the bride. Theoretically a man may have as many wives as he likes ; but monogamy is the rule, the contrary being very rare (*Ibid.* 211, 212). Separation however is very common and is usually carried out by agreement, the parties remaining the best of friends. I cannot discover definitely from the author's account whether the Enganese reckon descent through the mother or through the father. It would seem from the above and certain other customs that they are in the stage of motherright.

the island of Timor there are some very curious regulations. The men belonging to the kingdom of Bibiçuçu can obtain wives by barter, that is by payment of a bride-price, from the neighbouring kingdom of Manufahi ; but the men of Manufahi cannot purchase wives from Bibiçuçu. A man of Manufahi who wishes to marry a woman of Bibiçuçu must come and live with his wife in her country : no purchase-money may be paid or accepted for such a marriage. This rule extends even to the rajah of Manufahi himself. But there is a further complication. "Saluki and Bidauk are two districts of the kingdom of Bibiçuçu. A man of Saluki may marry a woman of Bidauk, and take her back with him to Saluki ; but he must purchase her, and it is not in his option to remain in Bidauk with his wife's relations instead of paying for her. On the other hand the men of Bidauk can marry with the women of Saluki ; but the man must go to Saluki and live in the house of the woman, and he has not the option of paying for her at all. The children of the union belong to her, and on her death inherit all the property, while the husband returns to his own kingdom [*sic*: district?], leaving the children behind him, except in case of there being more than two, when he is entitled to claim at least one."¹

In Borneo the Dyaks and other tribes dwell in vast houses which accommodate two or three hundred or even more persons. This population of a house consists of related families, each family having an apartment to itself. In Sarawak a Land-Dyak bride-

¹ Forbes, 457 ; *J. A. I.* xiii, 414.

groom "generally betakes himself to the apartment of his wife's parents or relations, and becomes one of the family. Occasionally, as for example when the bride has many brothers and sisters, or when the bridegroom is the support of aged parents, or of younger brothers and sisters, the bride enters and becomes one of the family of her husband."¹ Among the Balans or Sea-Dyaks of Lingga, "as a general rule if the bride be an only daughter, or of higher rank, the husband joins her family; if he be of higher rank or an only son, she follows him. . . . If they should be of equal condition and similarly circumstanced, they divide the time among their respective families until they set up house-keeping on their own account."² Among the Sibuyau Dyaks of Lundu, the Dusuns and other tribes the rule is that the husband follows the wife, lives with and works for her parents, and the children belong to their family.³ The Sea-Dyaks settle the place of residence of the young pair, whether in the household of the bride or of the bridegroom, in the course of the marriage negotiations.⁴ The natives of the Barito River basin in British North Borneo often betroth their children very young. If this be not done they marry from inclination when they have arrived at adult life. In either case they dwell after marriage with the wife's parents; although, it is said, the wife is considered as a member of the husband's family as well as the husband a member of the wife's family. Marriage is life-long, and as a general rule the man is content with

¹ St. John, i. 162.

² *Id.* 52.

³ *Id.* 50; Roth, *Sarawak*, i. 124, 125; Wilken, *Verwantschap*, 733; Bastian, *Indonesien*, iv. 24, 26.

⁴ *Anthropos*, i. 167.

one spouse.¹ The peculiarities of the marital arrangements of both Timor and Borneo seem to point to a conflict between the old mother-right and the father-right which is superseding or has superseded it.²

The Wagawaga tribe, on Tauwara, British New Guinea, reckon kinship in the female line; and conformably thereto the husband goes to live among the wife's kin.³ This is the custom on Ruck, one of the Caroline Islands;⁴ and concerning the Mortlock Islands, usually regarded as belonging to the Caroline group, we are told that the man who marries a woman of another tribe must go to dwell with her and cultivate her land. He does not relinquish his own land at his own home, but he brings the produce to his wife's family.⁵ The natives of the Melanesian island of Rotuma are organised in exogamous clans descendible in the female line, and each dwelling by itself. On marriage the husband as a rule entered the wife's clan, or *hoag*, and came to live with her. In the case of a big chief or the head of a clan, or if the man

¹ Roth, *op. cit.* ii. clxxix. citing Dr. Schwaner. If we may believe Dr. Schwaner's report, "Members of the same family are allowed to contract marriage, nay, even the nearest relations, brothers and sisters, parents and children."

² It is hardly necessary to emphasise the statement already made or implied that the place of residence of husband or wife during the marriage is by no means an infallible test of the existence of male or female kinship. In Australia the prevailing rule, whether the kin be reckoned through males or through females, is that the woman goes to live with her husband. There are, however, a few exceptions; but they seem to have been insisted on from political reasons (Howitt, 220, 225, 234).

³ *Colonial Rep.* No. 131. *Brit. New Guinea*, 1893-4, 80.

⁴ *L'Année Soc.* iv. 328, reviewing *Globus*, lxxvi. 37 *sqq.*

⁵ Bastian, *Indonesien*, iii. 96. Bastian with his incorrigible negligence professes to quote but gives no reference.

belonged to a very rich *hoag*, the bride usually entered his *hoag*. The husband who entered his wife's *hoag*, however, only remained in it during her lifetime. When she died, as the corpse was taken out through one door of the house he was pushed out of the other, signifying that he had now no right in it. These arrangements are undergoing modification, and it is instructive to compare the process with some of the other customs already mentioned and to be mentioned hereafter. During the first three days of marriage a wedded pair now "remain in the woman's house, but on the fourth are decked out in big mats and flowers and brought in procession to the man's house. After the sixth day they go to whichever *hoag* they are going to live in; a usual arrangement at the present day is for them to live half a year in each. . . . Of course such a method now often leads to the separation of the pair, the wife going back to her old home. The husband then cooks some taro and a pig, which he takes to her, after which she is bound to let him remain with her, or go with him, for one night."¹ On the Murray Islands in Torres Straits the natives were divided into totemic clans, but fatherright had so far prevailed that children might take either their mother's or their father's totem, while inheritance not merely of chieftainship but also of property had become hereditary from father to child. Marriage was by elopement followed by payment of a bride-price and a formal ceremony which lasted for some days. On its

¹ J. Stanley Gardiner, *J. A. I.* xxvii. 429, 478, 485, 480. I gather, though it is not explicitly stated in Mr. Gardiner's account, that the separation was not final, but that the husband was entitled to the society of his wife as often as he thought fit to bring her the gift of the taro and pig.

conclusion "at first the married couple would live with the husband's friends, but afterwards would alternate and sometimes stay [by which I understand *make their permanent abode*] with the wife's relations."¹ Nauru is an island in the Pacific Ocean, west of the Gilbert group. Its population is derived from the Gilbert, Marshall and Caroline Islands. Motherright is the rule here, and accordingly on marriage a man always goes to his wife's house. When the eldest daughter in a family marries her parents give up to her their house and build a new one close by for themselves. For each other daughter on marriage a new house is built in the immediate neighbourhood.² Contrary to most of the Micronesian islands the population of Yap reckon descent through the father; yet not without remains of an earlier stage. A man makes a present to his father-in-law on his marriage; but he receives a present in return. He does not take his wife to his home; he goes to hers. Though monogamy is the rule polygyny is recognised so far that a man may have as many as four wives at one time. Each of these wives lives with her own kin; it would seem therefore that he must visit them in turn. Separation is common, and is allowed on almost any pretext. There must however be some ground, it only a trivial one. There is no distinction in law, and not much in social standing, between legitimate and illegitimate children: if the father will not take an illegitimate child the mother's family will; and it then inherits from her father.³

Among Polynesian peoples it was the custom of

¹ Rev. A. E. Hunt, *J. A. I.*, xxviii. 6, 7, 9, 10.

² *Globus*, xci. 76, 57.

³ *Ibid.* 141, 142.

the natives of Bowditch Island that the husband went to live with the wife's kindred. Inasmuch however as polygyny was allowed it is to be presumed that where more wives than one were married this custom only applied to the first.¹ Like most of the Polynesians the Maori have reached the patrilineal stage; but many vestiges of the reckoning of descent through the mother are to be found. The marriage ceremony consists in a simulated capture of the bride, in former days a very real and often bloody struggle. A few days afterwards the lady's relatives appear and demand reparation. A palaver ensues, ending in a handsome present by the husband and a feast at his expense. But sometimes, Mr. Taylor tells us, "the father simply told his intended son-in-law he might come and live with his daughter; she was thenceforth considered his wife, he lived with his father-in-law and became one of the tribe, or *hapu*, to which his wife belonged, and in case of war was often obliged to fight against his own relatives. So common is the custom of the bridegroom going to live with his wife's family that it frequently occurs, when he refuses to do so, she will leave him and go back to her relatives. Several instances came under my notice where young men have tried to break through this custom and have so lost their wives."²

The influence of Brahmanism on the aboriginal population of India has been so potent that far fewer examples of motherright are to be found among them than might have been expected. Some of the more complete of these have already been mentioned.

¹ *J. A. I.* xxi. 54.

² Taylor, 337; *J. A. I.* xix. 103.

Several of the Dravidian tribes that have adopted patrilineal reckoning preserve the relics of mother-right, especially in the shape of residence by the husband with his wife's family. It prevails for instance among the Kharwârs and Parahiya and is common among the Ghasiyas in the United Provinces. In all three cases the son-in-law is required to pass a period of probation of one year working for his father-in-law, during which he is entitled to maintenance, but he has no right of inheritance in his father-in-law's property. Further traces of mother-right are discoverable among the last-named tribe. Marriage appears to be an affair of individual choice. "If a girl fancies a young man all she has to do is to give him a kick on the leg at the tribal dance of the Karama, and then the parents think it as well to hasten on the wedding. In fact, it seems often to be the case that the man is allowed to try the girl first, and if she suits him and seems likely to be fertile he marries her." The wife too has rights inconsistent with patrilineal custom. She may leave her husband if he intrigue with another woman, or if he become insane, impotent, blind or leprous. None of these bodily disabilities will justify a husband's repudiation of his wife; and repudiation for adultery is uncommon, because adultery within the tribe is little thought of, while women are so jealously guarded against intrigues with aliens that they seldom occur. "Besides this, nothing but the evidence of eye-witnesses to the act of adultery is accepted."¹ I have already mentioned

¹ Crooke, *Tribes and Castes*, iii. 242; iv. 128; ii. 414, 412. A Bhuiya girl has only to kick a young man on the ankle during a dance and the parents marry the couple forthwith (ii. 83). A

the marriage custom of the Tipperah of Bengal. Residence by the husband and service in the father-in-law's house is also one of the forms of marriage practised by the Santáls. It is resorted to when a girl is ugly or deformed and there is no prospect of her marrying in any other way. The husband is expected to serve for five years. "At the end of that time he gets a pair of bullocks, some rice and some agricultural implements, and is allowed," we are told, "to go about his business:" by which we are presumably to understand that the marriage is at an end.¹ Among the Badagas of the Nilgiri Hills "it is said to be common for one who is in want of labourers to promise his daughter in marriage to the son or other relative of a neighbour not in circumstances so flourishing as himself; and these engagements being entered into, the intended bridegroom serves the father of his

Santal youth by surreptitiously marking a girl on the forehead with vermilion or indeed any common earth makes her his wife (Risley, *Tribes and Castes*, ii. 230). Cf. the Ntlakápamux custom cited below p. 90.

¹ Risley, *Tribes*, ii. 230. What is called *beena* marriage is in fact not very uncommon in India. For examples, see Crooke, *Tribes and Castes*, i. 281; ii. 109, 218, 434. It is possible that the custom of *Illatom* followed by some of the castes, including the Nambúdrí Brahmans of the south of India, may be ultimately derived from the custom by which a husband goes to reside in his wife's family. By the custom of *Illatom* a father who has no sons adopts for certain purposes a daughter's husband, but without the religious ceremonies necessary to full and complete adoption. It is probably immediately derivable from, or at least has been influenced by, the old Hindu custom by which a father without sons appointed a daughter to bear him issue who could perform the *sraddha*. But it is now overlaid by so many legal decisions that the relation of an *illatom* son-in-law to his wife's family has become highly artificial. See Ramachendrier, *Collection of Decisions on the Law of Succession*, &c. (Madras, 1892) 39 sqq.

betrothed as one of his own family till the girl comes of age, when the marriage is consummated and he becomes a partner in the general property of the family of his father-in-law."¹ These arrangements are therefore only employed for special reasons. They may however be a relic of an earlier social condition of these two tribes.

The Kamtchadals live in small communities or families, each in its own *ostroshock* or village composed of a small number of households. A youth who marries goes to reside in his wife's *ostroshock*; he does not bring her to his. The marriage used to be made by means of a very simple ceremony. The lover went to the hut where his sweetheart dwelt with her parents and kindred and there played the wooer, rendering himself officious and offering all sorts of services to the family. These services were accepted if he had the good fortune to please. He then watched his opportunity to perform a public act of familiarity with the girl. In doing this he had to run the risk of resistance and even serious blows on the part of any married women who might happen to be present. If successful the young people thenceforward lived together without any further formality in the wife's hut.² The Kamtchadals have now accepted Russian Christianity, and it has to some extent modified their customs. Many of their tales, however, reflect the former practice by which the husband went to live in the dwelling of the wife's family; while others represent him as taking his wife back after a time to his own home. The latter probably portray the present

¹ Thurston, 33.

² Georgi, iii. 77, 89. Cf. Post, *Studien*, 47.

usage. Their neighbours, the Koryak, have for the most part resisted the efforts of the missionaries to convert them from their ancient paganism. The traditional tales current among them disclose that the suitor usually serves for the bride and having married her remains with her in her father's or her brother's settlement, often making after some time a ceremonial visit with her to his own home, and subsequently returning.¹ Among the Chukchi it was formerly the custom when persons belonging to different family groups intermarried that the bridegroom entered the bride's family, "leaving for ever his own kindred." Latterly this has been commuted for service during a period of one or two years. "A young man thus serving his father-in-law as Jacob served Laban has to perform all kinds of rough and hard work, and is usually tested by various trials before the family of the bride allows him to lead her away. Rich families having many young women whom they are unwilling to give to strangers generally select poor young men. These having stood the test are admitted to the bride and become members of the family by the performance of certain rites." Such marriages however, "are not very binding. The parents and brothers of the woman given away to the stranger reserve the right to take her back even after the lapse of years. . . . In the case of accepting a poor young man into the family there have been instances where the father-in-law, becoming

¹ Jochelson, *Jesup Exped.* vi. *passim*. The Kamtchadal tales are comprised in pp. 327-340. The Koryak custom as represented in the tales is not invariable. Occasionally the wife is at once taken away to the husband's home; but I have stated in the text what appears to be the predominant practice.

displeased, has suddenly sent the son away, although he may have been in the enjoyment of his nuptial rights for several years. In one such case the young man, rather than leave his wife, took both her life and his own." No bride-price is paid on a marriage within the tribe. The marriage rite, we are told, "is very simple. Its chief feature consists of anointing with the blood of a reindeer slain for the purpose. The bride and bridegroom, with other members of his family, paint on her face the hereditary signs of her new family, by which she casts off her old family gods and assumes the new ones. When the bridegroom is taken to the family of his father-in-law, his family totem-marks and gods are discarded and he paints on his face the totem of the family to which he will henceforth belong."¹ The Afghan bride is taken to her husband's home; but in a few days she returns and lives with her husband in her parents' house.²

The commutation of the bridegroom's permanent residence in his wife's family for a temporary residence there followed by removal with his wife and children to his own house, is found among many peoples. Certain of the aboriginal tribes of China require the husband to reside for a period of seven or ten years with his wife's parents, permitting him at the expiration of that period to return to the home of his fathers and to take his wife. Meanwhile the eldest child

¹ Bogoras, *Am. Anthr.* N.S. iii. 102; *Jesup Exped.* vii. 359. Residence with the wife's family was perhaps the rule among the pagan Sakai of Perak (Skeat and Blagden, ii. 62, 63). The Manchu rule is to take the bride to the bridegroom's house; but the contrary arrangement is sometimes stipulated for (J. H. Stewart Lockhart, *F. L.* i. 491).

² Post, *Studien*, 242, citing Kohler, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* v. 361.

of the marriage has been given to the husband's parents and the second to the wife's. Presumably the rest are retained and follow the husband and wife.¹ In Selangor, one of the states of the Malay Peninsula, the people are Mohammedans. But the bridegroom is "expected to remain under the roof (and eye) of his mother-in-law for about two years (reduced to forty-four days in the case of 'royalty'), after which he may be allowed to remove to a house of his own." A ritual stealing of the bridegroom by his relatives takes place on the third night after completion of the wedding. He is brought back the next day and a grand lustral ceremony is performed.² The fisher-folk of Patani Bay, also a Mohammedan people, are divided into families, each of which reverences a particular species of fish and abstains from eating it. This cult, if cult it may be called, appears to be, or to have been originally, descendible in the female line. A man who marries into one of these families becomes liable to the prohibitions attaching to his wife's family; if himself of a fisher-family he becomes liable to the prohibitions of both. It is customary to spend the first fortnight of married life at the house of the bride's parents. At the end of fifteen days the bridegroom's parents come and formally conduct the couple back to his old home, where they live together until he can afford to have a house of his own.³ Here an analogous ceremony

¹ Gray, ii. 304.

² Skeat, 384. All brides and bridegrooms are treated as "royalty," *i.e.*, as sacred, taboo. I am not quite sure, therefore, whether Mr. Skeat means that in all cases the term of residence at the bride's house is reduced to forty-four days.

³ Annandale, *Fasc. Mal.* i. 75.

to that in Selangor witnesses to the gradual breaking-down under similar influences of the matrilineal system formerly in force. Generally in the Patani States "the bride and bridegroom are expected to take up their abode in the house of the bride's parents ; but the custom has now become largely ceremonial, and as a rule they only stay a fortnight, after which they are conducted in procession by the bridegroom's parents to his old home, where they live until he can afford to have a house of his own." Women, however, have a very independent position ; and the bridegroom "cannot force the bride to leave her parents, though her refusal to do so is considered valid ground for regular divorce, the man receiving back the wedding present."¹ A similar ceremonial residence in the bride's home is found among the Kaduppattans of Cochin in the south of Hindustan. The protracted marriage rites are begun in the house of the bride's father and completed in the bridegroom's house. The bride's father then takes the pair back to his home, where they remain for twelve days, afterwards returning to the bridegroom's.² Service for a bride is by no means unusual among the tribes of Southern India ; but such cases when the bridegroom does not continue to reside after marriage in the wife's family need not detain us.³

¹ Annandale, *Fasc. Mal.* ii. 75.

² *Ind. Cens.* xx. 1901, 166. More protracted is the residence of the young couple in the bride's father's house among the Mikírs, where there is no bride-price but the bridegroom after marriage has to work for his father-in-law for an agreed period (Stack, 18).

³ Examples will be found in Thurston, 33. The custom among the Shânârs of Travancore by which all the bride's expenditure until her first child is born is supplied from her father's house, where also

The Chingpaw of Upper Burmah are divided into patrilineal exogamic kins. On marriage a bride-price is paid, which is regarded as a compensation to the bride's parents for the loss of her labour. It is often considerable, and if the suitor be unable to pay it he may work it out. In this way he becomes a dependent of his bride's family for a longer or shorter period. As no marriage takes place without previous intercourse, presumably while living in this condition the bridegroom has access to the bride, if not actually married. The completion of his period of service enables him to take away his wife and children to his own village.¹ In Cambodia the negotiations for marriage are conducted by the relatives of the young couple; and often the latter have not exchanged a word until after their betrothal. The girl's parents then make a formal request that their intended son-in-law shall come to the house to serve for awhile. The period of service is in fact a period of probation in which it is the youth's business to render himself agreeable to the young lady as well as to her parents. On the day appointed he accordingly comes and remains under their roof for an indeterminate period, sometimes longer sometimes shorter, at their orders. It is the duty of his betrothed to prepare his food and her first confinement should take place, is probably a survival from the time when she continued notwithstanding marriage to live in the parental home (Mateer, 106).

¹ *Int. Arch. Suppl.* xvi, 26 *sqq.* Off the coast of Tenasserim the Mergui islanders live in boats. The population of each boat is a patriarchal community. After marriage the bridegroom is taken into his father-in-law's boat until he can manage to get a boat of his own (*Globus*, xcii. 290). This seems to be merely a temporary convenience for the husband; but that the residence in such a case should always be with the wife's parents is not without significance.

betel-nut-quids and to roll his cigarettes. This leads naturally to a lovers' intimacy between them, and if the young lady be satisfied to favours of a more decisive kind. The bridegroom's parents indeed usually urge him to seek these favours as a guarantee for his position; for when once they are granted there is no withdrawal for either party, and subsequent infidelity on the part of the girl is treated as adultery. Although among families in easy circumstances, able at once to pay the expenses of a formal marriage, the period of probation is short, in some cases no longer than fifteen or twenty days, in other cases it is extended even for years. Nor does the youth always reside with his parents-in-law: he may live at his own home, only paying visits and assisting his parents-in-law in the labours of sowing or harvest, or the like. It is not very rare to see more than one child, born during this interval, at the subsequent marriage of its parents. Such little ones, though not regarded by the lady's family with any great pleasure, are by no means a disgrace. They are considered as legitimate, since their parents are betrothed—" *presque mariés* "—and as such have rights and duties which the law recognises.¹

The real character of the period of probation as a relic of an earlier form of marriage in which the husband either visited or dwelt with his wife in her own home is made apparent by comparison with the customs of some of the tribes of Northern Tonkin. Among the Eastern Thai, when the bride has been brought to the husband's house and formally installed there the wedding is far from being concluded. In fact the bride passes the

¹ Aymonier, *Excursions*, xvi. 197.

night with the female friends who have accompanied her from home. Nor do they leave her the whole of the next day, which is devoted to feasts offered by the husband's family. The following day husband and wife go to present themselves before the bride's ancestors, and the husband returns alone. Only some time afterwards may the union really take place, and then in quite a fugitive manner and under pretexts which mask it as if it ought to be kept secret. In some places the wife spends alternately fifteen days at her husband's house and fifteen days at her own. Elsewhere she only comes to his house if she is called thither on pretext of helping in the household management or in the field-work. This situation, abnormal from our point of view, continues until pregnancy is proved, or if she remain barren until the end of the third year. During the whole period she continues to preserve the same liberty of intrigue that is permitted to unmarried girls, and she gads about to *fêtes* and markets, singing with the lads erotic songs just as the unmarried girls do. It often happens therefore that the paternity of her eldest child is more than doubtful.¹ The marriage customs of the Lolo of the highlands of Bao-Lac, of which they claim to be the original occupiers, are similar. The wedding is celebrated at the bridegroom's house, where the bride remains for six days. The married pair then pay a visit to the bride's parents, taking a present of rice and fish.

¹ Lunet de Lajonquière, *Ethnog. Tonkin Sept.* 154. There are small variations among the different tribes of the Thai group. The customs described above are those of the Tho. Among the Ming, another tribe of the group, the bride returns to her own home after a cohabitation of some hours (*Id.* 195); among the Tchong-Kia, after a few days of cohabitation (*Id.* 206. Cf. *Anthropos*, ii. 367).

They remain there two days, and returning to the bridegroom's house they spend another night together, after which the bride goes back to her parents and only installs herself permanently in her husband's domicile when pregnancy becomes evident.¹ Among the various Man tribes the bridegroom passes an avowedly probationary period in the bride's house. The period exacted by the Man Tien is a month. After this the formal wedding takes place. The young couple first drink rice-spirit together and worship the bride's ancestors, then proceeding to the bridegroom's home drink together and worship his ancestors. The bride is formally presented to the bridegroom's relatives, with whom they remain.² The Man Quan Trang require a much longer residence of the bridegroom in the bride's home. Formerly it was for six years; even now it is for three, unless redeemed by payment. It begins when the youths are about twenty years of age and the girls fourteen. No sexual relations ought to take place between them during this period; but in reality such relations always exist without much importance being attached to them, unless pregnancy result. In this case the lovers are definitely united and neither party can afterwards withdraw. So long as pregnancy does not happen the youth can withdraw without paying anything; but if the girl's parents alter their minds they must pay him an indemnity for the services he has rendered in their house. After the formal marriage the young couple must work for seven years in the husband's paternal home before being able to settle elsewhere. In this way it is said the parents of both are remunerated for the care bestowed on their

¹ Lunet 329.

² *Id.* 257.

children.¹ This is no doubt a modern justification for customs the origin of which has been forgotten. All these tribes, however, practise also the form of marriage to which McLennan gave the name of *beena* marriage from the word in use in Ceylon for a husband who was taken to reside in his wife's house or village.² When a youth among the Tho is too poor to pay the bride-price, he may renounce his name and enter his father-in-law's family as an adopted son. Among other tribes the bridegroom enters the service of his wife's family for a definite number of years in lieu of a bride-price. In such cases there is no adoption.³ Chinese influence has been for centuries powerful in the north of Tonkin. To it we must probably attribute the fact that fatherright has become the general custom, though many traces of the reckoning of kin through the mother remain.

Up to the last quarter of the eighteenth century there prevailed in Passummah and Rejang, two contiguous districts of the island of Sumatra, two kinds of marriage. These were known by the respective names of *jujur* and *ambel-anak*. The *jujur*, says Marsden, "is a certain sum of money given by one man to another as a consideration for the person of his daughter, whose situation in this case differs not much from that of a slave to the man she marries, and to his family. His absolute property in her depends, however, upon some nice circumstances. Beside the *batang jujur* (or main sum) there are certain appendages

¹ Lunet, 272.

² McLennan, *Studies*, i. 101.

³ Lunet, 156, 207, 242, 293. Among some unspecified Thai tribes the service is said to be for the lives of the bride's parents without adoption or compensation of any kind (*Anthropos*, ii. 370).

or branches, one of which the *tali kulo*, of five dollars, is usually from motives of delicacy or friendship left unpaid, and so long as that is the case a relationship is understood to subsist between the two families, and the parents of the woman have a right to interfere on occasions of ill treatment; the husband is also liable for wounding her; with other limitations of absolute right. When that sum is finally paid, which seldom happens but in cases of violent quarrel, the *tali kulo* (tie of relationship) is said to be *putus* (broken), and the woman becomes to all intents the slave of her lord. She has then no title to claim a divorce in any predicament; and he may sell her, making only the first offer to her relations." After mentioning the other two "appendages," namely, the *tulis tanggil* (which he cannot explain) and the *upah dawn kodo* (payment for the marriage feast), Marsden proceeds: "These additional sums are seldom paid or claimed before the principal is defrayed, of which a large proportion, as fifty, eighty, and sometimes an hundred and four dollars, is laid down at the time of marriage, or in the first visit (after the parties are determined in their regards) made by the father of the young man, or the *bujang* himself, to the father of the woman. . . . Until at least fifty dollars are thus deposited the man cannot take his wife home; but so long as the matter continues *dalam rasa-an* (under consideration) it would be deemed scandalous in the father to listen to any other proposals. When there is a difficulty in producing the necessary sum it is not uncommon to resort to an expedient termed *mengiring jujur*." By this arrangement the debtor becomes practically a slave, all his labour being due to his creditor, without it seems any

reduction in the debt, which must be raised and paid without deduction. Long credit is then given for the remainder of the *jujur*. "Sometimes it remains unadjusted to the second and third generation; and it is not uncommon to see a man suing for the *jujur* of the sister of his grandfather. These debts constitute, in fact, the chief part of their substance; and a person is esteemed rich who has several of them due to him for his daughters sisters aunts and great aunts. Debts of this nature are looked upon as sacred, and are scarcely ever lost. In Passummah, if the race of a man is extinct, and some of these remain unpaid, the *dusun* or village to which the family belonged must make it good to the creditor; but this is not insisted upon amongst the Rejangs." Sometimes instead of paying a *jujur* an exchange is effected, by which one maiden is given for another.

In *ambel-anak*, on the other hand, "the father of a virgin makes choice of some young man for her husband, generally from an inferior family which renounces all further right to or interest in him, and he is taken into the house of his father-in-law, who kills a buffalo on the occasion and receives twenty dollars from the son's relations. After this the *buruk baik'nia* (the good and bad of him) is vested in the wife's family. If he murders or robs, they pay the *bangun*, or the fine. If he is murdered, they receive the *bangun*. They are liable to any debts he may contract after marriage; those prior to it remaining with his parents. He lives in the family, in a state between that of a son and a debtor. He partakes as a son of what the house affords, but has no property in himself. His rice-plantation, the produce of his

pepper-garden, with everything that he can gain or earn, belong to the family. He is liable to be divorced at their pleasure, and though he has children must leave all and return naked as he came. The family sometimes indulge him with leave to remove to a house of his own and take his wife with him ; but he his children and effects are still their property. If he has not daughters by the marriage he may redeem himself and his wife by paying her *jujur* ; but if there are daughters before they become emancipated the difficulty is enhanced, because the family are likewise entitled to their value. It is common, however, when they are upon good terms, to release him on the payment of one *jujur*, or at most with the addition of an *adat* of fifty dollars. With this addition, he may insist upon a release whilst his daughters are not marriageable. If the family have paid any debts for him he must also make them good.”¹

It is obvious that these forms of marriage are the adaptation to a comparatively advanced civilisation of much more primitive arrangements. The *jujur* marriage by its elaborate qualifications and conditions betrays its highly artificial character. The *ambel-anak* is simpler. But the husband's subordination among his wife's relatives has been emphasised by the growth of a patriarchal form of society. The result has been that the more archaic form of marriage has become degraded and been left, as among the Tho of Tonkin, to youths of a lower class of society or too

¹ Marsden, 225, 235, 257, 262. Cf. Bastian, *Indonesien*, iii, 6, 21, 22, 87. As in Japan, *ambel-anak* seems to be still used in some places to continue a family when for want of sons the heirship has fallen to a daughter (Marsden, 264).

poor to pay a bride-price. A bride-price is indeed actually paid, but it is of a nominal amount. It avails only for the right of cohabitation, and does not transfer the custody of the bride's person, or the *potestas*; still less does it change the descent from the maternal to the paternal line as does the *jujur*. The personal position of the husband, however, is, while the marriage lasts, better than that of one who, married by *jujur*, is unable to pay the whole and who therefore becomes an enslaved debtor in his father-in-law's house. Moreover, by custom he can insist on release if he can pay up the *jujur* and *adat*; and in Passummah if the father-in-law dismissed him he could turn the tables upon him by paying a hundred dollars, thus redeeming his wife and family, converting the *ambel-anak* into a *kulo* marriage and returning to his former *tungguan* (settlement or family), a man of more consequence in society.

The Achehese at the north-western end of the island have accepted Islam; but many of the earlier customs persist and maintain a by no means unequal conflict with Mohammedan polity. Among these are their marriage customs. After the negotiations are completed, the consent of the head-man of the kampong alike of the bride and of the bridegroom must be obtained. A formal betrothal follows as a preliminary to the long and tedious ceremonies of marriage. When these are at an end the bridegroom commences to visit the bride. He sleeps with her for seven nights under the surveillance of an old woman, and is not allowed to exercise his conjugal rights. The following day he returns home, the feast being now finished. On the ninth day he

returns to the bride and stays with her for two or three nights, going back after the tenth or twelfth night to his parents' home. An elder is sent to him generally at the new moon to press him on behalf of his wife's parents to return to her. He yields to the invitation and goes to stay with her for about eight days. His visit then comes to an end, and the next visit is not made until after an interval of fourteen days. Thus he continues going backwards and forwards for about six months. Not until then does he become an habitual inmate of his wife's house if his own kampong be close at hand. "Where the [parental] homes of the young couple lie at a great distance from one another it will depend entirely on circumstances whether the man continues to be a mere occasional visitor to his wife's house or entirely exchanges the abode of his parents for that of his wife." An Achehnese daughter never really quits her parents' roof. According to their means her parents either vacate a portion of their house in favour of each daughter who marries, or add to the building or put up new houses in the same enclosure. In spite of this a stringent taboo divides the husband from his wife's family; and this taboo is only removed to some extent, and that gradually, after years of wedded life in the same house. Nor does the wife become immediately on the marriage dependent on the husband in pecuniary matters. He is required to make her a certain gift after the consummation of the marriage, and a monthly present of money amounting on the average to about four dollars. For every *bungkay* of gold (twenty-five dollars) in the wedding gift the bride is made dependent for a full year on the support

of her parents. It is only when that period expires that the husband is bound to support her beyond the monthly present just mentioned and a gift of meat at the two great Mohammedan feasts. She is then committed to the sole charge of her husband; and if her father and mother be living this is done with much formality. All the expenses of the first child-bed fall upon the wife's parents, any contribution made by the husband being regarded as a voluntary gift.¹

Among the Alfurs of Buru it is forbidden to marry in the same commune, as perhaps it was originally among the Achehnese. The rule is that the husband pays a bride-price and takes his wife away. But he is called by the name of the commune into which he has married—"dependent" of such and such a commune. His wife's family too never addresses him by name, but always by the title of "dependent." After the birth of a child he is called father of that child. The bridegroom who cannot pay nevertheless marries; but he is compelled to reside with the woman and her kin, to whom the children in such a case belong.² On the island of Timor the Belunese constitute all marriages by payment. The word for marriage is *haafoli*, which means to buy something. The purchase is made either on the part of the husband or on the part of the wife. If the price be paid on the wife's part, then the husband comes to live with her and the children are hers, not his; if on the husband's part the

¹ Hurgronje, i. 295, *sqq.*

² Wilken, *op. cit.* 707; Riedel, 22, 5. Compare the title *dependent* with that in use among the Creeks of North America (Kohler, 59 note).

converse is the case.¹ Comparison of these two cases is instructive. The Alfur practice obviously looks back to a time when the husband always came to reside with the wife's relations: the title of "dependent" given to the husband is not easily explicable in any other way. It would seem that the purchase-money paid on behalf of the Belunese bride on the contrary has arisen by analogy with the payment made by a man to obtain the right to take away his wife and to obtain full paternal authority over his children, including the reckoning of patrilineal descent.

The Káfirs of the Hindu-Kush, as has been noted in the last chapter, are a patrilineal people. A bride-price of from eight to twelve cows is exacted; but it seems not to be always paid before marriage. "Although," says Sir George Robertson, "a man may marry a woman with the full consent of all concerned, and although she may bear him children, neither she nor her children would be allowed to leave her father's house until the last penny of her price had been paid. It is not quite certain, however, if sons would not belong to the father. Daughters certainly would not. It is paying the full price which gives the man the right to take his wife to his home for her to work in the fields."² Among the Sunuwar of Nepal, "by Kiránti custom, if a young man runs away with a girl and is unable to pay the fine which is appointed for such cases, his children by her are regarded and may be claimed as slaves by her parents." The Kirántis, it is noted by Mr. Risley, look upon a son-in-law "rather in the light of a servant." There can be

¹ Wilken, *op. cit.* 708. Compare other customs on the island of Timor, *supra*, p. 34.

² Robertson, 535.

little doubt that but for the influence of Hinduism the children would have been reckoned not as slaves but as members of their mother's sept. It is at least suggestive that the proper person to demand payment of the fine is not the father of the abducted girl but her maternal uncle.¹

Residence, temporary or permanent, on the part of the husband at the bride's home is usual in various African tribes. The custom of the Edeeyahs of Fernando Po has already been mentioned. It applies only to the first wife: the others are probably wooed in a more summary fashion. The account we have of it includes little detail; but apparently the bridegroom after the public celebration of his marriage continues to dwell with the bride in the hut adjacent to her mother's, where she has been confined throughout the previous period of service and courtship.² Among the Baële of the eastern Sahara the bride remains with her parents. A special hut is erected for the use of the young couple until the birth of the first child. If no child be born the father must repay the bride-price he has received and the marriage is at an end.³ In Dar-For the bride remains a year or even two years in her parental home; and there her husband lives with her at the expense of her father. If the husband choose to contribute it is treated as a gift.⁴ Among the Dinkas of the Bahr-el-Ghazal the couple remain in the father-in-law's village until a child has been born and has learned to walk. They are then permitted to return to the husband's

¹ Risley, ii. 282.

² *Supra*, p. 23.

³ *Ibid.* 323, 395, citing Nachtigal.

⁴ *Ibid.* 395, citing El-Tounsy.

home.¹ The northern Wanyamwezi are still in the stage of motherright, but matrilineal customs are in decay elsewhere. Whether in the north or the south, however, the husband goes to dwell at his wife's home.² Among the Banyai on the Zambesi "when a young man takes a liking to a girl of another village and the parents have no objection to the match he is obliged to come and live at their village. He has to perform certain services for the mother-in-law, such as keeping her well supplied with firewood ; and when he comes into her presence he is obliged to sit with his knees in a bent position, as putting out his feet towards the old lady would give her great offence. If he becomes tired of living in this state of vassalage and wishes to return to his own family he is obliged to leave all his children behind—they belong to his wife." But it seems that on payment of a bride-price the right to the wife and children would be transferred to the husband.³ Among the Bambala as we have seen fatherright is beginning to supersede the older organisation. Still a man very often takes up his abode in his father-in-law's village. The father-in-law in fact assumes in his life importance paramount even over his own father, and he will fight for him and his village against his own.⁴ Among the Hottentots women were treated with high respect. The

¹ *J. A. I.* xxxiv. 151.

² Burton, *Lake Regions*, ii. 24. Sir H. H. Johnston (*Brit. Cent. Afr.* 413, 415, 412) reports the custom of the husband's going to live at the wife's village as characteristic of the Atonga and generally of the tribes of Southern Nyassaland, except the Wankonde, though marriage by capture is by no means unknown.

³ Livingstone, *Miss. Trav.* 622.

⁴ *J. A. I.* xxxv. 410, 399.

most binding oath a man could take was by his eldest sister ; his wife ruled supreme in his house ; and she possessed her own separate property. The first years of married life were spent by her husband in his father-in-law's service ; he was the old man's companion in the hunting-field and in war.¹ So a Bushman was compelled to accompany his wife's parents everywhere and to provide them with game ; nor in very many cases did the marriage last longer than this obligation was fulfilled.²

In South America, the Bakairi of Central Brazil are in the stage of motherright, though the dignity of chief tends to male descent. Ordinarily marriage is negotiated by the parents of the young couple ; the bride's father is presented with a stone axe and with arrows ; the bridegroom works with him in his clearing, and hangs his hammock in the hut above the bride's. Without more ado the pair are regarded as man and wife. As little ceremony is there in a divorce, which takes place at the will of the wife even though the husband be opposed to it ; probably he has an equal privilege. Polygamy is not unknown, at all events among the portion of the tribe living in Kulisehu valley ; but it is not customary to have more than one wife in the same village. A recent traveller was assured that a man could without interfering with the good understanding between himself and his first wife's relations take another wife in a neighbouring place ; and if he visited her for a change quite commonly his first wife, either with or without her relations, would accompany him. On the death

¹ Hahn, 18.

² Merensky, 68 ; Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 379 ; Fritsch, 445.

of the wife the widower is bound to marry her sister, if one be eligible. A close bond unites the children with their maternal uncle.¹ Among the Indians of the Paraguayan Chaco a youth desirous to wed sends a friend to the young lady's hut. At midnight "he enters noiselessly, seats himself beside the sleeping-place, smokes for an hour or two, and then retires as discreetly as he came, without having spoken one word. After two or three of these nocturnal visits the father demands in a brutal tone of voice what business he has to be in his house at such a late hour. The intruder explains the object of his visit, and the father and mother, after having assured themselves that their future son-in-law will be a good warrior, and that he will not beat his wife too much, &c., give their consent, and without further formality the marriage is concluded. The husband almost invariably attaches himself to his wife's family, but it is not an unknown thing for his parents, especially his mother, to bring such influence to bear upon him that he will leave his newly wedded wife, and return to his own home, eventually arranging with his wife to spend one half of his time at her village and for her to join him for the other half at his own. The custom of pretending to carry off the bride by force is sometimes practised, and may at one time have been more general."²

In British Guiana the Arawaks are exogamous and trace descent exclusively through the mother.

¹ Von den Steinen, 331; Schmidt, *Indianerstudien*, 437. On the Araguaya a river the Carajá youth builds a separate hut for his bride; but if he wed a lady from another village he leaves his own and takes up his abode in her village. I gather that the Carajá are matrilineal (*Globus*, xciv. 237).

² Grubb, 61.

Children are often betrothed early. But when the boy comes to the age of marriage he may repudiate the contract and choose for himself on undergoing certain tests of courage and endurance. A bride-price is paid, or the bride is given in requital for some service done to her parents. "The marriage once arranged, the husband immediately transports his possessions to the house of his father-in-law, and there he lives and works. The head of his family, for whom he is bound to work and whom he obeys, is not his own father but his wife's. A complete and final separation between husband and wife may be made at the will of the former at any time before the birth of children; after that, if the husband goes away, as very rarely happens, it is considered not lawful separation, but desertion. When the family of the young couple become too large to be conveniently housed underneath the roof of the father-in-law, the young husband builds a house for himself by the side of that of his wife's father; and to this habit is probably due the formation of settlements. And when the head dies, it being uncanny to live where a man has died, the various house-fathers of the settlement separate and build houses for themselves, each of which in its turn forms the nucleus of a new settlement."¹ This practice, it is obvious, might easily develop into fatherright. The Macusi and other Carib tribes of Guiana marry in the same way; and a married woman does not escape by marriage from subjection to her own family, who continue to claim authority over her.² Arawâk stories illustrate

¹ im Thurn, 186, 221.

² *Ibid.* 222; Brett, 353. A Macusi marriage is consummated in the wife's village *coram populo* (im Thurn, *loc. cit.*).

this social condition. The Demaréna, one of the Arawák clans, trace their descent from a girl, the daughter of a mythical people who dwelt below the earth. A young man fell in love with her, and was only allowed to marry her on condition of going down to share his bride's home and join her family. The descendants of this pair have *connubium* only with the clan of the young man in question, namely the Koro-bohána, whose totem seems to be a species of parrot,¹ a custom pointing perhaps to an older rule of acquiring brides by exchange. Another story does not relate the origin of a clan; but it is one of a "great chain of legends" accounting for the peculiarities of the various animals of the country, and is therefore part of the ancient myth-store of the aborigines. It belongs to a cycle of tales known all over the world. A beautiful royal vulture, so it runs, was once captured by a bold hunter. She was the daughter of Anuanima, sovereign of a race whose country is above the sky, and who cease there to be birds and assume human form and habits. Smitten with love for the hunter his captive laid aside her feathers and exhibited her true form—that of a beautiful girl. "She becomes his wife, bears him above the clouds, and after much trouble persuades her father and family to receive him. All then goes well until he expresses a wish to visit his aged mother, when they discard him." After great difficulties he reaches his home in safety. Then follow his efforts to regain his wife whom he tenderly loves. With the assistance of the birds, whose forces he commands, he invades his wife's country above the sky, where "he is at last slain by a valiant young warrior resembling

¹ Brett, *Legends*, 178.

himself in person and features. It is his own son, born after his expulsion from the upper regions, and brought up there in ignorance of his father.”¹ In this as in the previous saga, we find the rule definitely insisted on that the husband must reside with the wife’s kin, or the marriage will be brought to an end. Here too father and son take different sides in a war between their respective clans: an example of the Father-and-son combat mentioned in the last chapter.

We have already seen that the Algonquian nations were when Charlevoix wrote in the stage of mother-right. From what he says we gather that the young husband lived with his wife for some time in the cabin of her parents, and that it was then his duty to supply them with the produce of his hunting. Among the Iroquois the wife never left the parental home, because she was considered the mistress, or at least the heiress. Among other nations, however, after a year or two of marriage the husband took her to his parents’ home. If this were not done the husband built a house for her and himself. In the house all the duties fell on the young wife, who was moreover required in case of need to look after her parents: this points to residence with or near them. “Some nations,” the Jesuit Father tells us, “have wives everywhere where they sojourn for any period when hunting: and I have been assured that this abuse has been introduced for some time among the Huron-speaking peoples, who had always been contented with one wife. But a much greater disorder reigns in the Iroquois canton of Tsononthouan, namely, the plurality of husbands.” Some of the Algonquian nations had a

¹ Brett, *Legends*, 29.

custom by which if there were more than one sister in a family the husband of one took them all. This does not appear to have been the case with the Hurons and Iroquois ; but even among them if the sister first married died the husband was obliged to marry a surviving sister, or if there were none some other wife provided by the family of the deceased, unless he wished to expose himself to insults from the rejected lady. On the other hand if a husband died without children his brother had to supply his place. Marriages were negotiated by the parents, and the matrons took the lead. The parties most concerned were indeed consulted, but their consent was a mere formality. In some places the girls were by no means in a hurry to marry, because they had full liberty in their amours, and marriage only changed their condition to render it harder. The marriage ceremony was simple. The suitor was required to make presents to the lady's family. He sought private interviews at night with her. In some places it was enough if he went and sat by her side in her cabin ; if she permitted this and remained where she was it was taken for consent, and the act sufficed for the marriage. If husband and wife could not agree, they parted, or two pairs would exchange husbands and wives. An early French missionary who remonstrated with a native on such a transaction was told : " My wife and I could not agree. My neighbour was in the same case. So we exchanged wives, and we are all four content. What can be more reasonable than to render one another mutually happy, when it costs so little, and does no harm to any one." ¹

¹ Charlevoix, v. 418 *sqq.*

The Senecas, an Iroquoian tribe, dwelt in long-houses which accommodated sometimes as many as twenty families, each in its own apartment. "As to their family system," writes a missionary, "when occupying the old long-houses it is probable that some one clan predominated, the women taking in husbands, however, from the other clans: and sometimes for a novelty some of the sons bringing in their young wives until they felt brave enough to leave their mothers. Usually the female portion ruled the house, and were doubtless clannish enough about it. The stores were in common; but woe to the luckless husband or lover who was too shiftless to do his share of the providing. No matter how many children, or whatever goods he might have in the house, he might at any time be ordered to pick up his blanket and budge; and after such orders it would not be healthful for him to attempt to disobey; the house would be too hot for him; and unless saved by the intercession of some aunt or grandmother, he must retreat to his own clan, or as was often done, go and start a new matrimonial alliance in some other."¹ The Wyandots, another Iroquoian tribe, camp in the form of a horse-shoe, every clan together in a regular order. Marriage between members of the same clan is forbidden, and children belong to the clan of the mother. "Husbands," we are told, "retain all their rights and privileges in their own *gentes*, though they live with the *gentes* of their wives." On betrothal the bridegroom makes presents to the bride's mother. After marriage the pair live for a short time at least with the bride's mother in her household,

¹ Morgan, *Contrib. N. Am. Ethn.* iv. 65.

but after awhile they "set up housekeeping for themselves," always of course in that part of the encampment occupied by the wife's clan.¹ The Musquakies, though belonging to the Algonquian stock and organised in clans, no longer reckon descent through the mother. A Musquaki youth having chosen a lady generally his senior by several years, negotiations for the marriage are opened by his mother with the mother of his beloved. If the preliminaries be satisfactory a course of courtship follows involving the exhibition of considerable endurance by both parties. At length he is admitted to his future mother-in-law's presence. She hands him a platter of food, and while he is eating it she haggles with him over the presents she is to receive. When the bargain is made she and her husband dress him in a new suit of clothes and take him round to present him formally to all the friends and relatives of both sides. The next day the wedding ceremony takes place, commencing by the delivery of his presents to his mother-in-law. He then enters the wigwam on the invitation of his father-in-law, where the bride prepares a little bowl of gruel for him. After eating it he leads her with some little endearments to a roll of blankets, where they sit the rest of the day while friends visit the hut. The marriage is then complete. The bridegroom "lives with his wife's people, but this does not make him or his children of her clan—of her people's clan, that is, for she henceforth belongs to his till death or divorce separates her from him. As for his children, his death or divorce gives the minors to the maternal grandmother's clan; but those who have had the puberty feast still belong

¹ Powell, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* i. 63.

to his.”¹ The last detail is noteworthy : children not yet enfranchised from infancy remain to the maternal clan.

The Cherokee bridegroom went to live with his bride. The house belonged to her or her mother, and if dissatisfied with him they could drive him away.² The Seminoles of Florida reckon descent through the mother. Marriage within the clan is prohibited. The consent of the girl and her kindred is required. When that is given the female relatives of the bridegroom contribute the simple bedding required by the young pair, and he receives in return a wedding costume consisting of a newly made shirt. Clad in this he goes at sunset of the appointed day to his mother-in-law's home, where he is received by the bride and henceforth is her husband. He dwells there until he and his bride set up an independent home, either at the wife's camp or elsewhere except (and this is important) among the husband's relatives. Divorce is easy. “The husband, no longer satisfied with his wife, leaves her ; she returns to her family and the matter is ended. . . . In fact, marriage among these Indians seems to be but the natural mating of the sexes, to cease at the option of either of the interested parties.” The writer from whom I quote adds : “Although I do not know that the wife may lawfully desert her husband, as well as the husband his wife,

¹ Owen, *F. L. Musq.* 72. The detailed account of the negotiations and courtship is most entertaining, but too long to quote.

² This is clear from the tales, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xix. 292, 338, 339, 345. As to the Natchez, see Charlevoix, vi. 182, 184. He does not expressly say, but I think it is to be inferred, that the husbands usually went to reside in their wives' dwellings. They were matrilineal,

from some facts I learned I think it probable that she may."¹

Many of the Indians of the plains have passed into the stage of fatherright. Traces however of the older organisation are frequently to be found. Among the various stocks of the Pawnee the husband goes to reside in his father-in-law's hut. The morals of the Wichita maiden were the subject of much concern by her parents and relatives. In the choice of a husband she was supposed to take no part. The parents of the youthful pair arranged the matter, the first advance coming sometimes from the one side, sometimes from the other. The young man then went to the girl's lodge in the evening. If her parents still favoured him, he remained and was recognised as her husband. In case of unfaithfulness on the wife's part she was beaten with a stick by her father—not apparently by her husband. If on the other hand her parents at any time changed their mind with regard to their son-in-law, he was simply sent home : this constituted divorce. While he remained his duty was to watch over the property of the family and to provide food. On his fulfilment of these requirements rested his claim for favour with his wife's parents—in other words, the continuance of the marriage.² To these customs the mythological and other tales bear abundant witness. Here too we find the marriage of one man to a band of sisters.³ Such marriages are common with the Kiowa of the Southern Plains. The husband generally

¹ Maccauley, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* v. 496, 508.

² Dorsey, *Myth. Wichita*, 9. Compare (among others) the customs of the Senecas (p. 67) and the Bushmen (p. 61).

³ Dorsey, *Skidi Pawnee*, 141, 229, 325; *Pawnee Myth.* i. 166, 196, 254, 283, 287, 359, 371, 424; *Myth. Wichita*, 83, 173, 268.

goes on marriage to live among his wife's people in their camp, and he who marries the eldest daughter has the first claim upon her sisters. As the marriageable age for girls was fourteen he presumably takes the younger sisters, if he so please, as they grow up. It would seem however that the girl is always consulted. Her brother's voice is powerful in the family council on the subject of her marriage, and even after that event he continues to claim a sort of guardianship over her. These customs are evidence of the former existence of motherright, which is now unknown.¹ At the same time the reckoning of patrilineal kinship is ensured by their obvious tendency to vest the ultimate headship of the family in the husband. The Dakota the Kansas and other Siouan tribes follow similar customs.²

The Pueblo peoples of the south-west of the United States are among the most interesting of the aboriginal tribes of North America. They inhabit clustered dwellings tier above tier along terraces ledges and the brows of the bare flat-topped hills, called *mesas*, characteristic of that arid region. Invariably they are organised in exogamous totem-clans. Invariably they reckon kinship through females, and the husband on marriage goes to live with the wife's kin and becomes an inmate of her family. If the house be not large enough, additional rooms are built adjoining and connected with those already occupied. Hence a family with many daughters increases, while one consisting of sons dies out. The women are the builders, the men supplying

¹ Mooney, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xvii. 232.

² Riggs, *Dakota Gram.* 205; Dorsey, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xv. 232.

the material and doing the heavy work.¹ When a Zuñi girl has come to an understanding with a young man, and her parents are willing, she takes him home. Bidden by her mother she offers him food. While he eats it her parents sit on one side and talk to him about the duties of a husband to his wife. When he has finished the father calls him to them and further admonishes him to work hard, watch the sheep, help to cut the wood and to plant and cut the grain for the household ; the mother adding a recommendation to be kind and good to his wife. He remains at the house for five nights, sleeping alone outside the general living room where the family sleep, and working for them during the day-time. On the sixth morning he goes to his parents' home and discloses to them where he has been and his intended match. If they be pleased his mother gives him a dress for the bride. The bride in return grinds some flour and the following day accompanied by the bridegroom takes it in a basket on her head as a present to her mother-in-law. The latter offers food to the girl, who eats ceremonially a few mouthfuls. Her father-in-law gives her a deerskin for moccasins, and her mother-in-law fills with wheat the basket she has brought. The young pair then return to the girl's house, which they make their permanent home ; but they do not sleep inside the living room for a year, or until the birth of the first child—a relic, we may conjecture, of secret cohabitation. The Zuñi are monogamists ; but divorce is quite common. "They would rather separate," says Mrs. Stevenson, "than

¹ Mindeleff, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xiii. 197 ; Cushing, *Ibid.* 368 ; Hewett, *Am. Anthr.* N.S. vi. 634 ; Fewkes, *Id.* i. 269.

live together inharmoniously." She bears emphatic testimony, however, to the happiness of a Zuñi household. "The domestic life of the Zuñis, "she says, "might well serve as an example for the civilised world. . . . The Zuñis do not have large families, and the members are deeply attached to one another. The writer has found great enjoyment in her visits to the general living room in the early evening after the day's labours were over and before the elders were called away to their fraternities or elsewhere. The young mothers would be seen caring for their infants, or perhaps the fathers would be fondling them, for the Zuñi men are very devoted to their children, especially the babies. The grandmother would have one of the younger children in her lap, with perhaps the head of another resting against her shoulder, while the rest would be sitting near or busying themselves about household matters. When a story was told by the grandfather or some younger member of the group, intense interest would be depicted on the faces of all old enough to appreciate the recital. The Zuñi child is rarely disobedient, and the writer has known but one parent strike a child or use harsh words with it. The children play through the livelong day without a quarrel."¹ The keynote of this harmony is the supremacy of the wife in the home. The house, with all that is in it, is hers, descending to her through her mother from a long line of ancestresses; and her husband is merely her permanent guest. The children—at least the female children—have their share in the common home: the father has none. Like all the Pueblo peoples the Zuñi are above the stage of

¹ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.*, xxiii. 304, 293.

savagery. To them the cultivation of the soil is not unknown ; and their religious rites attest the importance of agriculture in their economy. Probably in earlier times the husband had no possessory interest in the fields, and the crops which he is exhorted in the marriage ritual to tend and gather belonged to his wife and her family. Even yet the little gardens immediately about the village are owned and tended exclusively by the women and descend from daughter to daughter. But modern influences have reached Zuñi ; a man is now capable of owning something more than his horses and donkeys and his weapons and personal adornments. If he be at marriage possessed of any land its produce is brought into the common stock for the support of the home ; and on the death of the owner his children, boys and girls, share his property. Motherright has begun its inevitable decay.¹

The Hopis are more conservative. With them the women still own not only merely the houses but the crops, the sheep and the peach-orchards, everything in fact relating to the economy of the household but the beasts of burden. This is an interesting testimony to the antiquity of the custom. The horses and donkeys were unknown before the coming of the white man. They are a new acquisition, and their service lightens the labour that falls upon the men. Peaches, wheat and sheep were also the gifts of the Spanish missionaries. But the Pueblo peoples were already tillers of the soil when the missionaries came among them. To this day they plant and irrigate, they hoe and gather their peach-trees and crops much as they

¹ Cushing, *Id.* xiii. 365 ; Mrs. Stevenson, *Id.* xxiii. 290.

anciently planted and watered their own maize. The objects of cultivation—not the method—have changed. Similarly they were already herdsmen when sheep and goats were introduced. Flocks of turkeys were kept for food and for clothing. Mr. Cushing tells us that when he “first went to live with the Zuñis their sheep were plucked, not sheared, with flat strips of band iron in place of the bone *spatulæ* originally used in plucking turkeys; and the herders always scrupulously picked up stray pieces of wool—calling it ‘down,’ not hair, nor fur—and spinning it, knitting too at their long woollen leggings as they followed their sheep, all as their forefathers used ever to pick up and twirl the stray feathers and knit at their down kilts and tunics as they followed and herded their turkeys.”¹

The Hopis, like the Zuñis, are monogamists. The lady exercises the right of choosing her husband. It is she who must “pop the question;” or if she be too shy, her relatives (by preference her mother) open the negotiations. Often these negotiations are preceded by intercourse of so intimate a kind that the results can no longer be concealed. Such conduct detracts in no way from her good repute if it lead to marriage. Even if it do not, and if she give birth to a child, she will be sure to marry later on unless she happen to be shockingly ugly. Nor does the child suffer, for among these matrilineal peoples the bastard takes an equal place with the child born in wedlock. When all things are arranged the girl goes to the house of her future husband and remains there some weeks. For three days she works for the family. On the fourth the wedding ceremony is performed by the bride-

¹ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xiii. 340.

groom's mother. It consists in taking down the bride's hair, worn until that moment in maiden-fashion, washing it and then dressing it as worn by a married woman. Other rites follow which need not detain us. The subsequent weeks are occupied by the bridegroom's family in the preparation of the bride's wedding outfit, which is a gift from them. Finally she returns, arrayed in a part of the trousseau and laden with the rest, ceremonially in procession accompanied by a number of her friends to her mother's house. She pays compensation to the bridegroom's family, consisting usually of maize-flour in such quantity that the labour of grinding it may occupy her for weeks after her return. The bridegroom takes up his abode in her home with her family, in any case to remain there for the first few years of marriage, until he and his bride can obtain a separate dwelling. Yet he is a stranger there, and is often treated as a stranger by his wife's kin. The dwelling of his own family remains his proper home. In sickness he returns to his mother, and stays with her until well again. Often his position is so unpleasant that he breaks off all his relations with his wife and family, and goes back to his own home. On the other hand, the wife sometimes, when her husband is away from the house, lays all his goods outside the door: an intimation, which he well understands, not to intrude himself upon her again.¹

Lastly among Pueblo peoples let us consider the matrimonial institutions of the Sia. Like all the others they are divided into exogamous totem-clans descend-

¹ O. Solberg, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxxvii. 629. Cf. Bourke, *Snake-dance*, 135; Voth, *Traditions of the Hopi*, 67, 96, 133.

ible through women only. But from various causes the once populous pueblo of Sia has lost the greater part of its inhabitants, whole clans have become extinct, and the tribe is in imminent danger of dying out. In these circumstances the rule of exogamy has ceased to be strictly enforced. It is suggested indeed that the desire for increase of numbers has caused a general dissolution of manners. This is a question which does not concern us in this place. The Sia are at least nominally monogamous. When a young man desires to marry a girl he speaks first to her parents. If they are willing he addresses himself to her. The day of marriage having arrived he goes alone to her home carrying his gifts for her wrapped up in a blanket, his father and mother having preceded him thither. When the young couple are seated together the parents address them in turn enjoining unity and forbearance. This constitutes the ceremony. A feast is then given to the friends. Tribal custom requires the bridegroom to reside with his wife's family, the couple sleeping in the general living room with the remainder of the family.¹

The Eskimo of Cumberland Sound and Davis Strait are generally betrothed when very young; but in any case when the time for marriage comes the bride must be bought from her parents by some present. The bridegroom goes to reside with his wife's parents and must help to maintain them. If belonging to a strange tribe he must join that of his wife. Not until after both his parents-in-law are dead is he entirely master of his own actions. The consent

¹ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 19. There are some cases it would seem in which the husband has after a time provided a separate house.

of the bride's parents, or if they are dead that of her brothers, is always necessary to the marriage. Divorce is easy : the slightest pretext is sufficient for a separation, and the wife's mother can always command a divorce. Either party can then re-marry.¹ A similar account is given of the connubial customs of the Eskimo of Northern Alaska.²

Turning to the Pacific slope of North America let us first examine the relative positions of man and woman and the marital relations among the Seri of the Californian Gulf. They are the wildest and fiercest of all the aboriginal inhabitants of the continent, and among the lowest of known peoples in the entire world. The island of Tiburon, the centre and citadel of the tribe, has never been visited by any competent explorer who has succeeded in coming in contact with the people. It was visited in December 1896 by a scientific party under the leadership of Dr. W. J. McGee, but the natives had fled to their fastnesses and could not be drawn forth. Our information about them is derived from Dr. McGee's report, based on observation of members of the tribe on the mainland, which is Mexican territory, and the statements of interpreters and officials of that rugged and forbidding tract of country. The indigenous name of the tribe is *Kunkáak* apparently meaning womanhood, or more probably motherhood. Men count for comparatively little among this strange people. Their organisation is strictly maternal. "The tribe is made up of clans defined by consanguinity reckoned only in the female line. Each

¹ Boas, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* vi. 578.

² Murdoch, *Id.* ix. 410. A slightly different account is given of the more southerly Eskimo, Nelson, *Id.* xviii. 291.

clan is headed by an elder-woman, and comprises a hierarchy of daughters granddaughters and (sometimes) great-granddaughters, collectively incarnating that purity of uncontaminated blood which is the pride of the tribe. And this female element is supplemented by a masculine element in the persons of brothers, who may be war-chiefs or shamans, and may hence dominate the movements of groups, but whose blood counts as nothing in the establishment and maintenance of the clan organisation.”¹ Their dwellings are the rudest shelters that can be called huts. Such as they are they are erected by the matrons without help from the men or boys. “The house and its contents belong exclusively to the matron, though her brothers are entitled to places within it whenever they wish; while the husband has neither title nor fixed place, ‘because he belongs to another house’—though as a matter of fact he is frequently at or in the hut of his spouse, where he normally occupies the outermost place in the group and acts as a sort of outer guard or sentinel.” “Moreover, his connection with the house is veiled by the absence of authority over both children and domestic affairs, though he exercises such authority freely (within the customary limits) in the *jacales* (huts) of his female relatives.”² The matrons participate in what may be called legislative and judicial functions; many of them are shamans of repute; and they are more revered than any men. At the same time the executive power of the family resides in the mother’s brothers in order of seniority, though it seems to be exercisable only through or in conjunction with her.

¹ McGee, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xvii. 168*.

² *Ibid.* 269*, 272*.

There are no old men. Their absence is said to be due to the militant habits of the tribe: the hardships of the chase may help to kill them off. Whatever the cause of the absence, its result is that even the beginnings of patriarchal rule are impossible. The chieftainship of a band is determined by the consideration of three factors: the seniority of the candidate's clan in the tribal mythology, its numerical strength, and his personal prowess, which is "always weighed in conjunction with the shamanistic potency" of his consort or consorts. "Yet he is a throneless and even homeless potentate, sojourning like the rest of his fellows in such *jacales* as his two or three or four wives may erect, wandering with season and sisterly whim, chased often by rumours of invasion or by fearsome dreams, and restrained by convention even from chiding his own children in his wives' *jacales* save through the intervention of female relatives."¹

The Seri are divided into exogamous totem-clans. The proposal for marriage is formally conveyed by the elderwoman of the suitor's family to the girl's clan-mother. If entertained by her and her daughter-matrons it is discussed at length by the matrons of the two clans involved. The girl herself is consulted; a *jacal* is erected for her; and after many deliberations a year's probation of the most exacting character is arranged for the favoured gallant. He leaves his clan and attaches himself to that of his bride. He is admitted to her hut. He "shares the *jacal* and sleeping-robe provided for the prospective matron by her kinswomen, not as privileged spouse, but merely as a

¹ McGee, *Rep. Bur. Ethn* xvii. 275*.

protecting companion; and throughout this probationary term he is compelled to maintain continence—*i.e.*, he must display the most indubitable proof of moral force. During this period the always dignified position occupied by the daughter of the family culminates; she is the observed of all observers, the subject of gossip among matrons and warriors alike, the recipient of frequent tokens from designing sisters with an eye to shares of her spouse's spoils, and the receiver of material supplies measuring the competence of the would-be husband. Through his energy she is enabled to dispense largess with lavish hand, and thus to dignify her clan and honour her spouse in the most effective way known to primitive life; and at the same time she enjoys the immeasurable moral stimulus of realising that she is the arbiter of the fate of a man who becomes warrior or outcast at her bidding, and through him of the future of two clans—*i.e.*, she is raised to a responsibility in both personal and tribal affairs which, albeit temporary, is hardly lower than that of the warrior-chief. In tribal theory the moral test measures the character of the man; in very fact it at the same time both measures and makes the character of the woman. Among other privileges bestowed on the bride during the probationary period are those of receiving the most intimate attentions from the clan-fellows of the groom; and these are noteworthy as suggestions of a vestigial polyandry or adelphogamy [?]. At the close of the year the probation ends in a feast provided by the probationer, who thereupon enters the bride's *jacal* as a perpetual guest of unlimited personal privileges (subject to tribal custom); while the bride passes from a half-wanton

heyday into the duller routine of matronly existence.”¹ Thus among the Seri the husband takes a permanent place in the wife’s hut with her family, but as a wholly subordinate personage, without any authority whatever. In his mother’s hut he has rights; and if I understand Dr. McGee correctly he may continue to have and exercise them, notwithstanding his marriage. But in his wife’s hut he has none. Perhaps it is well that sometimes he is not without a place of refuge. Comparison with the institutions of the Hopi and other Pueblo tribes is obvious.

The Maidu of California lived in village communities; the clan-organisation and motherright were unknown. The former existence of motherright may however be inferred from their customs. In the Sacramento Valley, among the Northern Maidu the girl’s consent was always necessary to marriage and was generally secured by the suitor before he addressed himself to her family. When the marriage was arranged, if she belonged to his own village the husband usually went to live with his wife’s family. If she belonged to another village she came to live with him. But in the latter case the pair would often pay a long visit to her family about six months afterwards, and for a period of some months at least the husband hunted and fished for his wife’s family. The mutual avoidance of mother-in-law and son-in-law was enforced. In the foot-hills on the other hand the girl had little or no choice: the suitor settled the matter with her parents. When he had paid the price agreed on he came to the house and lived there with her until she was old enough to manage a house herself, if she had

¹ McGee, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xvii. 279*.

been married very young, or until he could provide a house for her. Among the North-Eastern Maidu the suitor pays no bride-price. He comes to the house, and if the girl permit him to sleep with her the marriage takes effect at once. He thereupon begins hunting for the parents, and remains living with them for some months. Then he takes her to his father's house, where they live thenceforth unless the husband be able to build a new house for himself. For two or three years however he and his wife make visits of a week or two in length to her parents, and while there the husband hunts for them. A simple agreement to separate constitutes a divorce. The husband of one sister has the first right to the others; if he does not avail himself of it it passes to any brother he may have.¹

The Takelma of South-western Oregon pay a bride-price and take the bride to her husband's house. But the payment of the bride-price does not exhaust the husband's indebtedness to his father-in-law. From time to time he will load his canoe with presents of dried salmon or the like and go with his wife, though it may be a considerable distance, for a visit to her parents. And after the birth of the first child an additional price, regarded as equivalent to buying the child, is paid to the wife's father, in the shape of a deerskin-sack filled with Indian money.² The Hupa also exacted a bride-price; the bride went to live in her husband's home, and the children belonged to him. But if a man were unable to pay so large a sum as was usual he might pay half and go to the bride's home.

¹ Dixon, *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xvii. 239,

² E. Sapir, *Am. Anthr.* N. S. ix. 275.

In that case he would have to serve his father-in-law and all offspring of the union would belong to the wife's people.¹ This custom was not unknown among other Californian tribes, such as the Yurok and Patawāt, and was called *half-marriage*. Among the Lolsel, a branch of the Patwīn, "a bride often remains in her father's house and her husband comes to live with her, whereupon half the purchase-money is returned to him." Mr. Powers, who reports these cases, omits to tell us what is the effect of the arrangement upon the reckoning of descent. Among the Yokuts "a man marrying goes to live at his wife's or father-in-law's house, though he still has power of life or death over her person."² The Spokanes are divided into a number of small bands. A girl is at liberty to make an offer of marriage if she wish; and in any case her consent is required as well as that of her parents and the chief. The husband joins the band to which his wife belongs, because, it is said, she can work better in a country to which she is accustomed. Women are held in great respect; all the household goods are considered the wife's property. Either party may dissolve the marriage at will, but the children go with the mother. The man who marries the eldest daughter of a family is entitled to all the rest; and parents make no objection to his turning off one in another's favour.³

¹ Goddard, *Hupa*, 55.

² Powers, 56, 98, 221, 382. I infer with some doubt from the husband's power, from the fact that the chieftainship descends from father to son, and from the value placed on virginity, that the Yokuts were patrilineal. If so, the husband's residence in the wife's house was a relic of motherright.

³ Bancroft, i. 315, 277, 278 note. Bancroft uses the word *tribe*,

In the last chapter we considered some aspects of the social organisation of the Haida of Queen Charlotte Islands. They are still in the stage of motherright. The wife is the head of the household. She transmits her name and family crest to her children, though fatherright has so far made inroad upon the older organisation that the descent of property has become paternal. There are two kinds of marriage. One is an informal marriage, in which the lover simply goes to the girl's house and spends the night with her. They are found together in the morning and continue to live together as man and wife. The other kind of marriage is arranged when one or both of the parties are quite young. The boy goes after puberty to live at his mother-in-law's house until the time for actual marriage arrives, and works for her family. A feast and formal exchange of gifts then take place at the bride's house, and she is brought by the bridegroom's family to his maternal uncle's house, where his proper home is.¹ The former kind of marriage is often practised where for any reason the latter is delayed, as where the husband has been betrothed to a mere child and has to wait for her until she has grown up. In such a case he is expected to put an end to the informal marriage on wedding his previously betrothed bride; and his mother-in-law looks sharply after the morals of the man who is formally married to her daughter and exacts a large amount of property from

but comparison of his statement and citations with his general account of the Spokanes renders it clear that *band* is what is meant; I suspect the bands are exogamous.

¹ Swanton, *Jesup Exped.* v. 50; Deans, *Hidery*, 20, 23. Cf. *ante*, vol. i. p. 296.

him in case of infidelity to his wife. Her vigilance implies residence after marriage with her or in her neighbourhood. In the traditional stories, residence with the wife's kin is very common, if not usual.¹ It would seem therefore that it was the former practice. Probably it still is, even in case of formal marriage. The Haida are divided into two exogamous clans. These clans are subdivided into families, settled in towns, each town being inhabited by several families generally belonging to both clans. Certain special families and towns are in the habit of intermarrying. The daughter of a man's maternal uncle therefore might be the wife who would ordinarily be chosen for him ;² and in many cases he might reside at his uncle's house or town in the double capacity of nephew and son-in-law. Thus, even though he had gone through the ceremony of formal marriage there would be no removal of the bride, at least from her father's town and perhaps not from his house. On the whole, however, an examination of the traditions and practice of the Haida and of the neighbouring peoples of British Columbia mentioned in the following pages gives ground for the conclusion that the formal marriage is a comparatively recent innovation on the original custom, namely, that of the informal marriage, and is part of the social evolution already in progress before the white man came upon the scene.

The marriage customs of the Stlatlumh of British

¹ Swanton, *op. cit.* 223, 236, 249, &c.

² This is borne out by traditional tales. Indeed, according to a tradition of the Masset Haida a man had an indefeasible claim on his uncle's daughter, and took care to exercise it (Swanton, x. *op. cit.*, 654. *cf.* 717, 719).

Columbia differ among the upper and lower classes. A chief or a notable took his bride home or had her brought to him. With the other classes the accepted suitor made the formal offering of firewood to his prospective father-in-law. This signified that he was subject to the latter. It placed him in the position of "younger" man whether he was actually so or not; and among all the Salish tribes age, real or imputed, confers authority. On entering the house "he is made welcome and invited to sit down with the family alongside of his bride. It is this formal inclusion in the family circle of the bride that constitutes the marriage." The bridegroom stays there at least four days, and then is free to go or stay as he chooses. Sometimes he continues to live in the family of his father-in-law. Mr. Hill-Tout, whose report I am quoting, adds: "This inclusion of the son-in-law within the family circle gives him all the rights of sonship and his offspring are regarded as belonging to his wife's family just as much as to his own. This and other customs would seem to point to an earlier social organisation, to a time when [motherright] prevailed," though now the kin is reckoned on both sides. The eldest daughter was always the first to marry, and her husband usually married all her sisters.¹ The

¹ Hill-Tout, *J. A. I.* xxxv. 131. Mr. Hill-Tout writes mainly of the branch of the tribe occupying the upper reaches of the Lillooet Valley. His opinion just quoted seems to be confirmed by another investigator, who deals more particularly with a branch of the tribe seated further down the Lillooet River. He says: "Generally the wife followed the husband to his village, although cases in which the husband lived with the wife's clan are very common, and may have been the rule, at least among the Lower Lillooet" (Teit, *Jesup Exped.* ii. 255).

Kwakiutl, also a Salish tribe, likewise reckon the kin on both sides. Prof. Boas describes their marriage customs as "of peculiar interest on account of the transition from maternal to paternal institutions that may be observed here." The suitor pays for his bride in blankets by two instalments, namely, one half at once and the remainder in three months. After payment of the second instalment he is allowed to live with his bride in her father's house. He gives a feast to the whole tribe, during which his father-in-law returns him a part of the bride-price and fixes a time when he will return the rest. The Kwakiutl are among the tribes of British Columbia famous for their lavish gifts. The *potlatch*, a byword of extravagance, is "the custom of paying debts and of acquiring distinction by means of giving a great feast and making presents to all the guests. . . The foundation of the custom is the solidarity of the individual and the *gens*, or even the tribe, to which he belongs. If an individual gains social distinction his *gens* participates in it. If he loses in respect the stain rests also on the *gens*. Therefore the *gens* contributes to the payments to be made at a festival. If the feast is given to foreign tribes the whole tribe contributes to these payments." During the wedding feast the young wife demands for her husband her father's carvings and dances. These are his crest and privileges. The father is obliged to give them, though they are not actually given at the time. In fact they are only descendible in this way, and the bargain for a wife includes the privileges and crest, which are thus acquired not for the son-in-law himself but for his successor. Moreover the son-in-law buys not merely the possession of the girl but the

right of membership in her clan for their future children. He continues to live in his father-in-law's family for three months, and then makes a further payment of a hundred blankets for the right to take his wife home. When the father-in-law has repaid the whole of the bride-price with interest he has redeemed his daughter, and the marriage is annulled. She may afterwards, however, remain with her husband of her own free will, or he may make a new payment in order to continue his claim upon her.¹ The Kwakiutl traditions are quite familiar with the residence of the son-in-law in the house of his wife's father, and reflect the customs of a period when the choice of a husband rested largely with the bride, and when marriages were made, as among the Haida and various other American tribes, by sleeping together at night followed by discovery on the part of the bride's family in the morning and a formal acknowledgment of the relationship.² The elaborate ceremonial incident to a present-day marriage, and the purchase and re-purchase of the bride and her father's crest and privileges are probably comparatively recent. They have not succeeded in obliterating all trace of an older and simpler practice, which is still perfectly well understood as preserved in the tribal tales.

Like the two last-mentioned tribes the Ntlakápamux, whose habitat is on the Fraser River and its tributary the Thompson River (whence they are often called the Thompson Indians) reckon kinship on both sides. There are three modes of entering into married

¹ *B. A. Rep.* 1889, 838, 834; Boas, *Rep. Nat. Mus.* 1895, 358, 334. Cf. Dawson, *Trans. Roy. Soc. Canada*, v.

² Boas and Hunt, *Jesup Exped.* x. 12, 196, 239.

life. In one of them the man, in another the girl's family, takes the initiative. In both cases presents are exchanged between the relatives. In both cases the bridegroom on going to claim his bride stays at her parents' house for several days. Then he brings her to his father's house. After a few days, or even a month or more, the young couple are compelled by custom to return ceremonially to the bride's home. They stay there for a while and are then brought back to the bridegroom's father's house; after which they are at liberty to live with or visit the parents of either as they feel inclined. These proceedings are an obvious compromise, and it will be observed that they start from the residence of the husband with the wife's folk, and not *vice versâ*. The third mode of entering into marriage is now obsolete. Formerly a man was compelled to marry a girl whose person he had touched, even if he had touched her accidentally. A man who touched the naked breasts or heel of a maiden transformed her by that act into his wife, and they lived together thenceforth as man and wife.¹ If a young man intentionally touched a girl with an arrow, it was an offer of marriage. Two days afterwards he repaired to her house, and if her relatives called him "son-in-law" and treated him well, he knew that he was accepted. "The man who cut or loosed one string of the lacing which covered a maiden's breast, cut her breech-cloth, or lay down beside her had to marry her; and she at once became his recognised wife without further ceremony. Sometimes a young man would repair to the house of his sweetheart after every one had gone to bed. He knew where she slept. He

¹ Compare the Indian cases cited above p. 40.

would quietly lie down beside her on the edge of her blanket. Sometimes she would give an alarm, and he would have to run out, but often she would ask who he was. If she did not care for him she told him to leave or struck him ; but if she liked him she said no more. He lay this way on top of her blanket, she underneath, neither of them talking, till near daybreak ; then he crept noiselessly away, just whispering to her ' Good-by.' He would come and do likewise for three nights more. On the fourth and last night she would put her arm and hand outside the blanket. This was a sure sign that he was accepted, therefore he took her hand in his. From that moment they were man and wife. On the next morning the girl would say to her parents : ' So-and-so comes to me. He touched my hand last night.' Then her father would tell the young man's people, while her mother would prepare a small feast. The young man and his parents would repair to the house of the girl's parents, and the young man would henceforth live with his wife. Sometimes, if the girl's parents gave no feast, the lad's parents did ; then the girl's father took her to [the lad's] house, and she lived with her husband and his people. In this as in all forms of marriage by touching, as a rule no presents were given, nor were ceremonial visits made. . . . The young women also had the privilege of touching the young men, which they generally did on either the head or the arm. A man, however, was not compelled to take to wife the girl who had touched him, although he usually did so. Some girls who touched a man and were not accepted felt greatly ashamed, and committed suicide."¹ From this

¹ Teit, *Jesup Exped.* i. 321, 292.

account we may infer that the original form of marriage ceremony among the Thompson Indians was by "touching," that "touching" involved the residence or visits first secret and afterwards open of the bridegroom at the bride's place of abode, and that no further ceremony was required than the recognition by the bride's family of the relations between her and the bridegroom. These are institutions proper to the stage of motherright. The more formal bespeaking, either for oneself or for a child whether girl or boy, of a spouse and the securing of the contract by gifts are intended to forestall any marriage in the ancient way which would leave it to chance, to the wayward inclination of the parties, or to the dash and cunning of a rival.

In the foregoing pages no attempt has been made at an exhaustive enumeration of peoples practising the different forms of connubial relation under review. The object has been to illustrate only some of the stages through which society has passed from matrilineal to patrilineal reckoning, or to the reckoning of parentage on both sides. The illustrations have been chosen from all parts of the world, so as to bring home to the reader's mind the fact that the process has not been confined to any one race, that it is not a local aberration, but that it belongs to the progressive organisation of human society and is due to causes universally operative, though not everywhere fully wrought out.

While it has not been possible to arrange the illustrations in exact progressive sequence, it is hoped that this has been done sufficiently to enable the general trend of social organisation to be apprehended, bear-

ing in mind that we cannot postulate any invariable series of stages through which it must have passed. We began with the reception of temporary lovers by women in their own homes. A connection thus formed tends with favouring circumstances to perpetuation; and the lover (or husband, as he may then be called) is installed as a permanent guest in his wife's tent or hut. Often the connection is at first secret. Of this stage the well-known taboo by the wife's relations of her husband is beyond reasonable doubt a consequence. It is not merely the result, as Professor Tylor long ago proved, of the residence of the husband with the wife's kin: it specifically follows from the secrecy of the connection between husband and wife. It is the ceremonial expression of an open secret, and as such endures long after all pretence at secrecy has disappeared, and even after residence at the wife's home has ceased to be practised.

Cohabitation, however, can continue to be ignored by the woman's kindred so long only as they remain indifferent by whose assistance their number is increased. The moment they find in their women a means of purchasing for themselves wives, worldly goods or the goodwill of surrounding clans, they will exercise more or less supervision over the permanent alliances which these women contract. At first, and for a long time, mere passing amours are not regarded, or at least they are not interfered with. But by-and-by virginity comes to have a special market-value, the stringency of the sexual code is increased, and a jealous watch is thenceforth kept upon maidenhood. Long before this stage is reached the woman's conubial arrangements become subject to the recognition

and consent of her kin. Cohabitation must then of necessity be disclosed at or before pregnancy. Though it may ceremonially be still considered secret it is as a fact known in the wife's family and accepted by them; and in the earlier stages its acceptance is often followed by the husband's prolonged residence with them. Where the matrilineal clan is in full force, or where the family has been formed within the larger organisation of the clan but has not yet succeeded in supplanting it for effective social government, the husband remains subordinate to the wife's male kinsmen, her uncles or her brothers. But in the process of development the clan has in many places been broken up into families the male members of which reside permanently in their wives' homes. This process is often accelerated by circumstances, as in the forests of Central Brazil. It may result, as it does there, in the husband's ultimately becoming the head of the household. In such cases the sons, unless they dwell in a bachelors' house in the village, sometimes pass to their uncle's care at an early age, thus quitting the parental roof even before the occasion arises for seeking mates for themselves.

In desert countries, however, where food is scarce population cannot cluster together in villages, nor can children easily pass to another household. Small groups are dispersed hither and thither in the search for subsistence. In some instances the inhabitants of these waste places are degraded peoples driven by invaders from kindlier soil and climate. But whatever may be the cause of dispersal its tendency would be to break down the earlier social organisation. A man would be unwilling to wander permanently without

a mate. The weaker members of his tiny horde would cling about him as their defence and mainstay. Their relation to him would entail discipline and subordination; and his authority would necessarily become unquestioned and supreme. The effect of this constant association would be that a far stronger bond would be felt between father and child than between the child and his mother's kin, with whom perhaps he only at rare and irregular intervals came into contact. The development of fatherright in this way would be unchecked, unless the wandering for subsistence ceased at regular intervals by the reunion of the larger community. In the event of such reunion motherright might long retain its legal force, or as among the Eskimo kinship might come to be recognised through both parents.

The evolution of human society more commonly takes a different direction. It is dependent not on weakness but on strength and prowess. The impulse to domineer by virtue of physical superiority has asserted itself in all ages. The capture of women has doubtless been always going on. Thus side by side with marriages in which the husband resided with or visited the wife, arose the practice of keeping one or more captive women at a man's own home for his use and benefit. The power in the household given to him by such an arrangement would be desired by others who had not the opportunity of making hostile raids for the purpose of capture. It was obtained by elopement, by simulated capture, by exchange, by the payment of what we call a bride-price. In any one of these ways or by a combination of two of them marriage is entered into in various parts of the world.

A bride-price is perhaps the most usual incident of a marriage, and is found even among peoples where the husband goes to reside with the bride and her kin. But as we have seen it is very often the condition not of marriage itself, but of the transfer of the bride to the household of her husband and of her children to his kin. Speaking broadly and subject to exceptions, the children of a marriage where the wife continues to reside with her own kin belong to that kin and not to their father's. The converse is not so general. Among some nations the wife, though residing in her husband's dwelling and under his protection and authority, retains and transmits to her children her kinship. Even the payment of a bride-price does not invariably transfer them. The tie of blood with the mother is recognised, with the father is ignored, however notorious the paternity may be. But a local tribe in such a case would, as already pointed out, be composed of men and their children who, if kindred were counted through males instead of through females, would constitute a patrilineal kin : that is, they would be descended in fact on the male side from a larger or smaller number of common ancestors. The affection of a father for his children is by no means dependent on the reckoning of kinship. On the contrary it quite commonly precedes it. Where the father is the head of the household a large measure of power over the children is in his hands, even before his kinship with them is legally recognised ; but it is liable to be largely qualified by the rights of the mother's kin. Paternal affection, the impulse to domineer and the greed of undivided power over the children would all alike lead to the desire of

more complete ownership, such as would be involved in counting them to the father's stock instead of the mother's. Self-interest of a more material kind would concur. The self-interest of the individual father would seek a means of increasing his wealth and consolidating his influence. The common self-interest of the local tribe would seek to strengthen itself against competitors and foes. The same reasons indeed would operate where, as in ancient Arabia, the matrilineal clan dwelt together. A band of brethren forming a local matrilineal clan would soon feel their strength. If faced by formidable foes they would become more and more conscious of the power of union. They would be reluctant to separate even for a limited period to mate with women outside their own home. The bringing in of strange women might then have led either to the mixture of clans by the retention of female kinship, or directly to the reckoning of the children to the paternal stock. The point that needs to be insisted on is that the bond of continual association founded on daily contact and the authority of the head of the family and of the local elders and chiefs is insufficient of itself to give that sense of union and security which the legal tie of kinship carries. We have had illustrations of this in the preceding chapter. Where kinship is reckoned through the mother, father and child are found on opposite sides in quarrels between clans ; they meet in conflict ; and the duty of blood-revenge lays upon them the necessity of exacting compensation from one another, and even life for life. The powerful impression made by such collisions upon the mind at a certain stage of civilisation is shown by the wide diffusion of stories founded on the

theme of the Father-and-Son Combat. The ultimate tendency therefore of residence by the wife at the husband's home would be in the direction of patrilineal reckoning. Moreover, in the progress of culture property of one kind or another began to be accumulated. It was poor at the best according to our standard ; but such as it was it was invaluable in the struggle for subsistence, for maintenance against the forces of surrounding nature or men, and for advance in material civilisation. The children of a man who owned property would during his lifetime share in its advantages. On the occasion of his death religion required much of it to be destroyed or abandoned to the deceased. Under mother-right the children had the mortification to see what remained pass away from them to their father's relations. Though on the other hand they were entitled to share in what was left by their mother's male kin, that perhaps hardly made up to them the loss of the hunting-grounds, the woods, the fields, the house, the cattle, the beasts of burden, the arms and other objects hitherto associated with their life and of which they had shared in the usufruct. This motive, partly economical partly sentimental, for a change of kinship-reckoning was not, it may be conceded, everywhere potent. That it had its influence however in bringing about the result is clear from the fact that even under mother-right the father begins to take care of his children in this respect by bestowing on them substantial gifts in his lifetime, and from their claim, as among the Malay population of Tiga Loeroeng, to a share of his property after his death : a claim logically inconsistent with mother-right.

It is submitted then that while motherright is founded on blood, fatherright on the other hand had its origin in quite different considerations. Kindred with the father is first and foremost juridical—a social convention. This is rendered clear by the customs of numerous peoples in transition between motherright and fatherright. Such are those of the Malays of the Padang Highlands where the residence of the mother, whether with her own or her husband's *suku*, decides the question; of the Murray Islanders where the children have their choice between their father's or mother's clan; of many of the Dravidian tribes of India where the reckoning has been changed by contact with Brahmanism; of the Chukchi where the future kin of the pair and consequently of their children is now a matter of arrangement at the time of marriage. Still more evident is it in the effect that so commonly follows the payment of the bride-price. It would be easy to multiply the number of instances I have cited, in which the payment of the bride-price not merely ensures to the bridegroom the custody of his wife and children, but transfers the children to his stock. The artificial character of the kinship thus created is thrown into strong relief where two kinds of marriage like those by *jujur* and *ambel anak* coexist, or where the rights of the wife's kin are compromised for one or more children of the marriage.¹ On the other hand,

¹ Among the Negro tribes of West Africa even the wife herself sometimes sells her rights in the children to her husband for money. We have learned in the last chapter that so absolute is the power of the head of the family that he can pawn or even sell the children. Among matrilineal peoples this power is generally vested in the maternal uncle, but occasionally at least in the wife herself. The Ewhe are a matrilineal people. The father's power over his children

the examples adduced in the preceding chapter show that to reckon a child to the stock of its mother's husband it is by no means necessary that the actual paternity be traceable to him ; nor is it even fatal that he is known not to be physically the father. The conclusion seems irresistible that fatherright is traceable not to any change in savage or barbarous theories of blood-relationship, but to social and economical causes of the kind suggested in the last few pages.

by a free woman is of the most limited description. The Ewe wife can sell or pawn her children without her husband's consent, but only if he refuse to give her what she requires. "If for instance a woman were condemned to pay a fine, and her husband refused to give her the amount required, she would have a right to sell or pawn her children in order to raise the money. In such cases it is not unusual for a mother to sell or pawn the children to their father ; and men often refuse to assist their wives in such cases, in order that they may thus acquire entire control of their children" (Ellis, *Ewe*, 221. Cf. Cruickshank, i. 321 *sqq.* as to the Gold Coast). We are not, indeed, told that this transaction transfers the kinship to the father, but the ownership by the father of the children is almost indistinguishable from kinship. Paternal descent is in fact usually described as paternal ownership, and that not merely by European observers but by the people concerned themselves. There is no more reason why a mercantile transaction of this kind should not as easily transfer the kinship of the children as payment of the bride-price. In this connection it will not be forgotten that the payment of the bride-price is often supplemented by a specific payment in respect of each of the children. We may fairly regard this purchase therefore by the father of his children as a step in the transfer of kinship, if not a transfer complete in itself.

CHAPTER VI

MARITAL JEALOUSY

Continencc not a savage virtue. Female chastity a slow growth from the limitations imposed by the masculine sense of ownership upon the gratification of the sexual instincts. In the lower culture jealousy operates only feebly or within limits. Examination of cases among matrilineal peoples. Survival of matrilineal freedom into fatherright. Peoples in a state of transition or where kinship is reckoned through parents: Eskimo. Patrilineal peoples. Polyandry: the Todas and other peoples of India and the neighbouring countries. Sexual morality. Religious and other ritual observances. Wide distribution of practices implying defective jealousy. General indifference to the actual paternity of a child. Value of children. Fatherright fosters indifference to paternity.

THE position we have now reached is this: While motherright originates in the consciousness of blood-relationship, fatherright on the contrary is due to social and economic causes. It is an artificial system of the reckoning of kinship; it is formed by analogy with the earlier system of motherright, and has in its origin at all events nothing whatever do with the consciousness of blood-relationship. This conclusion will be strengthened by a further consideration of the sexual relations of peoples in the lower culture.

Savage and barbarous peoples are possessed of many virtues, in some of which they are often justly cited as examples to persons in a higher civilisation.

Among such virtues sexual continence does not rank highly unless in cases where marriage brings a sense of ownership, especially to the husband, which is liable to be wounded by infidelity on the part of the other spouse. Even then, however, so little importance is attached to the wife's purity that, by way of hospitality and for other causes, relations with other men are often permitted to her, and the definition of adultery is limited to unlicensed acts. On the highest planes of culture this sense of ownership has been refined into the conception of the virtue of chastity; and both there and among not a few nations still in barbarism it has been extended backward so as to forbid to women sexual intercourse outside the more or less permanent unions which may legitimately be called marriage. Hence the value attached to virginity in a bride married for the first time, a value that in spite of its generally elevating tendency has undoubtedly resulted in the infliction of bodily suffering on women and has probably been one of the factors in producing the all-too early marriages usual in many parts of the world.

The wide prevalence of the opposite practice, namely, the sexual liberty recognised as the right of the unmarried both male and female, may be regarded as evidence of the small social importance attached to the gratification of the sexual instincts apart from the limitations imposed by the sense of ownership and the consequent growth of the ideal of chastity. The sense of ownership has been the seed-plot of jealousy. To it we are indebted for the first germ of sexual regulations. To it in the last resort, reinforced by growing physiological knowledge and sanctioned by religion, is

due the social order enjoyed by the foremost nations of Europe and America. We have now to consider conditions in which the sense of ownership if not absent is imperfect or developed in a manner divergent from ours, jealousy operates feebly or within limits, and chastity is not yet a virtue. Cases of sexual liberty before marriage or during widowhood will not as a rule detain us.

One of the most striking examples is that of the Sia. So little do they exhibit what we are accustomed to regard as the ordinary feelings on sexual relations that, as noted in the previous chapter, it is suggested that the danger of extinction has caused a general dissolution of manners. The disappearance of fifteen clans out of twenty-one which formerly constituted the tribe, and the reduction of three of the remaining six each to a single member, a man advanced in years, while one of the other clans is limited to a single family, has undoubtedly broken down the rule of exogamy. Whether the same cause has operated to produce the state of things about to be described the reader will be in a better position to judge after the customs of some other peoples have been examined. "Though the Sia," we are told, "are monogamists, it is common for the married as well as the unmarried to live promiscuously with one another, the husband being as fond of his wife's children as if he were sure of his paternal parentage. That these people however have their share of latent jealousy is evident from the secrecy observed on the part of a married man or woman to prevent the anger of the spouse. Parents are quite as fond of their daughter's illegitimate offspring as if they had been born in wedlock ;

and the man who marries a woman having one or more illegitimate children apparently feels the same attachment for these children as for those his wife bears him." Some of the women boast of their relations with men other than their husbands. Young maidens are set up for sale (by no means necessarily for marriage), and are often allotted to married men. Every birth is a subject of rejoicing, especially if a girl, regardless whether it be legitimate or not.¹ It is obvious that no man can be reasonably sure of the paternity of any child borne by his wife. The only thing that either party to the marriage is concerned about is the avoidance of open collision with the other. The actual practice is well understood. Against the Hopis, another of the Pueblo peoples, the dissolution of manners laid to the account of the Sia is not charged. Yet even there, a girl incurs no social penalties for admitting her accepted lover to marital privileges before the formal marriage. Nor will the birth of a child whose father she does not marry in the end prevent her from wedding some one else; while the child has the same social position and rights as a child lawfully begotten. Moreover the facility of separation allows either husband or wife at will to put an end to the relation and contract a new marriage.² If the standard of sexual morality be somewhat higher at Zuñi the difference is not unconnected with the general advance in civilisation characteristic of that pueblo as compared with others.³

All the Pueblo Indians are matrilineal. Where

¹ *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 20.

² *Supra*, p. 75.

³ Even at Zuñi licence is not unknown at the religious festivals, though now frowned upon (*Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xxiii. 210); and the mythical tales contain at least a trace of polyandry (Cushing, *Zuñi F. T.* 127).

descent is reckoned exclusively through the mother paternity is of no importance; and until at any rate the husband has succeeded in establishing himself in a more secure position than the Sia or the Hopi husband, the question of lawful marriage is quite secondary, or is disregarded altogether from the point of view of the child as well as the mother. It will be convenient in the first place to restrict our attention to matrilineal peoples.

Among the Hurons Charlevoix reports that the young people of both sexes abandoned themselves without shame to all sorts of dissolute practices, and it was no reproach to a girl to be prostituted. Her parents, indeed, were the first to invite her to it. Husbands did the same with their wives for a trifling profit. Many men did not marry at all but took girls, they said, to serve as companions; and all the difference between these concubines and legitimate wives was that with the former no definite contract was entered into. Their children were on the same footing as others, which produced no inconvenience in a country where there was no property to succeed to.¹ Their neighbours, the Iroquois, boasted of not being given to the eccentricity of jealousy, though Charlevoix roundly denies their claim, declaring the passion to be equally developed in both sexes. I need only add to what has been said in the last chapter on the subject of matrimonial arrangements among the Iroquois that when the parties were agreed on separation it was perfectly easy without any reason assigned, but good reason was necessary when separation was sought on one side only.²

¹ Charlevoix, vi. 38.

Id. v. 420.

The Illinois and more southerly nations were still more abandoned, and it was to their example that the good Father attributed the corruption of Iroquoian manners. The women were very lascivious. The prostitution of girls before marriage was a custom permitted by many of these tribes. To this as well as the length of time of suckling (during which there was no cohabitation), the excessive toil to which the women were subjected and the state of extreme misery often endured by the whole people Charlevoix ascribes the fact that female fecundity was small.¹ Whether more is meant here by prostitution than the antenuptial licence common among matrilineal and even among patrilineal peoples may be doubted. Something more would seem to be asserted of the Natchez. "We know no nation on this continent where the women are more dissolute than they are in this. They are even forced by the king and the inferior chiefs to prostitute themselves to all comers, and a woman is none the less esteemed for being common. Although polygamy is permitted and the number of wives is not limited, this is a liberty of which few beside the chiefs make use. Ordinarily a man has but one wife; but he can repudiate her when he will. The daughters of the royal house may only marry men of low birth, but they have the right to dismiss them when they like and take others, provided they are not related by marriage to them. If these husbands be guilty of infidelity, they may cause them to be tomahawked; but they themselves are not bound by the same law. They may even have as many lovers as they please without any right on the part of the husband to object :

¹ Charlevoix; vi, 4,

this is a privilege attached to the royal blood. The husband stands upright in his wife's presence in a respectful attitude; he does not eat with her; he addresses her in the same tone as her servants do. The sole privilege that an alliance so onerous procures him is to be exempt from labour, and to have authority over those who serve his wife." The chiefs had a right to take any girl they pleased into the number of their wives. They generally visited them at their parents' houses. Jealousy was not a national characteristic. The Natchez even lent their wives without ceremony: whence it was, the Jesuit Father opined, that it was so easy for them to dismiss them and take others instead.¹ The hospitality which provides a temporary wife for a guest is mentioned by Captain John Smith as practised by the natives of Virginia when it was first colonised. He describes the ceremonies on the visit of a distinguished stranger, and concludes by saying; "Such victuals as they have they spend freely; and at night where his lodging is appointed they set a woman fresh painted red with *pocones* and oil to be his bed-fellow."²

The Záparos of Ecuador are addicted to the stealing of women, even among themselves. "A man runs away with his neighbour's wife, or one of them, and secretes himself in some out of the way spot until he gathers information that she is replaced, when he can again make his appearance, finding the whole difficulty smoothed over. In their matrimonial relations they are, as indeed in the practice of all their customs, very loose—monogamy polygamy communism and promiscuity all apparently existing amongst them. Entirely

¹ Charlevoix, vi, 181, 184.

² Smith, *Works*, 73.

contrary to other neighbouring tribes, they are not at all jealous, but allow the women great liberty, and frequently change their wives in the manner above mentioned, or by simply discarding them, when they are perhaps taken up by another."¹ Succession in Porto Rico at the time of the Spanish Conquest was probably matrilineal. Every bride had to undergo the *jus primæ noctis* on the part of the guests of her husband's rank.²

In Central Brazil the Bororó are divided into two classes: those who dwell in family huts, comprising the heads of families and married men, and those who inhabit the men's houses. The bachelors who occupy the latter lay themselves out to catch girls, whom they then hold in common among smaller groups. The abduction of these girls is frequently accomplished in open daylight. All the men are reckoned fathers of any children they may bear; nor does this mode of life seem to affect the social esteem in which they are held.³ The Cañaris Indians of Quito traced their descent from a mythical woman who had commerce with two men who were brothers, and gave birth in consequence to six children, the ancestors of the tribe.⁴ The intimate connection between mythical tales and custom warrants us in suspecting that, whatever may have been the social condition of the Cañaris at the time of the Spanish conquest, such relations between men and women were not unknown at an earlier and perhaps not very remote period.

¹ A. Simson, *J. A. I.* vii. 505.

² *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xxv. 48.

³ von den Steinen, 500, 502. Rhode records that the Bororó women on the banks of the Paraguay have little chastity; they made him and his men frequent overtures (Ploss, *Weib*, i. 300).

⁴ Markham, *Rites and Laws*, 8.

The marriage customs of the Australian natives have been the subject of much discussion by anthropologists during recent years. We need not here concern ourselves with their disputes, for the main facts I am about to cite are, so far as I am aware, unchallenged. In the Dieri tribe of South Australia, when the young women come to maturity there is a ceremony called Wilpadrina, in which the elder men claim and exercise a right to them, and that in the presence of the other women.¹ This, it may be said, is a puberty rite intended to introduce the girls to the status of women, and not to be repeated. But it is not all. The tribe, like other Australian tribes, is divided socially into a number of groups of men on the one side and women on the other, the members of which from birth stand in the relation of *noa* (that is, potential spouses) to one another, and marriage outside the group is forbidden. The potential marriage may be converted into the *tippa-malku* relation (actual marriage) by formal betrothal in childhood or apparently at any time after. The *tippa-malku* relation is not however exclusive appropriation. It is qualified by that of *pirrauru*, an institution by which either or both of the spouses may be allotted and re-allotted from time to time to a group of secondary spouses of the appropriate sex, who are *noa* to them. The persons who are *pirrauru* to one another may always exercise conjugal rights in the absence of the *tippa-malku* spouse. On certain occasions a *pirrauru* husband may even have prior rights to a *tippa-malku* husband; and he has the duty of protecting his *pirrauru* wife during her *tippa-malku* husband's

¹ Howitt, 664.

absence. "When two brothers are married to two sisters they commonly live together in a group-marriage of four. When a man becomes a widower he has his brother's wife as *pirrauru*, making presents to his brother" in return. A man will sometimes lend his *pirrauru* to young men who have none with them or to whom none have yet been allotted, receiving in return presents of weapons trinkets and other things, which he gives away to prominent men and thus adds to his own importance. A visitor of the proper exogamous moiety of the tribe and connubial group (*noa*) is offered his host's *tippa-malku* wife as a temporary *pirrauru*. Outside the relation of *pirrauru* men have access also to unmarried girls and widows of the group in which they have connubial rights. Moreover, there are times when free intercourse takes place between the sexes "without regard to existing marriage relations. No jealous feeling is allowed to be shown during this time under penalty of strangling," though it may crop up afterwards. Such an occasion would be a corroboree at which the tribe meets an adjacent tribe, as on the marriage of a member of the one tribe with a member of the other tribe.¹ Women too are always sent on embassies to neighbouring tribes to settle disputes. If possible the women chosen are such as belong to the tribe to which the embassy is sent. They are accompanied by their *pirraurus* as being more likely to be complaisant to their acts than their *tippa-malku* husbands would be. For "it is thoroughly understood that the women are to use every influence in their power to obtain a successful

¹ Howitt, 175-185. Men sometimes exchange their *tippa-malku* or their *pirrauru* wives.

issue for their mission, and are therefore free of their favours," subject always to their paramours being of the proper connubial class. If the mission be successful, "there is a time of licence between its members and the tribe, or part of a tribe, to which it has been sent. This is always the case; and if the Dieri women failed in it, it would be at peril of death on their return. This licence is not regarded with any jealousy by the women of the tribe to which the mission is sent. It is taken as a matter of course. They know it, but do not see it, as it occurs at a place apart from the camp." Women of the latter tribe usually accompany the embassy back to testify the approval of their tribe to the agreement arrived at; and though we are not expressly told we may assume that the same licence occurs in their case.¹

It is clear that while jealousy exists among the Dieri, it is very imperfectly developed.² The next question is how these sexual complexities and licence affect the children. The answer is: In no way to their disadvantage. Their lineage is counted exclusively through the mother. They belong to their mother's totem and exogamous intermarrying class, whoever is their father. They call all their mother's husbands, whether *tippa-malku* or *pirrauru*, fathers; though on close inquiry they would distinguish the former as their "real father" or "very father," calling the others "little father." In like manner they call the *pirrauru* wives of their mother's *tippa-malku*

¹ Howitt, 682.

² Jealousy, it is right to say, does attach to the *pirrauru* status; but apparently not so much in reference to occasional acts as lest further *pirrauru* relationships be entered into. And it is very far from being a specially masculine phenomenon (Howitt, 182).

husband as well as their own mother by the name of mother, distinguishing them if necessary as "little mothers." Reciprocally they are called "son" or "daughter" by their mother's male *pirrauru*,¹ and probably by her female partners in the *pirrauru* group. For we read that "in the event of a *tippa-malku* wife dying, a *pirrauru* wife will take charge of her children and attend to them with affection and not in any manner as a step-mother. It must be remembered," Dr. Howitt goes on to say, "that a man's wives whether *tippa-malku* or *pirrauru* are in the relation of sisters either own or tribal."² Here he hits the heart of the difficulty around which anthropologists are still disputing. The Australian terms of relationship are so wide that in the present state of the discussion it is unsafe to build any argument upon them. One result, however, emerges: they do not necessarily convey any assertion as to physical relationship in the same way that ours do.

The sexual arrangements of the Dieri have been laid bare in greater detail than those of any other matrilineal tribe in Australia. To avoid repetition it may be said there is general correspondence in the institutions of all such tribes, at all events in the south-eastern part of the continent. In some it would appear that the licence is even greater and amounts at times to absolute promiscuity.³ In New South Wales

¹ Howitt, *J. A. I.* xx. 58. We cannot consider it surprising that "frequently the women say they are ignorant which man, the Noa or the Pirrauru, is the father of any particular child, or they do not admit that there is only one father."

² *Id.* 184.

³ *E.g.*, the now extinct tribe of the Kurnandaburi, Howitt, 192, 193; the Wiimbaio, Tatathi and Keramin, *Id.* 195. Other ex-

where uterine descent generally prevails it is an almost universal rule that visitors to a neighbouring tribe having the same class organisation are accommodated with temporary wives. When two brothers (using that word in the extended sense of Australian relationships) have quarrelled and wish for a reconciliation one of them sends his wife to the other's camp, and a temporary exchange is effected. At a grand assembly of the tribe, or as a magical rite to avert some threatened calamity, a general exchange of wives sometimes takes place.¹ A calamity is not foreboded every day, and grand assemblies of a tribe are becoming constantly rarer: hence this custom is not of frequent occurrence. The practice of other tribes may however lead us to suspect that it was formerly by no means uncommon. At any rate there is a good deal of sexual licence at all the gatherings for puberty ceremonies.²

Another district in which matrilineal institutions prevail is the western side of the continent of Africa. Many of the tribes both of Negroes and Bantu are comparable for laxity to the Australians. Thus of the Bahuana, a tribe inhabiting the banks of the Kwilu, an affluent of the Kasai in the Congo basin, we are told that sexual morality is conspicuous by its absence. "The unmarried indulge as they please from a very early age, the girls even before puberty. Hence virginity in a bride is never expected and never found."

amples of more or less restriction are the Kamilaroi (*Id.* 208), the Geawegal (*Id.* 217), the Wakelbura (*Id.* 224). Compare the customs of the aborigines of North-West-Central Queensland, Roth, *Ethnol. Stud.* 174, 175, 181, 182,

¹ A. L. P. Cameron, *J. A. I.* xiv. 353.

² Mathews, *Ethnol. Notes*, 68.

Marriage is the result of choice on both sides and is preceded by the intercourse of the parties. The women cultivate the land. When the girl goes to the fields she is followed by her lover. He tells her that he desires her and woos her with a gift. If she succumb to this courtship she admits him to her favours there and then. This is repeated day after day until "his heart becomes big" or he has no more of the native currency of brass rods to bestow upon her. Then he goes to her mother with a present which includes a fowl, and tells her that he wants to marry her daughter. "I don't mind," says the mother; and he thereupon takes the girl to his hut without any further fuss. Divorce it is true is unknown. But marriage makes little difference in a woman's continence; "and it may be said that the only time during which a woman contents herself with her husband is during pregnancy, since it is believed that adultery at this period would prove fatal to the child." Abortion, as might be expected, is common. Jealousy is so far developed that the husband considers adultery on the part of his wife when discovered to be a personal injury, for which compensation is assessed by the chief. Unless the mother be his slave the father has very little authority over the children, who are sent to their maternal uncle at puberty. There is no difference in the treatment of legitimate and illegitimate children. The only prohibited degrees are said to be mother and son, and brother and sister.¹

In the cataract region there is a secret guild called

¹ Torday and Joyce, *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 285 *sqq.* Sexual indulgence by children is not considered in the slightest degree shameful, and parents do nothing to check it.

Ndembo into which both sexes are admitted. Children young people and middle-aged men are all to be found in the *vela*, or home, where the mysteries are conducted. Some pass through the mysteries more than once. When it is decided to initiate a number of persons in a district the *vela* is built outside the town. Those who desire to be admitted feign sudden death. After awhile the sight of these cases "induces a form of hysteria among the natives, who fall and are actually carried off in a state of catalepsy." They are all brought to the *vela*, where they remain for a term varying from three months to three years. The details of the rites do not concern us, except that no clothes are worn, for "there is no shame in *ndembo*." "Both sexes live together, and the grossest immoralities are practised. In this respect however," says a missionary, "some districts are worse than others, but the King of Congo, long before we went out to him, had prohibited the custom in the town of San Salvador as too vile to be permitted. For the same reason it was not allowed in some other towns. These were, however, but a few exceptions; the vile and senseless custom was almost universal." When the novices return fully initiated, they are supposed to have actually died and undergone resurrection.¹ Mr. Herbert Ward describes a rite which he calls *N'Kimba* or *Fua Kongo*, but which appears to be similar to, if not identical with, that just referred to. According to him it is a sort of magical rite to increase the fertility of the women. "When the elders of a village consider that the women are not bearing the usual proportion of children they proclaim an 'N'Kimba.' The charm-doctors and

¹ Bentley, *Pioneering*, i. 283.

other active agents of the rite take up quarters in an isolated forest, where they are soon joined by numbers of voluntary initiates. Boys and men of any age are eligible, as also girls and women who have not borne a child. Full sexual licence is permitted." As in the case of the *ndembo* death and resurrection are supposed to be suffered by the candidates, but we are told that the process "usually lasts five or six years."¹ These are special observances of a quasi-religious character and only take place at certain intervals. But Sir Harry Johnston, speaking in general terms of the same region, declares that chastity is unknown; a woman's honour is measured by the price she costs; and but for jealousy of the men there would be promiscuous intercourse. Even this jealousy is often easily laid. A trifling fine in many districts is deemed sufficient penalty for adultery, though elsewhere, as we have seen in a previous chapter, the punishment is death. On the other hand the men are far from displaying anything but satisfaction when a European is induced to accept the loan of a wife either as an act of hospitality or in consideration of some small payment. The testimony to the incontinence of the West African native is in fact universal; and masculine jealousy is founded on nothing but the bride-price and the property in the woman obtained by payment.²

Mr. Monteiro, writing of the Mussurongo Ambriz and Mushicongo tribes, says: "The Negro knows not love affection or jealousy. Male animals and birds are tender and loving to their females; . . . but in all the long years I have been in Africa I have never seen a Negro manifest the least tenderness for or to

¹ *J. A. I.* xxiv. 288.

² Johnston, *Congo*, 404.

a Negress. . . . They have no words or expressions in their language indicative of affection or love. Their passion is purely of an animal description, unaccompanied by the least sympathetic affections of love or endearment. It is not astonishing, therefore, jealousy should hardly exist; the greatest breach of conduct on the part of a married woman is but little thought of. The husband by their laws can at most return his wife to her father, who has to refund the present he received on her marriage; but this extreme penalty is seldom resorted to, fining the paramour being considered a sufficient satisfaction. The fine is generally a pig and rum or other drink, with which a feast is celebrated by all parties. The woman is not punished in any way, nor does any disgrace attach to her conduct. Adultery on the part of the husband is not considered an offence at all, and is not even resented by the wives. It might be imagined that this lax state of things would lead to much immorality; but such is not the case, as from their utter want of love and appreciation of female beauty or charms they are quite satisfied and content with any woman possessing even the greatest amount of the hideous ugliness with which nature has so bountifully provided them. Even for their offspring they have but little love beyond that which is implanted in all animals for their young."¹ Post cites an old Italian writer for the statement that it was quite customary in Angola Ginga Cassange and Congo to lend and exchange wives, and other writers aver the same of the Mpongwe.²

Islam has made much progress among the peoples

¹ Monteiro, i. 243.

² Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 471, 472.

of Senegal. But pagan tribes still exist whose manners have the ordinary Negro characteristics. The Mancagnes, for instance, permit antenuptial licence; and the birth of a child, especially a girl, in consequence is received by the mother's parents with sacrifices of joy and feasting similar to those consequent on the delivery of a married woman. A bride-price is paid for a wife, nor is there any regard for her personal wishes. She ought in theory to be faithful after marriage to her husband, or her family may be called upon to repay her bride-price and she herself may be subjected to corporal punishment. But in reality she is the butt of attentions on the part of all the young men, who from the age of fifteen stop short of nothing to obtain her at every opportunity.¹ It is customary among several of the West African tribes for the wife to have a recognised lover. Among the Bullams Bagoes and Timmaneys female chastity is only valued to the time of marriage. It would be thought extremely impolite and ill-bred for a married woman to reject a lover's overtures. True, "she is liable to severe punishment if discovered, yet it does not at all affect her reputation," unless she have previously made a vow to her husband not to go astray for a certain period. "Almost every married woman has, according to the country custom, her *yangeé cameé*, or *cicisbeo*, whom she first solicits. This connection she is at little or no pains to conceal; and her husband is often obliged to be silent, as otherwise he would have reason to dread worse consequences. For although the laws of the country are severe against adultery, it requires the arm of power, even among themselves, to put them

¹ Leprince, *L'Anthropologie*, xvi. 59, 62.

in force." If pregnancy result from any of these amours the woman is said to declare the paternity of the child before it is born.¹ A husband among the Brames, we are told, reckons it a special merit in his wife to have many lovers.² The Mbres about Lake Tchad (if I am right in supposing them to be a matrilineal people) practise fraternal polyandry.³

Among the Tshi-speaking peoples of the Gold Coast "chastity *per se* is not understood. An unmarried girl is expected to be chaste because virginity possesses a marketable value, and were she to be unchaste her parents would receive little and perhaps no head-money for her. It is therefore a duty she owes to them to remain continent. A man who seduces a virgin is compelled to marry her, or if her parents will not consent to the marriage to pay the amount of the head-money. In the latter case, her marketable value having been received, any excesses she may commit are regarded as of no importance. A married woman is the property of her husband, and consequently may not bestow her favours without his permission. But a married man can and does lend his wife, and the wife submits to be lent, without either of them supposing that they are committing an offence against morality. Many husbands, moreover, encourage frailty on the part of their wives, hoping to profit by the sums which they will be able to extract from their paramours. Throughout, the woman is regarded as property. The daughter is the property of

¹ Matthews, *Voyage*, 119.

² Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 468, citing Waitz.

³ *L'Anthropologie*, xiv. 229, citing and reviewing an article by Capt. Truffert in *Rev. Générale des Sciences*, Jan. 30, 1902.

her mother, and the wife in a more limited sense that of the husband.”¹ Similar customs are reported of the Ewhe-speaking peoples of the Slave Coast.² In both cases it will be observed that the want of chastity is regarded purely from the point of view of property. In an unmarried girl it reduces her market-value; in a married woman it is only reprehensible when the act is committed without the concurrence of the husband. The moral question is not considered; and lineage being counted only through women, there is no question of a possibility of tainting the descent of the issue.

The customs of the Negro tribes of the Ivory Coast subject to French rule have been investigated by government officials for juridical purposes. Among some of these tribes, although matrilineal, the *potestas* is vested in the father and has attained considerable development. Yet virginity is not required in a bride, and marital jealousy is so feeble a passion that adultery on the part of the wife entails no consequences upon her, or at most only a few blows. The partner of her guilt (if guilt it be) pays an indemnity, often quite small, to the husband, except among the Abrons, where he pays nothing if he belong to a different clan, though to avoid reprisals he generally makes him a present of a few bottles of gin. On the other hand the wife has, among several of the tribes, something to say to her husband's extra-matrimonial love-affairs, and does not forget to exact compensation. Divorce is in general easy on either side. Adulterine children are regarded little if any worse than others. They usually rank as the husband's legitimate offspring: in any case they belong to the wife's family. Among the Brignan, if

¹ Ellis, *Tshi*, 286.

² *Id. Ewe*, 201, 202.

the husband divorce his wife for adultery, or refuse to recognise the offspring, he has no claim against the paramour for compensation. Some of the littoral peoples have a curious custom by which a man has a right to take away any other man's wife on paying her husband compensation.¹

Among the Barea and the Baze of northern Abyssinia, the pregnancy of an unmarried girl is by no means a subject of dishonour. Her children are as welcome to the family as if she were married; nor has her lover any resentment on the part of her relatives to fear. Young people of both sexes have full sexual liberty, which also extends to divorced women. As regards married life, however, there is a great difference between these two tribes. The women of the latter are described as very free; the husbands are accused of lending their wives to their guests; and all conjugal fidelity is called in question. This however is the account given by the Barea and may be intended merely to emphasise their own claim to a higher morality. The wives of the Barea are everywhere regarded as being exemplary in their fidelity to their husbands—a notable exception among East African women. Yet neither among them nor among the Baze is adultery treated as a crime. A husband finding a stranger with his wife has merely the right to thrash him.²

Among the Wayao and Mang'anja of Lake Nyassa the girls are taught in their puberty ceremonies that they must be faithful to their husbands, else the latter

¹ Clozel, 101, 97, 149 *seq.*, 100, 194, 198, 200-203, 398, 436, 439, 458, 460, 459.

Munzinger, 486, 524, 525, 502.

will kill them. This is a threat which, we learn, "goes perhaps a little beyond the truth." But the husband has the right to enforce it, as well as to inflict the same penalty on the seducer. Yet a native man will not pass a solitary woman, and her refusal of him would be so contrary to native custom that he might kill her. The missionary who reports this assumes that it would "apply only to females that are not engaged." But it is obvious that if the native men act in this way resistance by the women is not common. The husband of a faithless wife cannot return to cohabitation until another man has had ceremonial intercourse with her. The identity of the latter man is said to be concealed from the husband, lest from jealousy he kill him. Seeing, however, that his act is a ritual performance intended to render future cohabitation by the husband safe, it may be surmised that the real reason for concealment is different. It is a wife's duty to prepare food for her husband. "When a wife has been guilty her husband will die if he taste any food that she has salted" in the course of cooking. Here we perhaps have the real ground of the husband's right to kill the guilty wife: it is the danger to his own life arising from causes usually classed as sympathetic magic, not merely sexual jealousy. A girl who is betrothed but not yet actually married is liable to the same penalty. Infant betrothal is common; and it is the custom that betrothed girls often cook food for their intended husbands, who must therefore run the same risk as if actually married. Two married men on the other hand will often lend one another their wives. A man who has committed adultery with the wife of another and been found out will compromise

the latter's claim on him for compensation by lending him his own wife. Further, on emerging from the puberty ceremonies every one whether girl or boy must find one of the opposite sex with whom to have ceremonial intercourse: so little virtue is attached to sexual purity in itself.¹

The Guanches of Grand Canary and Gomera held it to be one of the first duties of hospitality for the host to offer his own wife to a guest; and refusal of the courtesy was considered an insult. The people of Lanzarote, another of the Canary Islands, practised polyandry. Many of the women had three husbands "who held the position in turn by months, the one next to succeed to the honour serving until his time came to be lord." The Gomerans at least seem to have been in the stage of motherright: probably the inhabitants of the other islands were in the same stage. In Grand Canary the lord of the district had a *ius primæ noctis* over all girls; but he might if he pleased depute it to one of the nobles.²

The tribes inhabiting the Elema district of New Guinea bordering on the Papuan Gulf still reckon kinship through the mother. But the development of the paternal *potestas* has been considerable, and it is significant that theft of property and sexual immorality are by the native law identical and bear a common penalty, namely, death. This is said to have been laid down by their original male ancestor Ivu, who came out of the ground and married a woman whom he delivered out of the trunk of a tree. The tribal

¹ Duff Macdonald, i. 126, 173, 119; Capt. C. H. Stigand, *J. A. I.* xxxvii. 122.

² Cook, *Amer. Anthropol.* N. S. ii. 479.

legends turn like the tale of Troy upon the theft of a woman.¹ On the north-eastern coast of the island, however, among the Yassiassi the husbands prostitute all their women, their wives and daughters alike. They are great traders and the observer who reports this custom suggests that it is to be ascribed to their trading propensities.²

In the Marshall Islands no value is placed on antenuptial chastity, and sexual intercourse is quite free until marriage, except in the case of daughters of chiefs and families of high rank on the island of Nauru, where the population is Polynesian. It is a disgrace to bear an illegitimate child on Nauru. To obviate such an accident abortion is allowed. On the same island fraternal polyandry exists, though not common; and children born of such unions are reckoned as those of the entire group of husbands. On the other islands a married woman is by no means restricted to consort only with her own husband; but on Yaluit at least she denies him a corresponding liberty. On Yaluit there are women who instead of marrying entertain a succession of temporary lovers. They are called *karrainmerr* (bushwoman). This mode of life is not regarded as specially disgraceful, for the chief's wife will as readily admit to her society a bushwoman as any other of her sex. Throughout the islands husband and wife usually separate after a longer or shorter time; and a case is reported from Nauru in which a man of twenty-four had already had eleven wives, of whom some had left him and others he had left. On Yaluit the husbands lend their wives in

¹ Rev. J. H. Holmes, *J. A. I.* xxxiii. 127.

² Dr. Rudolf Pösch, *Globus*, xcii. 279.

exchange for payment. Not that this occurs against the woman's will : they are too independent for that : in most cases it is their inclination that is gratified. It need hardly be said that adultery is quite customary and is unpunishable. On Nauru the husband sometimes takes a sterner view, but he has no right to put his wife or her paramour to death ; and if he divorce her the latter commonly marries her. Rape is not punished ; on Yaluit resistance by a woman is unknown.¹

On Ponape, one of the Caroline Islands, exchange of wives between friends and relations is occasionally practised.² At Tonga where, contrary to the general rule among the Polynesian peoples, descent was traced through the mother sexual licence was more restricted than on most of the islands where agnatic kinship prevailed. Examples of domestic happiness were by no means uncommon. Yet even there we are told there was lasciviousness, great licence existed and it was difficult to designate with certainty the father of a child. On the other hand the women were kindly and considerately treated and almost idolised by the men.³

On Guam, one of the Ladrone Islands, it was customary for young men to live in concubinage with girls whom they "purchased" from their parents by presents ; nor did this injure the girls' prospects of marriage after-

¹ Kohler, citing official reports, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 417, 416, 418, 433, 445 ; Steinmetz, 432, 433 ; Brandeis, *Globus*, xci. 76. In Yaluit, however, the penalty for adultery with a chief's wife is death ; and where a chief is married to a lady of high rank and exercises his undoubted privilege of an amour with any woman of his tribe, his wife will not seldom put her to death, which apparently she has a right to do. In both cases the offence is really a kind of *lèse-majesté*.

² Christian, 74.

West, 270, 260. Cf. Mariner, ii. 141 *sqq.*

wards. Frequently a number of young men and girls lived together in a large house, probably one of the bachelors' houses common in the East Indies. Marriage was monogamic, but divorce was easy and of frequent occurrence, the children and household property being always retained by the wife. If a woman discovered her husband to be unfaithful, with the aid of the other women of the village armed with spears he was chased from the house, his growing crops were destroyed, the contents of the house were appropriated and the house itself sometimes pulled down. On the other hand the husband had no redress against his wife for her unfaithfulness though he might chastise her paramour.¹

Motherright is the rule on the islands of Leti Moa and Lakor. Sexual intercourse previous to marriage is free, but secret. The fidelity of the married women is renowned. To speak to a married woman save in her husband's presence is forbidden, and renders the man who does it liable to a fine to her husband her family and the chiefs. Divorce however is easy. It can be obtained for the wife's adultery, or for illusage on the part of the husband, or to avoid disputes. A great religious festival is held yearly at the time of the eastern monsoon to implore from Grandfather Sun, the chief Nature Spirit, rain and plenty of food and drink cattle children and riches. It lasts a month. The nunu-tree is sacred. Grandfather Sun comes down into it to fertilise Grandmother Earth, and the people must await his coming and take part in his enjoyment with dances and saturnalia. In former years it was an essential part of the rite that

¹ W. E. Safford, *Amer. Anthropol.* N. S. iv. 715.

men and women had promiscuous intercourse in public.¹ The same festival with the same rite is celebrated also on the islands of the Babar Sermata and Luang group. The men of Luang too go for months together on journeys, and the wives left behind very often forget them. Some indeed lay themselves out to seduce the men who remain, especially strangers, so as to profit by their fines on their husbands' return. For on all these islands any jealousy that may be entertained by a husband is not due to the injury inflicted on his wife's virtue by her infidelity, or to the loss of her affection; nor of course is it the contamination of the blood of her descendants, since the mother alone counts as the source of kinship. It is simply and solely because she is regarded as property.² The people of the Timorlaut islands, who are, as we have seen, on the border-line between motherright and fatherright, are by no means faithful spouses. The men make great use of magical means to excite love on the part of the women whom they desire. The favourite prescription is a philtre composed of finely chopped roots mixed with lime prepared by the lover himself, and believed to be extremely potent. It is forbidden therefore to unmarried men to prepare lime, though it is universally made use of for chewing with pinang. Inasmuch as sexual intercourse is free to the unmarried and always precedes marriage, it is obvious that this prohibition is not aimed at the seduction of unmarried girls. Husband and wife

¹ Riedel, 370, 384, 387, 390, 372.

² Van Hoëvell, *Int. Arch.* viii. 134; Riedel, 314, 325, 323, 335, 351. As to the general meaning of the rite and the festival above referred to see Frazer, *G. B.* ii. 205.

however are said to live on good terms with one another despite the prevalent infidelity. The wife may indeed be divorced for adultery, and in that event the bride-price must be repaid. But she must not be struck, otherwise her relatives will interfere and avenge her. She may on the other hand beat her husband with a stick without being liable to any penalty. If he illuse her she may leave him and take the children with her, nor can he obtain repayment of the bride-price.¹

On the Poggi Islands off the west of Sumatra it is said the marriage contract is unknown. The sexes cohabit at will and the children belong exclusively to the mother. The father indeed is for the most part unknown, and in any case has never any right to them.² This is probably a somewhat highly coloured picture. But it conveys the idea of a matrilineal society in which the marriage-tie is extremely weak, and change of spouse is frequent. With equal emphasis travellers and others who have come into contact with the natives of Borneo speak of the dissoluteness of various tribes of Dyaks. Thus of the Dyaks of the Syang district Schwaner declares that fidelity in marriage is in the eyes of both parties a chimera; of the Kampong of Dangan Kamai in the Katingan river-basin he reports that the men and women live mostly in promiscuous intercourse, and of the Olo Ot in the interior of Koetei that no marriage contract is entered into. Kater says that among the Dyaks of Sidin in the western division of Borneo a woman may have more than one

¹ H. O. Forbes, *J. A. I.* xiii. 20; Riedel, 302.

² Wilken, *Verwantschap*, 672 note, citing *Tijdschrift voor Ind. T. L. en Vk.* iii. 327.

husband and that the women make use of the privilege without being the less respected on that account or without making any secret of it. It is certain, says Schwaner, that in the districts of Dusun, Murung and Syang the marriage bond is as lightly broken as it is commonly entered into without consideration and merely for the temporary gratification of appetite : a married pair separate easily and each of them enters as easily and thoughtlessly into a new bond. The laws are often strict against adultery ; but they are not used for the purpose of enforcing chastity by wives, whose peccadilloes are winked at if not encouraged, in order that compensation may be extracted from their paramours.¹ The accounts of the natives of Borneo are often very fragmentary, and all of the foregoing may not reckon descent through the mother. If not, they enforce all the more strongly the argument of this chapter. The Orang Ot, one of the aboriginal tribes, have never been observed by any European traveller. Living in the inaccessible mountain-ranges of the interior they are very shy, and we only know them from reports of the other natives. So far as it is possible to judge from these reports they are in the stage of motherright. The girls choose their husbands and make the first advances ; the nuptial tie is very loose, "the sexes satisfying their desires as soon as time and opportunity allow."²

Divorce is very common among the Khasis and Syntengs. It may be occasioned by a variety of causes,

¹ Wilken, *Verwantschap*, 735 note, 748.

² Ling-Roth, ii, cxcvii. transcribing Schwaner's Notes. The same traveller reports very unfavourably of the sexual morality of the inhabitants of Melanhoei District in the Kahaijan river basin ; but his remarks are vague and inconclusive.

such as adultery barrenness incompatibility of temperament and so forth, or simply by agreement. Easy though it may be some formalities are necessary, and among the Khasis public proclamation is made by a crier through the village in these terms: "Hear, O villagers, that U. and K. have become separated in the presence of the elders. Hei! thou, O young man, canst go and make love to K. for she is now unmarried; and thou, O spinster, canst make love to U. Hei! there is no let or hindrance from henceforth." Either party is then free to marry again, but they cannot re-marry one another. So common are the divorces that the children are in many cases ignorant of even the names of their fathers.¹

Ancient authors record similar traits in the manners of the barbarous nations with which they came into contact. The Massagetai married each one a wife, but if we may believe Herodotus they had their wives in common. When a man desired intercourse with a woman all he had to do to avoid interruption was to hang up his quiver in front of the waggon.² The historian attributes a parallel device to the Nasamonians of Libya. Each man, he says, has many wives, and they have intercourse with them in common, each leaving his staff at the door when he goes to visit a woman.³ According to Strabo the people of Arabia Felix practised fraternal polyandry, and the several husbands adopted the same plan to secure privacy with the common wife.⁴ When a Nasamonian married for the first time his bride was required to submit to intercourse with all the guests,

¹ Gurdon, 79, 81.

³ *Id.* iv. 172.

² Herodotus, i. 215.

⁴ Strabo, xvi. 4, 25.

receiving from every one in turn a gift. The Augilæ, like the Nasamones a Cyrenaic tribe, and the Balearic Islanders had the same wedding custom.¹ The Auseans about Lake Tritonis were said not to marry but to have intercourse like cattle. In regard to the children Herodotus is obscure; but we gather that they were at a certain age brought before an assembly of the adult men and there one or other of the men was formally recognised as the father.² The women of the Gindanes wore leathern anklets, one, it was said, for every man with whom she had had intercourse; and the more she had the higher she was esteemed, as having been loved by a greater number of men.³ Strabo following Artemidorus reports that among the Troglodytæ, a nomadic tribe near the east coast of Africa, the women and children, except those of the chiefs, were held in common; the penalty for intercourse with a chief's wife was a sheep.⁴

Julius Cæsar attributes to the Britons a species of marriage which appears to be a combination of polyandry and polygyny. Every ten or twelve men, he says, had wives in common. Usually such men were brothers or fathers and sons. But the children born of these unions were reckoned to the husband who first married the mother as a virgin.⁵ This passage has been the subject of discussions into which we need not enter. The essential thing for our purpose is that the sexual relations of the women were such that the actual paternity of any of their children

¹ Pomponius Mela, i. 8; Diodorus Sic. v. 1.

² Herod. iv. 180. A similar account is given by Mela (i. 8) of the Garamantæ.

³ *Id.* 176.

⁴ Strabo, xvi. 4, 17.

⁵ Cæsar, *De Bell. Gall.*, v. 14. Cf. Dion Cassius, xvi. 12.

must have been difficult to determine, at all events within a narrower range than ten or twelve men, and the nominal husband was the reputed father. If this was the standard of morality in the comparatively civilised regions of southern Britain we cannot be surprised to find that in the wilds of Caledonia among the Picts, a matrilineal people, the women consorted openly with the best warriors.¹ The ancient Irish, if Strabo's information may be trusted, were laxer still: he paints them as more abandoned than the Kamtchadals or the Koryaks. They had intercourse, and that openly, with women including their own mothers and sisters.² Whether this be strictly accurate or not (and the geographer intimates his own doubts on the subject) their voluminous sagas, put into literary shape in a much later age, testify to morality by no means exalted. They practised the hospitable custom of providing a temporary bedfellow for a guest—a custom not abandoned as late as the sixteenth century. When Cuchulainn and the heroes of Ulster sought the abode of Maive, queen of Connaught, and her husband Ailill to have their quarrels adjudged, thrice fifty maidens were placed at their disposal for the nights; and Findabair, daughter of Ailill and Maive, fell to the lot of Cuchulainn. Before he left, however, Maive herself was wont to resort to his stead.³ Moreover Conchobar, king of Ulster, not merely exercised the *jus primæ noctis* over the daughters of all his subjects,

¹ Dion Cassius, lxxvi. 16.

² Strabo, iv. 5, 4.

³ *Irish Texts Soc.* ii, 69, 81. See the adventure of the Bishop of Valence, a French emissary to Ireland in the year 1547–8, quoted by Froude, *Hist. Eng.* v. 74 note, from *Memoirs of Sir James Melville*.

but every man in Ulster gave him hospitality at night and caused him to lie with his wife. The same royal right is reported of other Irish monarchs.¹ Accounts hostile, it is true, but not altogether destitute of credibility represent, both in the reign of Henry II. at the time of the first conquest and at the commencement of the Elizabethan troubles, a state of society quite inconsistent with the observance of the marriage laws known to the writers.²

Both Greek and Scandinavian stories of the gods are full of traces of sexual relations indicating a very imperfect development of jealousy among those divine beings, the reflection doubtless of their worshippers' behaviour at the times when the stories came into being. Among the Scandinavians, even in historical times,

¹ D'Arbois de Jubainville, *L'Épopée Celt.* i. 7, 29.

² Girald. Cambr. *Topog.* iii. 19; Froude, *Hist. Eng.* vii. 103, quoting a report to the Council, 1559, preserved among the Irish MSS. in the Rolls. A curious tale is told by Martin, writing on the Hebrides in the early years of the eighteenth century, illustrative of the morality of the islanders of Rona near Lewis. "When Mr. Morison the minister," it runs, "was in Rona two of the natives courted a maid with intention to marry her; and [she] being married to one of them, afterwards the other was not a little disappointed, because there was no other match for him in this island. The wind blowing fair, Mr. Morison sailed directly for Lewis, but after three hours' sailing was forced back to Rona by a contrary wind; and at his landing the poor man that had lost his sweetheart was overjoyed, and expressed himself in these words: 'I bless God and Ronan that you are returned again, for I hope that you will now make me happy and give me the right to enjoy the woman every other year by turns so that we both may have issue by her.' Mr. Morison could not refrain from smiling at his unexpected request, chid the poor man for his unreasonable demand and desired him to have patience for a year longer, and he would send him a wife from Lewis; but this did not ease the poor man, who was tormented with the thoughts of dying without issue" (Martin, *Description*, 23).

the marriage-bond was loose and chastity was not very seriously regarded. But we have no actual record of legal polyandry. The case of Greece is different. According to Polybius polyandry was customary at Sparta, where three or four men, or even more if they were brothers, were the husbands of the same woman. Unlike the British custom, the children we learn were reckoned to the brothers in common. The custom by which old men having young wives lent them to sturdy young men whom they picked out for the purpose of begetting beautiful children long continued to be observed. It shows the Spartans as more anxious to secure for their children handsome and healthy parents than themselves to beget them. According to the current story Lycurgus went further. He favoured the lending of wives by others than old men and apparently even overtures by women, though perhaps not without marital consent. Thus their very tolerant sexual code and the complaisance of Spartan husbands were sheltered beneath the authority of the mythical legislator. Nor, if we may judge by Aristotle's animadversions, were the women at all inclined to allow his statutes to remain a dead letter.¹

¹ Polybius, xii. 6; Plut., *Lycurgus*; Xenophon, *Rep. Laced.* i.; Aristotle, *Pol.* ii. 9. Aristotle relates that according to tradition the licence of the women was due to their having successfully resisted Lycurgus' efforts to control them by law.

In classical times the legend ran that Cecrops first instituted monogamy at Athens; before his time connections had taken place at random, men had had wives in common, and people did not know who their fathers were because of the number of possible parents (Athenæus, xiii. 2, quoting Clearchus of Soli). This is obviously, as Miss Harrison (*Prolegomena*, 262) says, a confused tradition of motherright (which we have already found reason to

Customs of a similar character obtained, if we may believe classical writers, in other barbarous nations. It must be remembered that they are not recorded with anthropological exactitude; they are told of nations often imperfectly known to the writer; in many cases the statements are founded on reports by travellers and others incompetent, for various reasons, to give an accurate account. Yet with full allowance for all these objections, there emerges a body of evidence proving that in ancient times the cultured nations of the Mediterranean basin were surrounded by peoples, many of which displayed the same bestial or philosophic indifference to the actual paternity of their offspring as is found among backward peoples in almost all parts of the world. Nor was this indifference confined to savage and semi-savage tribes. The ancestors of some of the Greeks were related to have shared it, and we may suspect that all did so. The customs of Athenians as well as Spartans, even in historic times, were witness to it. This is not all. Among the many relics of lower stages of culture found in the luxurious cities of Western Asia their sexual customs were conspicuous.

believe at one time prevailed at Athens) rather than trustworthy testimony of polyandry. My argument does not require me to insist that motherright is always accompanied by promiscuity or even what we should call laxity of morals. We know that it is not. But the law attributed to Solon and discussed in an earlier chapter probably was a survival and a limitation of a more extended freedom allowed to women. If this be so, light is shed on the tradition recorded by Clearchus; and we may therefore be justified in suspecting the primitive Athenians of a social condition in which women changed their mates at will, and perhaps retained none of them long: a condition inconsistent, it is needless to say, with any effective masculine jealousy.

Lucian relates that at Byblus, at the annual mourning for Adonis, the women performed the well-known mourning rite of cutting off their hair. Any woman who refused to do this was required to exhibit herself on one day of the festival and undergo prostitution to one of the strangers who resorted thither, handing over the price to the goddess called by Lucian the Byblian Aphrodite.¹ This was an annual rite. Presumably at other times the woman preserved her chastity. But if we may trust the ecclesiastical historian Socrates the women of Heliopolis (Baalbec) were, down to the establishment of Christianity, required by the law to be common, so that the offspring were doubtful, for there was no distinction between fathers and children: a social condition which Constantine abolished.² If we may believe Theopompus the historian (who wrote in the time of Alexander the Great), as quoted by Athenæus, a similar law governed the relations of the sexes among the Etruscans. He gives shameful details of their licentiousness, in the course of which he states that they brought up all the children that were born, nobody knowing who was the father of any child, and that the children imitated their elders in their frequent feasts and their intimacy with all the women.³

But it is not only matrilineal peoples who are thus careless of the chastity of their women or the actual paternity of their children. Matrilineal freedom has often survived into fatherright in more or less

¹ Lucian, *De Dea Syria*, 6.

² Socrates, *Hist. Eccl.* i. 18. In more general and rhetorical terms Eusebius, a contemporary witness, testifies to the same effect, *Vita Const.* iii. 58). See my paper in *Tylor Essays*, 192.

³ Athenæus, *Deipnos.* xii. 14.

abundant measure. Illustrations of this indifference have been given in a previous chapter to show that uncertainty of paternity cannot be the cause of the reckoning of descent exclusively through the mother. The special object of those that follow is to show that the insistence on chastity is not a necessary consequence of the change of reckoning. That alone does not impose a higher standard of sexual virtue. It is the transfer of *potestas* to the husband (a gradual process commencing under motherright) which authorises him either to keep his women to himself or to dispose of them to other men at his own pleasure; and subject to this they are often free. The *potestas* also is limited among many peoples by religious motives. What we should consider violations of chastity are commanded as religious duties; and neither the husband nor the woman herself has any right to withhold her person from sexual intercourse on special occasions or with special persons.

We may first consider a few cases in which the reckoning of kinship is undergoing transition or is made through both parents. Of South African Bantu the Herero are just passing from motherright to fatherright. Before marriage sexual intercourse is free. Yet some value is placed on virginity, and to secure it children are betrothed in infancy, after which on both sides chastity must be observed. The child of an unmarried girl belongs to the begetter if he choose to acknowledge it. In such a case it is treated well but excluded from the inheritance. No compensation is payable for the seduction of an unmarried girl. Adultery on the part of a wife is the source of quarrels. The seducer is liable to pay the husband

compensation ; the wife may be repudiated but cannot be punished. On the other hand a husband will lend his wife in consideration of a present. Sometimes men will enter into a sort of partnership by which they hold their wives and cattle in common. The children however in all cases belong to the legitimate husband. This is a well recognised institution and is known as *Oupanga* (friendship).¹

On the Ambon and Uliase Islands two kinds of marriage exist, depending on the payment or non-payment of a bride-price, and the children belong either to the husband's or to the wife's family accordingly. The people are reported to be libidinous, and, as in other parts of Indonesia, intercourse regulated strictly by law is looked upon as something unnatural. Satisfaction of sexual passion is deemed equally proper with that of hunger and thirst. Girls have free intercourse with old and young men, even before puberty, to such an extent that it is a shame to have few or no lovers. In this way they make acquaintance which ends in marriage with one or other of their admirers. It is true that an adulterer was liable forthwith to be put to death, but only when caught in the act, a contingency which probably did not very often occur. Divorce did not exist until European rule forbade the offended husband this summary vengeance. It is now decreed by the chief on proof of adultery continual disagreement ill-usage and the like. Some of the population are Mohammedans: in free and unlimited sexual intercourse they surpass all the rest.² The

¹ Kohler, citing various authorities, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 304, 309, 298 ; Meyer, 56, 57, 62, 63.

² Riedel, 41, 67, 71.

practice of capture (or rather elopement, for it seems to have been preceded by an understanding with the bride) and the exaction of a bride-price have, we may conclude, developed the *patria potestas*. Sexual intercourse is free to the unmarried also on the Keei or Ewaabu Islands and is usual. The women formerly lived in polyandry and the children belonged to the mother; but women were captured in war and were regarded as the property of their captors, the children following the father. This is the traditional manner of accounting for the change from uterine to agnatic kinship. At the present time marriage is entered into either with or without payment of a bride-price; and the reckoning of children to the father or mother depends on the payment. The husband has the right to send his wife away for adultery: the bride-price must then be repaid. If this cannot be done, her family unite to bring the pair together again. Many of the people are Mohammedans; but their knowledge of Islam is very defective.¹ Matrimonial institutions therefore appear to be undergoing a parallel evolution to those of the Ambon and Uliase islanders.

The Eskimo reckon kindred along both lines of descent. In spite of the vast extent of shore-line along the Polar Sea over which they are scattered their manners have a general resemblance. Infant betrothal is not uncommon, but as a rule the selection of a wife is made by a man after attaining puberty and giving proof of ability to support a family by his success in hunting and fishing. The lady usually feigns or feels aversion, and force is used to compel her. Polygamy is recognised, but is perhaps not very common,

¹ Riedel, 219, 235, 236, 200.

“They conduct their marriage,” says Crantz of the Greenlanders, “with tolerable good order; at least they have art enough to conceal the breaches of conjugal fidelity, so that but little of it transpires. Yet it never passes over without angry looks and words on both sides, and sometimes the woman gets a black eye; which is the more remarkable, as the Greenlanders otherwise are not quarrelsome or prone to strike. Neither is the matrimonial contract so irrevocable with them, but the man may put away his wife, especially if she has no children. This he does with little ceremony; he only gives her a sour look, marches forth and does not return home again for several days. She perceives his meaning directly, packs up her clothes and removes to her own friends. Afterwards, in defiance to him, she demeans herself as prudent and agreeable as possible, to bring an odium upon him. Sometimes a wife elopes of her own accord if she can’t agree with the other females in the house; . . . But neither of these separations often occurs if they have had children together, especially sons, for sons are the Greenlander’s greatest treasure and the best security of their subsistence. In case of separation they always follow the mother, nor are they to be prevailed on even after her death to return again to the father to support him in his old age.” Discussing the moral character of the people in a later passage the same author, perhaps with a missionary’s natural austerity, says: “Neither does their plausible outside modesty go far. I will not be particular about their young single people, because among them there are the fewest open breaches of chastity, though they are as filthy in secret as other nations; but as to the grown-

up, it is certain their polygamy does not always spring from a concern for population, but mostly from lust. Moreover there are some women that are whores by profession, though a single woman seldom prostitutes herself to this scandalous trade. But as for the married people, they are so shameless that if they can they break the matrimonial obligation on both sides without a blush."¹ If we assume, as perhaps we may, that the "scandalous trade" referred to had arisen from contact with Europeans, the rest of the foregoing account may well stand for a fairly correct presentation of native manners. Egede, who was a missionary to Greenland for several years beginning in 1721, amply confirms it. He notes with some surprise that "the most detestable crime" of polygyny, though prevalent, caused no jealousy among the wives before the missionaries taught them its wickedness. Nor can jealousy have had a much deeper hold of the men. He describes by way of illustration a "game," at which after feasting singing and dancing, the men one after another disappeared behind a curtain with each other's wives. "Those," he says, "are reputed the best and noblest tempered who without any pain or reluctance, will lend their friends their wives. . . . Especially the women think themselves happy if an *angakok*, or prophet, will honour them with his caresses. There are even some men so generous that they will pay the *angakok* for it; chiefly if they themselves have no children; for they fancy that an *angakok's* child will be more happy and better qualified for business than others."² The game referred to by Egede is similar to the lamp-extinguishing game

¹ Crantz, i. 157, 158, 159, 161.

² Egede, 140 sqq.

described by other writers, one of whom says that a good host always has the lamps put out at night when there are guests in the house.¹

Among some Eskimo polyandry has been alleged to exist, and there seems to be foundation for the statement.² "A strange custom," writes Dr. Boas, concerning the Eskimo of Davis Strait and Cumberland Sound, "permits a man to lend his wife to a friend for a whole season or even longer, and to exchange wives as a sign of friendship. On certain occasions it is even commanded by religious law. Nevertheless I know of some instances of quarrels arising from jealousy. Lyon states, however, that this passion is unknown among the Iglulirmiut [of Baffin Land]. The husband is not allowed to maltreat or punish his wife; if he does she may leave him at any time, and the wife's mother can always command a divorce. Both are allowed to remarry as soon as they like, even the slightest pretext being sufficient for a separation." A friend on a visit for a season is accommodated with the loan of one of his host's wives if the latter have more than one. At the great religious feast of the autumn, the object of which is to drive away the evil spirits and procure fine weather for the coming winter, two gigantic masked figures appear. Silently with long strides they "approach the assembly, who screaming press back from them. The pair solemnly lead the men to a suitable spot and set them in a row, and the women

¹ Nansen, 169. Is this the same custom as referred to by Schell, *Globus*, xciv. 86? According to him it would seem too that the Eskimo of East Greenland are matrilineal.

² Nansen, 145, cites from Nils Egede a case of a woman who had two husbands; but both she and they were *angakut*,

in another opposite them. They match the men and women in pairs, and these pairs run, pursued by the *qailertatang* [masked figures], to the hut of the woman, where they are for the following day and night man and wife. Having performed this duty the *qailertatang* stride down to the shore and invoke the good north wind, which brings fair weather, while they warn off the unfavourable south wind. As soon as the incantation is over, all the men attack the *qailertatang* with great noise." They pretend to kill them. Presently however they are restored to life and are consulted as oracles by the men about the future.¹

Jealousy is said to be more developed among the Eskimo of Hudson Bay. "Monogamy is generally the rule, but as there are so many counteracting influences it is seldom that a man keeps a wife for a number of years. Jealousy, resulting from laxity of morals, produces so much disagreement that one or the other of the parties usually leaves with little ceremony. In rare instances, where there is a compatibility of temper and a disposition to continence, the pair remain together for life. Many of the girls bear children before they are taken for wives, but as such incidents do not destroy the respectability of the mother, the girl does not experience any difficulty in procuring a husband. Illegitimate children are usually taken care of by some aged woman, who devotes to [them] all her energies and affections." Elsewhere the same writer describes the intrigues to which the *angakok* lends himself for the purpose of gratifying the desires

¹ Boas, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* vi. 579, 581, 605 (cf. 606, 608); *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xv. 141. The custom of exchanging wives appears in the traditional tales, e.g., *Ibid.* 225.

of men or women for change of spouse, and adds: "The shaman may do about as he pleases with the marriage ties, which oftener consist of sealskin thongs than respect and love."¹

With regard to temporary exchanges similar to those of other Eskimo at festivals, Dr. Boas, writing of shamanistic performances among the Eskimo of the western coast of Hudson Bay, says: "It seems that the incantations of the *angakut* [pl. of *angakok*] are always performed in the evening. After each of these ceremonies the people must exchange wives. The women must spend the night in the huts of the men to whom they are assigned. If any woman should refuse to go to the man to whom she is assigned she would be sure to be taken sick. The man and the woman assigned to him, however, must not be near relations."² The more westerly Eskimo of Point Barrow make a great many changes before they settle down to a permanent union. They are also in the habit of exchanging wives for a period. "For instance, one man of our acquaintance planned to go to the rivers deer-hunting in the summer of 1882, and borrowed his cousin's wife for the expedition, as she was a good shot and a good hand at deer-hunting, while his own wife went with his cousin on the trading expedition to the eastward. On their return the wives went back to their respective husbands. The couples sometimes find themselves better pleased with their new mates than with the former association, in which case the exchange is made permanent. This happened once in Utkiavwiñ to our certain knowledge. This

¹ Turner, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 178, 188, 189, 199, 200.

² Boas, *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xv. 158.

custom has been observed at Fury and Hecla straits, Cumberland Gulf, and in the region around Repulse Bay, where it seems to be carried to an extreme. According to Gilder it is a usual thing among friends in that region to exchange wives for a week or two about every two months." The writer from whom I here quote adds: "I am informed by some of the whalemens who winter in the neighbourhood of Repulse Bay that at certain times there is a general exchange of wives throughout the village, each woman passing from man to man till she has been through the hands of all and finally returns to her husband."¹

Among the Eskimo about Bering Strait "a man may discard a wife who is a scold or unfaithful to him, or who is niggardly with food, keeping the best for herself. On the other hand, a woman may leave a man who is cruel to her or who fails to provide the necessary subsistence. When a husband finds that his wife is unfaithful he may beat her, but he rarely revenges himself on the man concerned, although at times this may form an excuse for an affray where enmity had previously existed between the parties. An old man told me," says Mr. Nelson, "that in ancient times, when the husband and a lover quarrelled about a woman, they were disarmed by the neighbours and then settled the trouble with their fists or by wrestling, the victor in the struggle taking the woman. It is a common custom for two men living in different villages to agree to become bondfellows, or brothers

¹ Murdoch, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* ix. 412, 413. This writer says, "We never heard of any of the licentious festivals or orgies described by Egede and Kumlien" (*Ibid.* 375). This negative evidence is not conclusive in view of the general practice of the Eskimo elsewhere.

by adoption. Having made this arrangement, whenever one of the men goes to the other's village he is received as the bond-brother's guest and is given the use of his host's bed with his wife during his stay. When the visit is returned the same favour is extended to the other; consequently neither family knows who is the father of the children. . . . It is frequently the case that a man enjoys the rights of a husband before living regularly with the woman he takes for a wife, and nothing wrong is thought of it, unmarried females being considered free to suit themselves in this regard." The same writer describes the pairing at the autumnal festival in terms slightly different from those already quoted concerning the Central Eskimo, whence it would appear that sometimes, at all events, the choice of partners is not wholly at the will of the shamans. During the February moon another festival is held in honour of the dead and to obtain a good supply of game and food. It is called the Doll Festival, from a wooden doll or image of a human being, which is the centre of certain ceremonies in the *kashim*, or assembly-house. "During the continuance of the festival the namesakes of dead men are paired with namesakes of their deceased wives without regard to age, and during this period the men or boys bring their temporary partners firewood, and the latter prepare food for them, thus symbolising the former union of the dead."¹

A kind of thanksgiving ceremony is performed

¹ Nelson, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xviii. 292, 360, 379, 494. The custom of bond-brotherhood, which is not uncommon in other parts of the world, generally entails community of wives (*cf.* Post, *Studien*, 32).

by the Asiatic Eskimo at certain times. It is called the "ceremonial of going around" and consists in a number of persons of both sexes turning sunwise a horizontal wheel fixed to an upright pole and singing to the beating of the drum. They go faster and faster until having wrought themselves up to a pitch of excitement they leave the wheel, and the men, still running in the same direction, chase the women all over the house. Every man has the right to sleep that night with the woman he may have succeeded in catching.¹

In the face of these customs it can hardly be suggested that the Eskimo in general pay any regard to the chastity of their wives or the real paternity of their children. Jealousy, it is true, is more developed in some communities than others; but it does not succeed in preventing or materially reducing libertinage. Its only result is to multiply the changes of mate. On the other hand, the religious festivals and social observances of the race express and stimulate the fickle passions of both sexes. The reckoning of lineage through the father, so far as it obtains, means no more than the reckoning of patrilineal peoples through the mother's husband, the actual father being unimportant for any purpose.

In the greater part of Melanesia descent is uterine and the people are divided into two or more exogamous classes. Dr. Codrington, after a full discussion of this organisation and of Melanesian society, arrives at the conclusion that there is reason to believe that in the exogamous divisions there are traces of a communal system of marriage. In practice on most of the islands,

¹ Bogoras, *Jesup Exped.* vii. 402.

in spite of the laxity between boys and girls such as we have found elsewhere, female chastity is more highly valued than is usual in matrilineal societies. The islands, however, are not all alike in this respect. It is noteworthy that two of the worst are Ugi and San Cristoval (two of the Solomon Islands) where uterine has given way to agnatic descent.¹

Infant betrothals are very common throughout the islands among the higher ranks of society, and virginity is probably preserved in such cases. Adultery was very strictly punished, yet on several of the islands compromise by payment was possible. On the other hand, divorce is easy and common, and is effected at the will of either party. Cases occur in the Banks Islands where a husband "connives at his wife's connection with another man. This is not counted adultery because it is allowed;" but it is thought discreditable. The use of women given by way of hospitality according to the custom already mentioned would not of course be regarded as adultery for the same reason.² On the Solomon Islands we are told conjugal fidelity is usually preserved within the limits of the same community, but the men of Santa Anna exchange wives with those of San Cristoval for a time and then take them back, restoring them to their original position in the home.³ In the Fiji Islands "all the evils of the most licentious sensuality are found," though it is fair to add that "voluntary breach of the marriage contract is rare in comparison with

¹ Codrington, 21, 22, 27 *sqq.*, 235; F. Elton, *J. A. I.* xvii. 93, 95; Guppy, 43; R. Parkinson, *Int. Arch.* xi. 199.

² Codrington, 237, 243, 244, 246.

³ Guppy, 43.

that which is enforced." A chief sometimes gave up the women of a town to a company of visitors or warriors. Compliance was compulsory; but the wives were required to disclose it to their husbands, otherwise they would be punished.¹

In the northern New Hebrides, during the ceremonies of initiation into the secret society of the Qatu, "if the women assemble, as they do, to hear the singing in the enclosure where the neophytes are being taught it is an allowed custom for men to carry them off and ravish them."² It may be said that this is punishment for prying; but if the object were to prevent prying greater care would be taken, as among the Australian natives, to keep the women at a distance. It seems rather to be part of the proceedings. As such it must be well known to the women and does not deter them. In the Wainimala District of Viti Levu, Fiji, fatherright prevails. A secret society (according to another account two secret societies) existed until a few years ago, into which the youths were initiated with elaborate ceremonies. At one stage in the proceedings the women were summoned and entered the *nanga*, or sacred enclosure, which was at all other times forbidden to them. They entered on all fours, and after a short ceremony by the chief priest, returned in the same way. As soon as they emerged from the *nanga* the men, who had been hitherto concealed, rushed upon them with a sudden yell, and an indescribable scene ensued. "All my informants agree," says Dr. Fison, "in stating that the men and women address one another in the filthiest language, using expressions which would be

¹ Williams, *Fiji*, 115, 147.

² Codrington 87.

violently resented on ordinary occasions, and that from the time of the women's coming to the *nanga* to the close of the ceremonies very great licence prevails." Nor is this the only occasion. When a chief's son is circumcised a great feast follows, ushering a period of revelry. "All distinctions of property are for the time being suspended. Men and women array themselves in all manner of fantastic garbs, address one another in the most indecent phrases and practice unmentionable abominations openly in the public square of the town. The nearest relationships—even that of own brother and sister—seem to be no bar to the general licence, the extent of which may be indicated by the expressive phrase of an old Nandi chief, who said 'While it lasts we are just like the pigs.' This feasting and frolic may be kept up for several days, after which the ordinary restrictions recur once more. The rights of property are again respected, the abandoned revellers settle down into steady-going married couples, and brothers and sisters may not so much as speak to one another."¹

The Melanesian husband pays a bride-price for his wife; he takes her to his own home; and his *potestas* is highly developed even where motherright prevails. The woman occupy quite a subordinate position; and on the whole it may be said that jealousy on the part of the husband seems to arise from his sense of property, rather than from any other cause. His property is not infringed by the voluntary lending of

¹ Fison, *J. A. I.* xiv. 24, 28. Another account of these ceremonies by Mr. Adolph B. Joske of Fiji varies in some particulars from Dr. Fison's account and does not admit the licence (*Int. Arch.* ii. 254). Independent inquiry, however, as stated below, confirms the correctness of Dr. Fison's information.

wives as an expression of hospitality. But it is suspended at feasts or at the will of the chief in some of the islands, as part of certain ceremonies in others. The ritual licence just described in Fiji is expressly recognised as a suspension of property in women as in other things. Independent inquiry has elicited the confirmation of Dr. Fison's account of the circumcision ceremonies. The details are described as unfit for publication; but Dr. Tylor quotes from them an expressive phrase to the effect that on the fourth day, when food is no longer *tabu* but permitted, and the great feast is prepared, "it is said that there are no owners of pigs or women."¹

The inhabitants of the Barito river basin in the south of Borneo are addicted to feasts of a more or less religious character. They last for several days at a stretch and are the occasion of much licentiousness.² The Kenniahs in British North Borneo have a festival called *Bunut* in honour of the fertility of their women and of the soil. After certain ceremonies, including auguries and prayers to their God Laké Ivong, to come and bring the soul of the paddy seed, what is described as "a downright indecent rough and tumble" follows, in which men and women boys and girls all indiscriminately join, pelting one another with rice boiled in soot and with filth. A naked man, with an idiotic simper on his face, wanders in and out among the revelling crew and the women are made to touch him as he passes. This is obviously a fertility charm.

¹ Fison, *loc. cit.*, note by Dr. Tylor. It is even stated in one account that tribal brothers and sisters are intentionally coupled, thus compelling what at other times would be deemed incest and as such deserving of the severest punishment.

² Ling Roth, *Sarawak*, ii. clxxiii. transcribing Schwaner's Notes,

The interpretation is confirmed, if confirmation be necessary, by the fact that the grossest licence is permitted during the short period of the orgy. It comes to an end in about a quarter of an hour. The verandah in which it takes place is deluged with water and one or two women, sliding about the slippery floor with hand-nets, make believe to scoop up the slush for fear the rice they have wasted may never return to them again.¹

Among the Land Dyaks of Sirambau the Orang Kayas, or chiefs, according to St. John have many cases of adultery to settle, but these do not cause much excitement in the tribe: whence it is probably fair to infer that sexual morality is low, adultery common and easily atoned for. Such in fact seems to be the case, though they are reported to be more moral than the Malays. Divorces are very common, effected upon the slightest excuse; nor has a woman any difficulty in replacing a spouse whom she has lost or herself repudiated. Marriage is a business partnership for the purpose of having children, dividing labour and providing by means of offspring for old age. It is therefore entered into and dissolved almost at pleasure. Either party may, it need hardly be said, put away the other for adultery; but if a wife who gives this occasion for divorce be a strong useful woman her husband, instead of taking advantage of it, may accept from her lover a fine equal to twelve rupees and thus settle the matter.²

¹ Ling Roth, *Sarawak*, i. 415, transcribing Brooke Low's notes.

² St. John, i. 165, 166. Among other Dyaks there is jealousy. The wife will thrash her unfaithful husband, and the husband will thrash the paramour of an unfaithful wife. But divorce is effected

Sexual hospitality of the kind already referred to is provided by the Kyans and probably by some other tribes of Sarawak.¹ Among the Timorese of Dawan it is regarded as a great insult for a guest to refuse a wife or daughter offered to him by his host.²

The Malagasy may be said to have reached the stage of fatherright, but they retain visible traces of matrilineal descent. Their sensuality "is universal and gross, though generally concealed. Continnence is not supposed to exist in either sex before marriage; consequently it is not expected and its absence is not regarded as a vice." Indeed so great is the desire for children that not merely is sterility regarded as a misfortune or an opprobrium, but a girl who has already become a mother is looked upon as an advantageous match. There is no word in the Malagasy language to express a virgin; the word *mpitovo* commonly used means only an unmarried girl. The negative evidence of words is proverbially fallacious. If we had only that afforded by the absence of a word for virgin we might hesitate to believe in the common incontinence of unmarried girls in Madagascar. It is, however, abundantly attested by European observers.

simply by desertion, and on the slightest pretext. Many men and women marry seven or even eight times before they finally settle down. *Id.* 56.

¹ Ling Roth, *Sarawak*, i. 117, quoting Low. Bastian (*Indonesien*, iv. 24), apparently referring primarily to the Tandjoeng Bantang Dyak, states that the Dyak makes use of his wife to obtain wealth by means of compensation for her adulteries. But, as usual, his authority does not appear. From the interior of Peling he reports (*op. cit.* 43) a practice of hiring the wife to strangers; but this would seem rather a case of demoralisation arising from contact with strangers. Here again no authority is cited.

² Post, *Studien*, 345, citing Riedel.

After marriage a wife is supposed to be faithful, and one of the many causes of divorce is the suspicion of infidelity. Yet on the other hand we are told that every child is welcome in the family without too great a solicitude about its origin. When the husband is at home his wife wears no badge distinguishing her from an unmarried woman, but during his absence, especially if in the service of Government, she wears a necklace of silver rings or beads or of braided hair to denote that she is married and therefore her person is sacred. In case of prolonged absence however a husband will give leave to his wife to have intercourse with another man. There is a special Hova word, *sadrànto*, for this leave. Its existence affords positive evidence that the idea expressed is familiar, and consequently that the practice is relatively frequent. Polygyny is practised, the first wife being usually consulted before a second is taken. Her refusal to consent is another of the many grounds of divorce. A Malagasy proverb compares marriage to a knot so lightly tied that it can be undone with the slightest touch. The power of divorce rests with the husband and may be exercised on very trivial occasions. On the other hand, by running away and refusing to return the wife can practically compel a divorce, though the husband may impose conditions with regard to property and, as we have seen in a previous chapter, with regard to children by a future husband: he can even divorce her in such a manner as to preclude her from ever marrying again. Among the Tanála, if a woman of noble birth marry a commoner he cannot divorce her, but she can divorce him. This may remind us of the privileges enjoyed by royal women on the continent of Africa

and elsewhere. The rights of an unmarried Malagasy queen resemble them still more. She may have "a family by whom she may think proper: the children are recognised as legitimately royal by their relation to the mother and no question made as to paternity." On certain festive occasions the licence was shameless. Such were the periodical times appointed by the Hova sovereigns for the performance of circumcision, and the celebration of a birth in the royal family. The grossest practices on the latter occasion were abolished by Radama I. on the urgent remonstrances of Mr. Hastie, the then British resident at the capital, who threatened to publish the facts in the *Mauritius Gazette* so that they might be known in Europe to the king's disgrace.¹ Among the Betsileo funerals are accompanied by general "prostitution."² A French traveller in the earlier half of the last century gives a graphic account of the way in which the hospitality of the Betanimena towards him extended to the offer of a young girl as temporary consort;³ but it does not appear whether other Malagasy tribes practise this custom on the reception of strangers. Their opinions on the subject of chastity would certainly not stand in the way.

Brahmanism is gradually penetrating the immemorial practices of the non-Aryan population of the valley of the Ganges and its tributaries. By a convenient fiction the tribe is converted into a caste deriving its

¹ Ellis, *Hist. Mad.* i. 137, 167, 172, 150; Sibree, 252, 253, 254, 250, 217; Father Paul Camboué, *Anthropos*, ii. 983.

² van Gennep, *Tabou*, 158, citing the *Antananarivo Annual*.

³ *Id. Tabou*, 45, quoting Leguével de Lacombe, *Voyage à Madagascar*.

origin from one of the recognised gods in the Hindu pantheon; its chief object of worship is represented as an avatar of one of the great deities; and its occupation is said to have been ordained by divine decree to commemorate some fact of its mythical history or by way of a curse for a petty imposition on the divine intelligence. By conforming in some measure to Hindu rites and prohibitions it struggles to obtain recognition in the social hierarchy. The struggle brings with it the change from uterine to agnatic descent unless that change have been previously effected. It involves the more complete subjugation of women, infant marriage, the insistence on female chastity, the abolition of divorce, the perpetuation of widowhood. Not every tribe as yet is thus revolutionised. Among a large number of the tribes, whether aboriginal Dravidians or later immigrants, relics of the old freedom enjoyed by the female sex are found. In such cases unmarried girls are frequently able to bestow their favours on whom they will, with or without the penalty of a feast to the tribesmen, subject usually to the condition that if found pregnant they must be married; and they have a voice, if not invariably an exclusive or a controlling voice, in the selection of their husbands. After marriage adultery within the tribe or caste is winked at or regarded as a venial weakness; nor is it a ground for repudiation by their husbands unless habitual or very open and proved by eye-witnesses of the actual fact. Divorce by either party is often easy. Ladies who have left their husbands, or whose husbands are dead, are free to marry again. Their unions, even where they are of a less formal character than that of a woman married

for the first time, are fully recognised, and their children suffer no disability. If not allowed to marry, such ladies are by no means always debarred from indulging their fancies in a less regular manner.¹

It will be sufficient here to mention one of the tribes least affected by Hinduism, namely, the Santáls. The Santáls are a large Dravidian tribe, classed on linguistic grounds as Kolarian, which is found in Western Bengal, Northern Orissa, Bhágalpur and the Santál Párganas. They are divided into twelve exogamous septs descendible in the male line. These septs may be ascribed, though doubtfully, to a totemic origin. "Girls are married as adults mostly to men of their own choice. Sexual intercourse before marriage is tacitly recognised, it being understood that if the girl becomes pregnant the young man is bound to marry her." It is suggested that fraternal polyandry at one time existed. "Even now," says Mr. Skrefsrud, a "man's younger brother may share his wife with impunity, only they must not go about it very openly. Similarly a wife will admit her younger sister to intimate relations with her husband, and if pregnancy occurs scandal is avoided by his marrying

¹ The half-Brahmanised tribes and castes are so numerous and the details so varied that the general results of an examination of the details given by Mr. Risley relating to the population of Bengal and by Mr. Crooke relating to that of the United Provinces can only be stated here. Nor is it possible to compile accurate statistics, in consequence of the tendency of many of the castes to sub-division on minute points and the local differences of practice. Reference should be made to *The Tribes and Castes of Bengal* and *The Tribes and Castes of the North-Western Provinces and Oudh*, and to the Report of the Census of 1901. A distinct connection is traceable between the comparative freedom of women before and after marriage, though it is not invariable.

the girl as a second wife." Divorce at the wish of either husband or wife is merely a question of terms. It "is effected in the presence of the assembled villagers by the husband tearing asunder three *sál*-leaves in token of separation and upsetting a brass pot full of water."¹

That curious and interesting people the Todas, inhabiting the Nilgiri Hills in Southern India, have long been known to practise fraternal polyandry. A woman married to a man becomes at the same time the wife of all his brothers, and even of brothers who may be born subsequently to the marriage. So far as the statistics collected by Dr. Rivers go the husbands are usually brothers in our sense of the word. But they are sometimes clan-brothers only, that is to say, men belonging to the same clan and the same generation. More rarely it seems men of different clans may have the same wife. When the wife becomes pregnant the eldest brother performs a ceremony the central rite of which is the giving to the wife of a miniature bow and arrow. This constitutes him for all social purposes the father of the child about to be born and of all future children until another of the husbands perform a similar ceremony. So strict is this rule that he will be regarded as the father of a child born long after his death if no other man have performed the ceremony in the meantime. But a woman is by no means limited to sexual intercourse with her formal husbands, nor are they limited to intercourse with their joint wife. Wives are often transferred from one husband, or one group of husbands, to another in exchange for a number of buffaloes. Moreover there

¹ Risley, i. 228, 229, 231.

is a well-recognised institution by which a woman becomes the formal mistress of a man who is not her husband. It is true that the consent of the husbands is required, but that is usually arranged without difficulty. A woman may have more than one of these lovers, and a man may have more than one mistress. Any children born of such unions are in law children of the regular marriage.

But we have not yet reached the limit of Toda licence. It is unnecessary here to discuss the dairy-cult which forms so large a part of Toda life, or to distinguish and describe the different ranks of officials who minister in that cult. Suffice it to say that although some of these officials are restricted from intercourse at certain places or on certain days with their own wives, on other occasions they are free to have commerce with any woman, or with any woman of the Tarthar group, one of the two endogamous groups or phratries into which the Todas are divided. Indeed, after the dairyman of a Tarthar dairy has served the office for eighteen years without a break, it is an indispensable condition of his continuance that he have ritual intercourse with a girl or young woman of the clan. She is brought for that purpose to a wood near the village whither he goes at the appointed time to meet her. When he is first inducted into office an old Tarthar woman takes part in the ceremony. She must be past the age of child-bearing and must never have had intercourse with one of her own clan. There seems some doubt as to the exact meaning of this qualification; but at any rate according to the evidence it is by no means easy to find a woman who fulfils the requirement. Dr. Rivers, in summing up the results

of his inquiries as to the sexual relations of the Todas, says: "There seems no doubt that there is little restriction of any kind on sexual intercourse. I was assured by several Todas not only that adultery was no motive for divorce, but that it was in no way regarded as wrong. It seemed clear that there is no word for adultery in the Toda language. . . . When a word for a concept is absent in any language it by no means follows that the concept has not been developed; but in this case I have little doubt that there is no definite idea in the mind of the Toda corresponding to that denoted by our word 'adultery.' Instead of adultery being regarded as immoral, I rather suspected, though I could not satisfy myself on the point, that according to the Toda idea immorality attaches rather to the man who grudges his wife to another. One group of those who experience difficulty in getting to the next world after death are the *kashtvainol*, or grudging people; and I believe this term includes those who would in a more civilised community be plaintiffs in the divorce court." After intimating his doubts whether the "widespread, almost universal abhorrence" of incest is shared by the Todas, he goes on to say: "So far as I could tell the laxity in sexual matters is equally great before and after marriage. If a girl who has been married in infancy but has not yet joined her husband should become pregnant, the husband would be called upon to give the bow and arrow at the *pursiitpimi* ceremony and would be the father of the child, even if he were still a young boy, or if it were known that he was not the [actual] father of the child."¹

¹ Rivers, 515, 319, 517, 518, 523, 526, 62, 68, 72, 78, 99, 103, 156, 505, 529, 530, 531.

Polyandry at one time seems to have been quite common in the south of India, and even now it is not wholly abandoned by some of the castes. A traveller at the beginning of the sixteenth century relates that at Calicut it was the custom for friends among the gentlemen and merchants to exchange wives; and among the other castes one woman had five six or seven, or even as many as eight husbands, each of whom spent a night with her by turns. Any children whom she had she assigned to one or the other of the husbands, and her word was taken for the fact.¹ In the last quarter of the eighteenth century another traveller reported that on the coast of Malabar, in the caste to which the braziers belonged, the eldest brother alone married; but the others supplied his place with their sister-in-law when he was absent.² To-day the Kammálans (artisans) of Malabar practise fraternal polyandry. As part of the wedding ceremony the bride and her bridegrooms sit in a row, the eldest brother sitting on the right, the others in order of seniority, and lastly the bride. A priest of the caste takes some milk in a vessel and pours it into their mouths one after the other. The eldest bridegroom "cohabits with the bride on the wedding day and special days are set apart for each of the others. There seems to be a belief among the Kammálan women that the more husbands they have the greater will be their happiness. If one of the brothers, on the ground of incompatibility of temper, brings a new wife

¹ di Varthema, 145. This seems to be the authority made use of by Munster in his *Cosmography* translated by Eden in 1553 (*Arber, First Three Bks.* 17). As to polyandry in ancient India the reader may consult Jolly, 47.

² Thurston, 113.

she is privileged to cohabit with the other brothers. In some cases a girl will have brothers ranging in age from twenty-five to five whom she has to regard as her husbands, so that by the time the youngest brother reaches puberty she may be over thirty and the young man has to perform the duties of a husband with a wife who is twice his age. Polyandry is said to be most prevalent among the blacksmiths, who lead the most precarious existence and have to observe the strictest economy."¹

Fraternal polyandry it has been argued is due to economic causes, such as poverty, and the desire to keep the family property together. That economic causes have often had an important influence cannot be denied. But to attribute any species of polyandry to these causes alone is to venture upon a very hazardous theory in the face of the evidence from all parts of the world of indifference to what the civilised peoples of Europe generally regard as womanly virtue. It is not of course asserted that this indifference is universal; but the present and preceding chapters show that even where the chastity of a married woman is insisted on chastity is often interpreted in such a way that sexual union with certain persons from time to time appointed or permitted by the husband or by custom is not deemed a breach of morals, but on the contrary is a positive duty. Polyandry is the more or less permanent union of a woman with several men who are jointly regarded as her husbands. So far from its being a hardship submitted to unwillingly and from the pressure of poverty, in some cases at all events it is a subject of boasting. Thus the Kanisans, or

¹ Thurston, 114; *Ind. Census*, 1901, xx. 167; *Id.* xxvi. 275.

astrologers, of Malabar, like the Pándava brothers (mythical figures in the epos of the *Mahábhárata*) “as they proudly point out, used formerly to have one wife in common among several brothers, and this custom is still observed by some of them.”¹ The carpenters and blacksmiths too celebrate their polyandrous marriages “openly according to their caste rules and with much ceremony and pomp,” in no wise as an evil to be submitted to or ashamed of.² Among their women, as we have just seen, polyandry is highly appreciated. A very pretty Dafla girl once came into the station at Luckimpur in Bengal, threw herself at the feet of Colonel Dalton, the officer in charge, who tells the tale, and in most poetical language besought his protection. She was a chief’s daughter and a prize in the matrimonial market. Her father had promised her to a brother chieftain who already had many other wives. She however would not submit to be one of many; and besides she loved, and she had eloped with her beloved. This was so romantic that the gallant colonel was naturally interested. His sympathies were at once enlisted in her favour. When she came to him she was in a very coarse travelling dress; but when he assured her of his protection she took from her basket fresh apparel and other ornaments, and there and then proceeded to array herself; and very charming she looked as she combed and plaited her long hair and completed her toilette. Meanwhile the colonel sent for “the beloved,” who had kept in the background; and his surprise was great when there

¹ Thurston, 115, quoting Logan, *Manual of Malabar*.

² Mayne, 75, citing a mem. annexed to the *Malabar Marriage Report*, p. 103.

appeared not one but two! She who had objected to be one of many wives had eloped with two young men; why should polygamy be the privilege of the tyrant man?¹

Something like that very question was argued by a great lady in Tibet with an Indian traveller a few years since. The Tibetan custom of fraternal polyandry is too well known to need description. The tyranny of man can hardly be known among the happy women of Tibet; the boot is perhaps upon the other leg. The traveller had cured the lady in question of a nervous disorder. On one occasion, when he was dining with her, she asked him many questions concerning the marriage laws of India and Europe. When he told her that in India a husband had several wives and that among the *Phyling* (foreigners) a man had but one wife she stared at him with undisguised astonishment. "One wife with one husband!" she exclaimed. "Don't you think we Tibetan women are better off? The Indian wife has but a portion of her husband's affections and property, but in Tibet the housewife is the real lady of all the joint earnings and inheritance of all the brothers sprung from the same mother, who are all of the same flesh and blood. The brothers are but one, though their souls are several. In India a man marries, well! several women who are strangers to each other." "Am I to understand that your ladyship would like to see several sisters marry one husband?" the traveller asked. "That is not the point," she replied; "what I contend is that Tibetan women are happier than Indian women, for they enjoy the privileges conceded in the latter country to the men."¹

¹ Dalton, 36.

² Chandra Das, 161.

The women are thus a powerful influence in favour of polyandry; and if not established in the first instance, at least it is maintained by the help of their goodwill. In some of the talúks of Malabar the custom of fraternal polyandry survives among the Tiyans (toddy-tappers), though it is said to be dying out. Reasons of an economic nature however support it, reasons urged not on behalf of the men but of the women, because it is possible for a man besides sharing his elder brother's wife to have a wife for himself. Property devolves through the eldest brother's wife. A girl will not be given in marriage to an only son, for her relatives say: "Where is the good? He may die and she will have nothing. The more brothers the better the match." The argument, it is obvious, will always apply to a monogamic marriage among a community of artisans. It is said that the Tiyans wife sleeps in a room and her husbands outside. When one of them enters the room a knife is placed on the door-frame as a signal to forbid entrance to the other husbands.¹ In South Malabar and the northern parts of Cochin the marriage ceremony of the Tiyans (there called Izhuvas or Thaudans) varies according as the bride is intended to be the wife of one or all of a band of brothers. The operative part of the ceremony seems to be "the giving of sweets," similar to the Kammálan ceremony in Malabar already described. The bride and bridegroom are seated on a mat and given milk, plantain-fruits and sugar. If the marriage is intended to be monandrous the bridegroom's brothers do not share in the sweets. If it is to be polyandrous the sweets are served

¹ Thurston, 112.

to them and the bride, either in the hut of the bridegroom after he has gone through the ceremony by their mother, or in the bride's hut by her mother. It is still the custom for four or five Izhuva brothers to marry a young woman. A vessel of water is kept at the door of her room to serve the purpose of the knife elsewhere. Any of the brothers may marry a wife either for himself alone or to be a common wife of the group. The children of the polyandrous marriage are the children of all the husbands.¹ Polyandry is also a custom of the western Kallans; and among them also the husbands are held to be jointly and severally fathers of any children the wife may bear.² Among the jungle Kurumbas of the Nilgiri Hills it is said to be the custom for several brothers to take one wife in common, nor do they "object to their women being open to others also."³ In Ceylon fraternal polyandry is common, especially in the Kandyan country where it is more or less general among all classes. The reason assigned by the poor is poverty, by the wealthy and men of rank that such marriages unite the family, concentrate property

¹ Iyer, 22, 24. The Izhuvas inherit according to matrilineal rules in certain districts, but not in the district referred to (*Ibid.* 29; *Ind. Census.* 1901, xxvi. 279).

² Thurston, 108. As to the Kallans generally, see *Ind. Census*, 1901, xv. 158.

³ Thurston, 113. It is reported of the Badagas in the Nilgiris, almost in the same terms as of tribe and caste after tribe and caste in the United Provinces and Bengal: "Immorality within the family circle is not regarded very harshly" (Mayne, 75, quoting the Census report of 1891). The Kuravas, a Gipsy tribe found all over the Tamil country, treat their women "in a very casual manner, mortgaging or selling their wives without compunction" (*Ind. Census*, 1901, xv. 164).

and influence and conduce to the interest of the children who, having a plurality of fathers, will be the better taken care of and will still have a father left even though they lose one. The children call all the husbands father, distinguishing the eldest as "great father" the others as "little fathers." "Chastity," says a writer of the early part of the last century, "is not a virtue in very high estimation amongst the Singalese women, nor jealousy a very troublesome passion amongst the men. Infidelity certainly is not uncommon; and it is easily forgiven, unless the lady disgrace herself by forming a low-caste attachment, which is considered unpardonable and always ends in divorce."¹ Among the Kannuvans of Madura on the mainland a woman may only have one legal husband at a time; but she may "bestow favours on paramours without hindrance, provided they be of equal caste with her."²

Throughout India the proper marriage for a boy is deemed to be with his father's sister's daughter or his mother's brother's daughter; and in the wedding ceremonies of many tribes and castes among which it is no longer insisted on vestiges are found of the custom.³ Some castes, however, are very punctilious and will even marry together a boy who is a mere child and a full-grown woman who stands in the necessary relationship to him. This may, in some Indian cases, be the origin of the ill-assorted marriages of the kind referred to in a previous chapter.⁴ The Tottiyans or Kambalattars (Telugu cultivators of the

¹ Davy, 286; Thurston, 112.

² Mayne, 74, quoting *Madura Manual*, pt. ii. 34.

³ W. H. R. Rivers, *J. R. A. S.* 1907, 611 *sqq.*

⁴ *Supra*, vol. i. p. 305.

soil) and the Káppiliyans (Canarese cultivators) are instances in point. Among the Tottiyans, it is said, the bridegroom's father takes upon himself the duty of begetting children to his son. It is customary moreover for the women after marriage "to cohabit with their husbands' brothers and near relations and with their uncles; and so far from any disgrace attaching to them in consequence their priests compel them to keep up the custom if by any chance they are unwilling." The morality of the women is reported in general terms to be "loose." Divorce is easy and remarriage freely allowed.¹ The Káppiliyans extend the man's right of marriage to include his sister's daughter. Quite small boys are often married to adult women. Whether or not the man who is regarded as the husband's father normally supplies the husband's place, it is permissible for a married woman to consort with her brothers-in-law without suffering any social degradation. Nor need her favours be confined by any means to them, so long as those favours are shared only by members of the caste. As among other castes addicted to similar practices children of a woman mated with an infant husband are regarded as his children and inherit his property, though his paternity may be impossible.²

¹ *Ind. Census*, 1901, xv. 180; Thurston, 108.

² *Ind. Cens.* 1901, xv. 141; Thurston, 108. It is perhaps not irrelevant to note here that the tying of the *táli*, or ordinary Dravidian badge of marriage, is not necessarily effected among the castes of Southern India by or even on behalf of the *de facto* husband. The practice among the Nâyars has already (vol. i. p. 267) been mentioned. It may be said generally that at or before puberty every girl undergoes the ceremony of tying the *táli*. Once this is done she is free to contract an alliance intended to be followed by cohabitation. The ceremony by which the latter alliance is initiated is usually not regarded as marriage, and bears a different name. The subject

Reference has been made on an earlier page to the Kolarian tribes. Among these tribes the agricultural festivals are marked by an outburst of sexual licence. The Oraons celebrate in the spring a sacred marriage, like that of the Leti Islanders, "at which all shame and morality are laid aside." If not to the Santáls, the same licence is imputed in an extreme form to the Hos. The Larka-Kols offer sacrifices in January to a *bhut* or demon called Deswali, winding up with unbridled saturnalia.¹ Among the Chingpaw of Upper Burmah twice a year there is a general holiday and feasting which is the occasion of much debauchery and licentiousness. Apart from these festivals the Chingpaw displays no narrow and puritanical morality. In the last chapter we saw that no marriage takes place without previous intercourse. The dwelling-houses are from one hundred and fifty to two hundred feet long, and are built to accommodate more than one family. The young men and women have separate rooms; but as no restraint is laid on their movements they frequently pass the night in each other's quarters. The result is that illegitimacy is very prevalent. It is not considered a disgrace for an unmarried woman to be a mother. The father of her child is not bound to marry her, unless he have been formally betrothed to her; and he is only called on to support her until the child is a month old. An effort, however, is always made to get a pregnant girl married to the father of her child; but a woman thinks it no shame to forsake her lover and marry some one else. Nor does the fact requires further consideration than is possible to give here. See Mayne, 123; *Ind. Census*, 1901, xx. 170, 174; xxvi. 280, 288, 307, 337.

¹ Hahn, *Kolsmission*, 92, 99.

of her already having a child by one man injure her prospects of marriage to another.¹

The antenuptial freedom of the Tho of Northern Tonkin and its continuance for a certain period after marriage have been incidentally mentioned, in discussing their form of marriage and its relation to an earlier stage, in which the husband either visited or dwelt with the wife in her own home. We there saw that the paternity of her eldest child was often more than doubtful.² This may be said to be invariably the case among the Lolo of Yunnan. After passing a single night with the bridegroom the Lolo bride quits her husband's residence, to which she returns no more until she can do so in a condition of pregnancy. During her absence the husband does not appear to visit her, but she has full liberty of intrigue and conducts herself much in the same way as the Thai bride. When she returns with the expectation of issue he asks no questions of her but receives her with the respect due to her fecundity, being now assured of offspring by her. He is indeed fully conscious that he has not begotten her first child, and it is said that he always considers it in some sort as a stranger, reckoning the second child as the eldest. The first child however is brought up with the same care and attention as the rest and appears to belong equally to the family. If the wife do not within twelve or eighteen months exhibit signs of maternity the marriage contract is rescinded, and the husband proceeds to look out for a worthier mate.³ In Tonkin

¹ Anderson, 123, 127. Cf. *Int. Arch.* xvi. 28, 36.

² *Supra*, p. 49.

³ Rocher, *La Province Chinoise du Yün-nan* (Paris, 1880), ii. 16.

the Man Coc not only attach, like their neighbours the Tho, no importance to virginity in a bride, but in certain villages the women prostitute themselves to the passers-by without seriously affecting their reputation.¹ Among the Pa-Teng on the watershed of the Red River and the Clear River antenuptial incontinence subjects the guilty parties to a light fine; but in spite of this the relations between unmarried men and girls are quite untrammelled. Even adultery by married women appears to have only a limited importance.²

Our information as to the rule of descent among the pagan tribes of the Malay Peninsula is defective. But it would seem that the Besis reckon through the father. At the end of the rice-harvest a festival is held at which a temporary exchange of wives used to be effected. This was a ritual performance intended to have "some sort of productive influence not only upon the crops but upon all other contributing sources of food-supply."³ Among some of the tribes in the hills of Assam speaking Tibeto-Burman languages the festival of sowing is marked by an outburst of licentiousness, which is probably intended to stimulate the fecundity of the crops. After the sowing is completed the village reverts to its usual continence.⁴ The Tibetans who frequent the Kan-su border in the north of China set little store on female chastity. In lamaseries in the district of Kan-su which they call Amdo a feast is held at different times; it lasts two or three days and is known to the Chinese as "the

¹ Lunet, 241.

² *Id.* 292.

³ Skeat and Blagden, ii. 70, 76, 121, 145. Among the Sakai of Selangor the women were formerly allowed more than one husband (*Ibid.* 68). But how did they reckon descent?

⁴ T. C. Hodson, *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 94.

hat-choosing festival." The name is derived from the custom that a man may during the feast carry off the cap of any girl or woman he meets in the temple grounds, and she is obliged to come at night and redeem the pledge. "Chinese are not admitted to play at this game of forfeits, nor are they allowed any of the privileges of this *fête d'amour*."¹

Among the Maoris antenuptial intercourse was very common. "As a general rule the girls had great licence in the way of lovers. I don't think," says a well-qualified observer, "the young woman knew when she *was* a virgin, for she had love-affairs with the boys from her cradle. This does not apply of course to *every* individual case—some girls are born proud, and either kept to one sweetheart or had none, but this was rare. When she married it became very different; she was then *tapu* to her husband, and woe

¹ Rockhill, 80. It may be well to mention here the customs of certain Chinese provinces and dependencies recorded by Marco Polo. In Poim where the people were Mohammedans, when the husband left home on a journey for twenty days the wife at once found another man with whom she lived until her husband came home. In Camul if a stranger came the master of the house went away, charging his wife to be complaisant in all things to their guest. The Great Khan tried to abolish this custom, but the people were too much attached to it. They sent ambassadors representing that it was the custom of their fathers, that it was pleasing to [their idols] and that they wished to adhere to it. The Great Khan had to give way. In Chelet men would not marry virgins. Mothers used to offer their daughters to strangers, who kept them as long as they pleased and then sent them away with a gift or token. This token was worn round the neck; and the more of such tokens a girl had, the sooner she was married and the more her husband thought of her. In Caidu the same custom was followed as that attributed above to Camul. Finally in the city of Lazi it was a matter of indifference to the men if other men slept with their wives (Marco Polo, *cc.* 41, 45, 85, 86, 87).

betide her if she was guilty of light conduct." A man who had many wives however would lend one of them to a guest whom he loved to honour—not his first or chief wife but one of the inferior wives. He could also let a guest have one of the unmarried girls.¹ Divorce is common. The husband puts away the wife, or the wife returns to her relatives. If the husband in the latter case take no step to persuade or compel her by force to return (which he sometimes does) the divorce is final and both parties can marry again. Husbands are as a rule less jealous than wives : probably the result of the polygyny practised by many who can afford it.²

It may be conjectured that the length to which the practice of taboo was driven in New Zealand may account for the chastity of married women, mitigated though it was by the commonness of divorce. A man on taking a wife by that act tabooed her to himself. She was guarded from others by, and subjected so far as her own acts were concerned to, the awful and mysterious penalties of *tapu*. In this condition she remained so long as she remained a wife. Hence, though while still *noa*, or common, she did not hesitate to indulge her desires, once made *tapu* she would fear to suffer invasion even by force of her husband's property in her ; and the same fear and not merely the fear of material vengeance would restrain other men from either tempting or compelling her.

Some such explanation at least is necessary to

¹ E. Tregear, *J. A. I.* xix. 101, 103, 102 ; cf. Polack, i. 137, 145 ; Taylor, *New Zealand*, 167. See a mythological story of fraternal polyandry, Grey, *Polyn. Myth.* 81.

² Polack, i. 159, 146.

account for the difference in manners between the Maoris and their Polynesian kinsmen. The observer just quoted contrasts the sexual ethics of the Sandwich Islanders, for instance, with those of the New Zealanders. "In Hawaii," he says, "whether the woman was married or single, she would have been thought very churlish and boorish if she refused such a slight favour as" the embrace of a masculine "friend of the family."¹ A missionary quoted by Morgan declares that the natives of the Sandwich Islands had hardly more modesty or shame than so many animals. "Husbands had many wives and wives many husbands, and exchanged with each other at pleasure."² Judge Lorin Andrews of Honolulu writing to Morgan and explaining the word *pūnalūa*, applied by a man to the husbands of his wife's sisters, observes: "The relationship of *pūnalūa* is rather amphibious. It arose from the fact that two or more brothers with their wives, or two or more sisters with their husbands, were inclined to possess each other in common; but the modern use of the word is that of *dear friend* or *intimate companion*."³ The testimony to this possession in common by small groups of husbands and wives in the Sandwich Islands seems to put the custom beyond doubt. I am not concerned now to discuss the theory of group-marriage based upon it by the distinguished American anthropologist. For our present purpose all that is necessary is to point out that the strict taboo of a wife to a single husband was

¹ *J. A. I.* xix. 104.

² Morgan, *Anc. Soc.* 428, quoting Bartlett, *Historical Sketch of the Missions, &c., in the Sandwich Islands.* Cf. 415.

³ *Ibid.* 427, citing also other testimony to the same effect.

unknown, and despite the fact that the stage of pure motherright had been passed actual paternity was neglected. The saturnalia hinted at but not described by Ellis as occurring on the death of a chief indicate the same carelessness.¹ It is true that the writer tells us elsewhere that "adultery among the highest ranks *has been* punished with death by decapitation,"² but he neglects to inform us what the definition of adultery among the Sandwich Islanders was, or how often or in what circumstances the punishment of decapitation was inflicted. His expression indicates that it was a rare event. Such vague statements cannot be held to conflict with those I have previously quoted. It need only be added that, as among the Maoris, "the marriage-tie was loose, and the husband could dismiss his wife on any occasion."³ Whether the wife had a corresponding right does not appear.

In Tahiti, where another branch of this voluptuous race was settled, antenuptial licence was common, and fidelity to the marriage-bond was seldom maintained. The union was dissolved, whenever either of the parties desired it, to suit their inclinations or their convenience; and though amongst the higher classes it was allowed nominally to continue, the husband took other wives and the wife other husbands.⁴ A similar account reaches us from Samoa. "Chastity was ostensibly cultivated by both sexes; but it was more a name than a reality." From their childhood their ears were familiar with the most obscene conversation; and as a whole family to some extent herded together immorality was the natural and prevalent consequence.

¹ Ellis, *Tour*, 148.

² *Ibid.* 401 (the italics are mine).

³ *Ibid.* 414.

⁴ *Id. Polyn. Res.* i. 262, 273, 274.

There were exceptions, especially among the daughters of persons of rank ; but they were the exceptions and not the rule. In these circumstances we are not surprised to learn that adultery " was sadly prevalent." It is said to have been often punished by private revenge ; but details are lacking to show how far this was due to sexual jealousy properly so-called, how far it was due to resentment at the invasion of a right of property, and how far public opinion approved the revenge.¹

On the occasion of marriage in the Marquesas Islands the bride was compelled to undergo public intercourse with all the masculine guests. In the families of chiefs however sometimes marriage was provisionally arranged and entered into between children, a practice more recently imitated by the class below. In such cases the public ceremony was omitted. The child-wife immediately went to live with her child-husband. On arriving at puberty she was in consequence never found to be a virgin. Notwithstanding this, she withdrew into a special hut erected near her husband's house for the purpose of observing the puberty rites. There she was visited by all the great chiefs of the same, or perhaps a higher rank. After this, if both boy and girl agreed, the marriage became definitive. If they did not agree they were free to separate and marry others ; but in any case the girl's first child was reputed to be that of the husband she had espoused in infancy. From the moment of marriage a man acquired marital rights over all his wife's sisters. They became secondary wives to him, though they might themselves have at that time or

¹ Turner, *Samoa*, 91, 94, 97. Cf. *Rep. Austr. Ass.* iv. 626.

afterwards during the marriage primary husbands. In the same way all the husband's brothers were secondary husbands of the wife and had corresponding privileges. Polygyny and polyandry thus coexisted. Nor were they limited to the brothers and sisters of the consort. The husband had a right to provide himself with other secondary wives. The population, as might be expected from some of the practices mentioned, was not very prolific; and children were greatly in request, especially by the chiefs. In order to obtain offspring, a pregnant woman would sometimes be carried off, probably with the consent of herself and her husband, who followed her and became a secondary, instead of a principal, husband to her. The principal wife in her turn could also take a secondary husband; and this was done in effect whenever she desired it. Well might it have been believed by Europeans that marriage did not exist in the Marquesas. As if this were not enough, there was also a class of women who instead of marrying kept open house, and had the right of calling in any man who happened to pass without his being able to refuse. They were by no means a despised class, and it only depended upon their volition to marry any man who pleased them.¹

On the island of Yap, one of the Pelew Islands, agnatic kinship prevails. Yet continence is not required of man or woman. After the first menstruation sexual intercourse is free to every girl, and a

¹ Tautain, *L'Anthrop.* vi. 641 *sqq.* The revolting and almost incredible details given by Dr. Tautain of the marriage ceremony led, as he himself remarks, to physical disorders, which must have had a detrimental influence on the fertility of the population; but he is of opinion that it was not naturally prolific (*Id.* ix. 420).

seducer has nothing to pay even though pregnancy result. It is superfluous to say that virginity is not expected in a bride. Bastards have no disadvantage in law, and socially very little. If the father of a bastard does not take it, it enters into its mother's family and inherits in due course from her father. Divorce is easy and without special formalities; but some cause must be alleged, though it may be a mere excuse. Adultery abortion or barrenness is sufficient for the man to dismiss his wife, or even if she be a scold. He may sell her if she commit adultery or be impertinent to her mother-in-law. On the woman's side her husband's adultery or ill-treatment enables her to quit him. The definition of adultery however by no means coincides with ours. No bride-price is paid. The result is that there is hardly a pair of middle age who have not been divorced, though it is constantly observed that after various conjugal changes in the meantime they ultimately return to one another. A special custom of the island is that a number of men form a kind of club and build a club-house called a *falū*, where they spend their evenings and nights. In these houses girls are kept for the use of the members, each of whom has his appointed day. Girls are obtained for the *falū* by agreement with their parents or by force. They are held for a year, or sometimes for several years, and well rewarded for their service, and their parents receive presents also. Some reproach attaches to a girl who voluntarily enters a *falū*, and for that reason the capture of a girl is preconcerted between herself and her captors, in order that though willing to go she may appear to be forced. Yet once in the *falū* their social position is little affected: they

are taken freely to public festivities ; they are prettily dressed and well taken care of ; they have no need to work ; and they find husbands at once when they have given up living in the club. If such a girl becomes pregnant she is married by the man whom she claims as the father of her child. The married women never enter a club-house. This avoidance is perhaps not unconnected with the law by which a wife who commits adultery may be sold to a club. On the other hand, a husband is not reckoned adulterous though he belong to a club and have intercourse with the girls there. The idea of rape does not exist ; a married woman who is raped is treated as an adulteress.¹ If another and a probable account be correct the girls kept in the *falú* must in accordance with the laws of exogamy belong to a different sept from the men of the club.²

The Yakuts are very tolerant in sexual matters. They "see nothing immoral in illicit love, provided only that nobody suffers material loss by it. It is true that parents will scold a daughter if her conduct threatens to deprive them of their gain from the bride-price ; but if once they have lost hope of marry-

¹ Senfft, *Globus*, xci. 141, 142, 149, 153. Reference may be made to Prof. Frazer's discussion of the sexual relations of the Pelew Islanders in general (*Adonis*, 435). He comes to the conclusion that "a well-marked form of sexual communism limited only by the exogamous prohibitions which attach to the clans prevails." Compare with the *falú* the bachelors' houses of the Bororó, *supra*, p. 108.

² Christian, 291. The same writer states that according to his informant conjugal fidelity is not regarded as a virtue. Less probable is his assertion, if I understand it correctly, that every girl has to go through the *falú*, and that each man, married or unmarried, takes his turn with her.

ing her off, or if the bride-price has been spent, then they manifest complete indifference to her conduct. The time which young wives spend with their parents after the wedding is the merriest and freest time they ever know. The young men hover about them like flies, but the parents pretend to take no notice, and even in most cases take advantage in their household work of the serviceability of these aspirants. They only strive that these connections may not be long continued and may not become notorious; for this might bring upon them unpleasant consequences from the family of the husband and might lessen the quantity of gifts which they might expect later. Maidens who no longer expect marriage are not restrained at all; and if they observe decorum it is only from habit and out of respect to custom." A Polish political exile not long ago dwelt for twelve years among the Yakuts. He paid much attention to their customs, and to him we are indebted for the foregoing observations. He tells us further that a bride-price (which may be considerable) is paid on marriage, and that in former times parents often paid a bride-price for a girl three or four years old to be the wife of a son. She was taken and brought up in the family of her youthful husband; and in fact the two children slept together from infancy, although the marriage ceremony had not then been performed. Moreover, an interesting light is thrown upon the sexual morality of the Yakuts by their tradition that when God made Adam and his wife the latter bore seven girls and eight boys. Each boy therefore as he grew up had a wife, except the youngest. He asked God what he was to do for a wife. God answered: "If you cannot get along without

one, sleep secretly with your brothers' wives." This legend is not isolated : we are told it agrees with other current sayings and legends. The Yakuts are patrilineal ; but there are not obscure indications that in former times descent was reckoned through the mother. The wife resides at the husband's home, and special rules exist for the avoidance of his male but not of his female relatives. These rules seem to point to precautions against the exercise of claims by men upon the wives of their kinsmen. The old customs, however, are breaking down under the pressure of Russian civilisation, such as it is.¹

The Chukchi of Eastern Siberia offer to guests, whether of their own race or not, their wives and daughters and are said to resent as a deadly affront any refusal. It was related of them and the Maritime Koryaks of the Gulf of Penjinsk in the earlier half of the last century that they "begged of the Russian post-carrier in his annual journey through their country to lie with their wives, and overwhelmed him on his return with presents because a son had been born to them from this transient alliance."² The Chukchi in particular are stated to compel their wives, when they want a son, to allow themselves to be impregnated by another man.³ We may doubt whether much compulsion is usually required. Compound marriage or "marriage by interchange" is an

¹ *J. A. I.* xxxi. 96, 84, 88, 86, 93. The argument from terminology of family relationships is also worth considering ; but it does not come within my general plan. As to the time spent by young wives with their parents see *supra* p. 15.

² Erman, ii. 530 ; Georgi, 98.

³ Post, *Geschlechtsgen.* 33, citing Klemm ; Georgi, 104 ; *Jesup Exped.* vii. 318.

established custom. It "is observed mostly between first and second cousins. Males entering into this bond acquire the mutual right to the wives of one another, a right which can be claimed at every meeting. Nowadays marriage by interchange can be contracted between unrelated parties—even with people of foreign tribes with whom close friendship has sprung up. A bachelor and a widower living in the same camp with a married man can form a like contract. This style of marriage is only a system of polyandry. Sometimes more than ten people may be affected by marriage through interchange within one group, although three or four are regarded as sufficient. Women generally are not averse to the custom." After this it is superfluous to add, as the author quoted does: "Chastity is not highly regarded." He mentions that the language has no distinctive term for maiden, which by itself does not afford an argument of much value, though it is not without its significance in conjunction with the facts recited.¹

The Tunguz women are not very scrupulous about keeping conjugal fidelity. They are almost always alone in the house, for the men are away hunting or looking after their cattle; "and how can they avoid the unexpected visits of wandering hunters who come and cook at their hearths, and who from politeness invite them to take a share of the fortune of the chase? Then as neither the men nor the women pride themselves much on delicacy, the rest easily comes about." If a husband becomes aware of too frequent visits

¹ Bogoras, *Amer. Anthr.* N. S. iii. 102, 104. *Id. Jesup Exped.* vii. 400, 455. I am not sure whether I am right in concluding that all the following Siberian and Aleutian tribes are patrilineal.

of this kind, he gives up the hospitable wife to her gallant, and contents himself with another from the family of the latter. This sort of truck is called *Danira*, and it is not uncommon. Divorce for other reasons is very easy. If two married persons cannot live together in peace they separate.¹ The northern Tunguz, however, are said to consider the marriage-tie indissoluble. But as they allow a plurality of wives they make no difficulty about resigning one of them for the time to any Russian adventurer who may visit the tundras in the summer and from whom they expect a share of the proceeds of his hunting excursion in return.²

The Kamtchadal women make parade of their lovers and give themselves freely to strangers. "A widow cannot find another husband unless her sins have been previously taken away by the highest degree of familiarity granted to any one who wishes to render her this service; and as the natives imagine that this expiation might cause the expiator to die like the former husband the poor women would remain widows without the assistance of the Russian soldiers, who are not afraid of exposing themselves to a danger so equivocal." Apparently the first man who has intercourse with a widow runs the risk of vengeance by the deceased husband. This posthumous jealousy is perhaps a continuation of that entertained in life. Yet if so, it must be because the intercourse is without leave of the deceased, and without the possibility of a *quid pro quo* to him such as is obtained by an exchange of wives between men still living. "There is no excess of libertinage," we are told with emphasis,

¹ Georgi, 47.

² Erman, ii. 138.

“which is not practised among the Kamtchadals. They pay not the least attention to the degrees of relationship,” except that of parent and child.¹ The hospitable rite so common among peoples in the lower culture of offering a temporary consort to a guest is practised by the Aleutian Islanders. If we may believe Georgi marriage is merely a provisional cohabitation in which the partner is often changed. The women are as much free and mistresses of themselves as the men. A wife deserted or exchanged sometimes returns more than once to her first husband. “These islanders in the married state are above jealousy and ignore the rights of an exclusive and reciprocal property between the spouses. The men leave their wives in entire liberty, and the latter do as much for their husbands.” Degrees of kinship are ignored; they only marry “to find subsistence with less trouble and to fulfil the end of nature.”²

Returning to the mainland, the great desire of the Buryats of Southern Siberia is for children. If one wife be unfruitful a second and a third are married, and so on. In default of children of their own they adopt strangers. Nor is this all. Partly to make sure of children, partly to have a woman in the house to fulfil womanly duties, they marry their sons at a very tender age to grown-up women. “I have often,” says Melnikov, “met a youth of fifteen or sixteen who in answer to my inquiry whether he had been long married would answer that the knot had been tied three or four years before. In the *wedomstwa* of Unga in the department of Balagan I once saw a Buryat of sixteen who had been married seven years

¹ Georgi, 75, 89, 90.

² *Id.* 116, 129, 130. Cf. 128.

before, 'that he might beget the more children,' as his neighbours told me. In fact he had four children; and the eldest son was seven years old. In the *wedomstwa* of Uleyi in the same department I saw a strong woman of twenty carrying a boy in her arms. I was surprised to be told that this woman and the boy in her arms were husband and wife. The Buryats said that formerly still droller marriages took place, in which the wives had to hold their husbands in their arms while they were milking the cows." We have seen how similar social arrangements result among the Reddies and other tribes of Southern India. Whether the practice is the same among the Buryats does not distinctly appear. It is not necessary. The author whom I have just quoted goes on to illustrate their dissolute manners by saying: "The girl among the Buryats becomes a complete wife before the official union. This fact is known to every one, and nobody complains of her or despises her on that account. If before the official union she has had a child she is married all the more willingly, for her aptitude for continuing the race is put beyond doubt. Unrestrained sexual intercourse may be observed, especially at the Buryat festivals where young people of both sexes assemble. The gatherings usually take place late in the evening and may justly be called nights of love. Bonfires are lighted in the neighbourhood of the villages, around which men and women perform their monotonous dance. From time to time pairs of dancers fall out and disappear into the darkness. Before long they come back and again take part in the dances, only to disappear afresh in a little while. But it is not always the same pairs who now retire, for the

partners have changed. Whoever lives among the Buryats has often the opportunity of seeing and hearing what happens at a wedding when men and women are excited by drink.”¹ In Chinese Turkestan the conjugal bond is extremely fragile. For the slightest reason and even without any reason at all the wife collects her belongings and returns to her parents ; and on the other hand there is nothing to protect her from her husband’s caprices. Sometimes she does not wait for a formal divorce in order to marry again. A woman of thirty who has not already had several husbands is therefore an exception. No respectable man who has to make a journey will spend a few days in a distant place without entering into a new and legitimate marriage. Yet all these facilities given by the law do not prevent either adultery or prostitution. This laxity of morals is of ancient date : it was noted as existing in the early centuries of our era.²

Among the tribes of the Caucasus pagan Cheremiss boys and girls enjoy sexual intercourse without reproof. Neither religious belief nor the moral code opposes the freedom of relations between the sexes. The statement is express that reluctance on the part of the girls exposes them to forcible violation. Like the Buryats, the Cheremiss marry their sons when they have hardly emerged from infancy, and fulfil the part of husbands to their daughters-in-law. The concubinage of several brothers with one woman is also not unknown, nor are traces that it was once usual wanting either in language or custom.³ The Mordvin customs are similar.

¹ *Int. Arch.* xii. 202, 203 ; *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxxi. Verhandl, 441.

² *L'Année Soc.* iii. 374, citing Grenard, *Le Turkestan et le Tibet.*

³ Smirnov, i. 117, 115.

Mordvin girls from the age of fourteen have sexual relations with the boys of the village, though they hardly marry before twenty or twenty-five. Kinship is no obstacle to their amours. Intercourse between brothers and sisters is not unknown; between remoter kindred is frequent. If a girl become pregnant nobody is shocked; legitimate or not, a child is always welcomed as an addition to the family. The marriage of mature women to boys with consequences like those among the Cheremiss and the Buryats has not yet been wholly put down. Apart from that, a Mordvin husband is not too exacting about his wife's fidelity. He is frequently compelled to be absent from home on military service or public works, and his wife seems to console herself very well in his absence.¹ With Votyak girls chastity is no virtue, and the want of chastity no vice. If they happen to have given birth to a child a much higher bride-price is demanded for them and their prospects of winning a rich husband are increased. But they are said, having sown their wild oats, to become faithful and affectionate wives. These qualities admit of obedience to the husband when he relinquishes the conjugal bed and spouse to a guest whom it is desired to honour.² Among the Ossetes the father purchases a wife for his infant son and has conjugal relations with her. Formerly, if a man for any reason preferred not to cohabit with any of his wives he could look out for some one to take his place—at all events, with a secondary if not with the principal wife. The levirate is observed; and where

¹ Smirnov, i. 337, 348.

² Featherman, *Tur.* 530; Post, *Studien*, 345, citing Kohler, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* v. 306.

a husband dying left neither brother nor son the widow was entitled to take any lover she chose. In all these cases alike the issue reckons as that of the legitimate husband.¹ The testimony to the licentiousness of the Circassian women and to the indomitable complaisance of their husbands is overwhelming. Of the Chechen we are told that the women are rarely faithful to their husbands. The Pshavs are in the habit of celebrating yearly a festival in honour of Lasha, the legendary son of Queen Tamara. This hero appears in the Pshav imagination in a very mixed character: sometimes as Saint George, sometimes as the representative of a cult analogous to that of Bacchus. His saturnalian festival is signalised by sexual licence.²

The Russian peasants themselves, frequently herded together, partly from ancient custom and partly from economic causes, under patriarchal rule in what is known as a Joint Family, attach but too little importance to the sexual relations supposed to be safeguarded by their Church. A sort of promiscuity results, unhealthy for body and mind. The domestic autocracy is itself a danger to the chastity if not to the integrity of the family. The house-father, like the noble over the female serfs on his domain, sometimes arrogated to himself a sort of *droit de seigneur* over the women under his authority. Officially entitled the Old One, he, thanks to the moujik's habit of early marriage, is often hardly forty when his sons bring home their brides, and it is a common thing for him

¹ Kovalevsky, *L'Anthrop.* iv. 274.

² *Ibid.* 266, 270, 273, 275; Löbel, 70; Darinsky, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 175 sqq. See further as to the sexual customs of these and other non-Slavonic peoples in Russian territory, *Globus*, xc. 188.

to levy on his daughters-in-law a tribute which the youth or the state of dependence of his sons prevents them from disputing. Writers of credit assure us that it is by no means rare to see the domestic hearth thus polluted by the authority which ought to maintain its purity.¹ Among the Southern Slavs the same practice subsists, and there if not also in Russia boys are married when mere children.²

Such a condition of family life must in any case be a survival of the practices of centuries gone by. A distinguished Russian jurist is of opinion that the sexual immorality of the Russian peasant has no other cause than the survival of numerous vestiges of the early forms of marriage. There is little doubt that among the ancient Slavs kinship was reckoned through the mother only. It was often accompanied by a considerable amount of sexual freedom. If we may believe the evidence of Nestor, probably a Russian monk of the eleventh century, the Drevlians, a Slavonic tribe, "lived like beasts; they killed one another; they fed on things unclean; no marriage took place amongst them, but they captured young girls on the banks of rivers." The words "no marriage took place amongst them" may of course mean that no open formal marriage rite was performed, but the girl captured was simply taken to the captor's home. It probably implies much more. It probably implies that other characteristics of a marriage according to the notions of a Christian monk were wanting. Among the characteristics in question

¹ Kovalevsky, 64, quoting and adopting the words of Anatole Leroy Beaulieu, *L'Empire des Tzars et les Russes*, 488.

² *L'Année Soc.* x. 441, citing Krauss.

permanence and fidelity would be prominent in his mind. A similar expression occurs in his account of three other tribes, the Radimich, the Viatich and the Sever. They dwelt "in forests like other wild animals; they ate everything unclean; and shameful things occurred amongst them between fathers and daughters-in-law"—very much as between the moujik of to-day and his daughters-in-law. Nestor goes on: "Marriages were unknown to them, but games were held in the outskirts of villages; they met at these games for dancing and every kind of diabolic amusement; and there they captured their wives, each man the one he had covenanted with. They generally had two or three wives." The capture here is preceded by an agreement between the bridegroom and the lady of his choice. The festival described is the public and formal recognition of unions which the writer in spite of himself admits as marriage of a kind; though they did not exclude infidelities of which he mentions a specimen in the relations between a father-in-law and his daughter-in-law. A writer of the same century, Cosmas of Prague, says of the old Bohemians or Czechs: "*They practised communal marriage (connubia erant illis communia)*; for like beasts they contract every night a fresh marriage, and with the rising morn they break the iron bonds of love." The anonymous biographer of Saint Adalbert, Bishop of Prague towards the end of tenth century, ascribes the hostility which drove the saint from his diocese to his attempts to put down the shameful promiscuity of the Bohemian people. He testifies moreover to the existence of certain yearly festivals at which great licence prevailed.

A Russian monk, Pamphil, in the sixteenth century reports that in the state of Novgorod similar festivals were held on the banks of rivers, resembling in that particular, as Professor Kovalevsky points out, the annual festivals mentioned by Nestor. "Not later," the professor says, "than the beginning of the sixteenth century they were complained of by the clergy of the State of Pscov. It was at that time that Pamphil drew up his letter to the Governor of the State, admonishing him to put an end to these annual gatherings, since their only result was the corruption of the young women and girls. According to the author just cited the meetings took place as a rule the day before the festival of St. John the Baptist, which in pagan times was that of a divinity known by the name of Jarilo, corresponding to the Priapus of the Greeks. Half a century later the new ecclesiastical code compiled by an assembly of divines convened in Moscow by the Czar Ivan the Terrible, took effectual measures for abolishing every vestige of paganism, amongst them the yearly festivals held on Christmas Day, on the day of the Baptism of our Lord, and on St. John the Baptist, commonly called Midsummer Day. A general feature of all these festivals, according to the code, was the prevalence of the promiscuous intercourse of the sexes." That the code did not succeed in abolishing these periodical meetings is clear, since they are still held from time to time, though perhaps not so regularly. But it does seem to have been effective in purifying them from most of the sexual corruption. This at all events is indicated by Professor Kovalevsky's own experience of such midsummer meetings. But documents pre-

served in the archives of some of the provincial ecclesiastical councils, particularly in the Government of Kharkov, disclose similar licentiousness at other evening assemblies of the peasants. These assemblies are known in Great Russia as *Posidelki* and in Little Russia as *Vechernitzi*. The clergy made war upon them. More than once they induced the authorities to dissolve the assemblies by force. It is little wonder that the priests were often wounded and obliged to seek refuge in the houses of the village elders from the stones with which they were pelted.¹

The history of the Russian gatherings on Midsummer Eve and other festival occasions suggests that formerly all over Europe such assemblies were of the same licentious character. Doubtless they were. The games still played by youths and maidens at these times, though now for the most part innocent, irresistibly lead to the conclusion that actual sexual intercourse took place in days of less developed civilisation.² And if married women frequented the meetings they must have been included in the sports and in what the Russian monk stigmatises as the "diabolical amusements." More than this it is impossible to say in the present state of our evidence, which may be found in the pages of Mannhardt Frazer and other writers, but the full consideration of which would lead us too far away from our main subject to be entered upon here.

¹ Kovalevsky, 6 *sqq.*

² For example, the game played in various villages of the Luneburg district, in which a girl is allotted to every youth (*Zeits. des Vereins*, vi. 363). Compare the Saturnalia of ancient Rome, and the Holi festival in Northern India, where no act of intercourse now occurs, but indecency of word and gesture is an essential part of the rite.

The redoubtable Masai of East Africa inhabit a district now partly comprised in German partly in British territory. They are divided for purposes of internal organisation into "ages," each of these ages including the boys who were circumcised within a certain limit of time and the girls who were subjected to a corresponding operation during the same period. These operations are performed on batches of children at or about puberty, and are the occasion of a festival. A close bond unites all boys or girls of the same "age." After circumcision the boys enter the warrior-class, and are taught the profession of arms as it is (or used to be, before the intrusion of European rule) practised by the Masai. A man is counted as belonging to the warrior-class until about the twenty-eighth or thirtieth year of his age, and before he quits it he is not allowed to marry. The warriors live not in the villages occupied by the married men, but in separate warrior-kraals. Each of these kraals is inhabited by fifty to a hundred warriors with their mothers and some of their younger brothers. In addition there are perhaps twice as many young girls as warriors. These girls, who have not yet undergone the puberty ceremonies, sleep with the warriors, now with one and now with another, unless when a raid is in contemplation. Since it is a disgrace to a girl to bear a child before she has undergone the puberty ceremonies, pregnancy is as far as possible averted or abortion practised. Meanwhile it often happens that the girls are already in infancy betrothed. Betrothal makes no difference to their residence in the warrior-kraal; but if a betrothed girl became pregnant it would as a rule put an end to her engagement to marry. On emerging from

the warrior-class each man marries and settles down as an "old man." A man marries as many wives as he can afford to purchase. When the marriage takes place it frequently happens that one or two of the bridegroom's old companions in arms claim priority of intercourse with the bride. When this claim is made the bridegroom must concede it under penalty of dishonour; and in case he refuse he will have no right to complain if during the next few days some of his cattle are stolen. Divorce is a very rare occurrence; it is accompanied with some formality. If a divorced wife marry again her parents must repay her former husband the full bride-price which he paid. But he may decline to receive it; and in this event all her future children will belong to him. Nor if she run away from her husband and he decline to divorce her can she legally marry again, and any children she may have by another man will belong to her husband. As a rule however he takes the boys only. Adultery is not a ground for divorcing a wife: it is, in fact, an idea unknown to Masai ethics. Sexual intercourse is forbidden between persons belonging to different "ages." When it takes place, for example, between a man and a woman of his father's "age," he is cursed. But the curse may be removed by payment to the elders of two oxen (or one and a quantity of honey-wine) for a feast. On the other hand, a man having intercourse with his daughter or with a girl of her "age" is a more serious offender. The men of his "age" beat him, pull down his kraal and slaughter whichever of his cattle they want. But it is not an offence for a man to have intercourse with a woman of his own "age." If a husband beat his wife she

promptly seeks refuge with another man of his "age." Nor is she subject to any punishment for this escapade when she is returned to her husband; for the latter "fears that he will be cursed by the members of his 'age,'" which would entail a fine. A Masai on a visit to another kraal enters the hut of a man of his own "age." The host relinquishes his wife to him for the night and goes elsewhere: to refuse to perform this act of hospitality would be a disgrace; he would be cursed by his age-fellows. Moreover men sometimes make a temporary exchange of wives. Children borne by a woman while living with another man belong to her husband, though they may also call their actual begetter father.¹ Community of wives would thus appear to be almost complete between men of the same "age."

The Wakamba, neighbours of the Masai, are reported neither to expect nor to value chastity among women before marriage. "After all dances in which young men and girls unite promiscuous connection is indulged in and connived at by the parents of the latter. In the same way all married women have lovers, which is easily understandable when one bears in mind that nearly every man has two wives and the average number is three or four to each *mutumia* or elder. Rich men with eight or nine or even more

¹ Merker, 70, 334, 82, 44, 49, 50; Hollis, 261, 292, 312, 304, 287. The customs of the Wanderobbo are the same; but a wife finding herself pregnant after a temporary exchange of the kind above referred to returns to her husband. In any case the exchange lasts no longer than from six to twelve months (Merker, 222, 231, 232; cf. Johnston, *Uganda Prot.* ii. 824, 825). The customs of the Nandi are similar (Hobley, 38; Hollis, *Nandi*, 167, 77).

wives are in the habit of lending a member of their harem to a friend in cases where no children are born as a fruit of the marriage.¹ The offspring if any resulting from this are the property of the husband and are looked upon as his children."² But sexual relations unlicensed by the husband are regarded as adultery. When a husband catches his wife in the act at night—but not in the daytime—he may kill her paramour on the spot. In the same way a thief entering a kraal at night may be killed. Or the adulterer may be compelled to pay damages, or to take over the woman and refund her bride-price to the husband. A wife may be divorced for *persistent* adultery or for refusing to work; for a simple lapse of fidelity when caught she is said to be flogged.³ If a girl become pregnant before marriage her condition "is no bar to her marriage with another man, but rather a recommendation, since he is sure of at least one child from her."⁴

The people of Taveta, the rich and fertile plain at the foot of snow-capped Kilimanjaro, are like the Masai of mixed Hamitic and Bantu stock. They are organised in clans and in "ages" somewhat resembling the Masai institutions. A girl is usually bespoken as a child and the arrangement for her marriage is made with her father, but the formal betrothal is postponed. After undergoing the puberty rites she passes her

¹ Sir A. Hardinge (*Report on the East Africa Protectorate*, Parliamentary Paper, Africa No. 7, 1897, 21) says that if a man have any wives who for any reason have ceased to please him they are "permitted to cohabit with his poorer relations, but only within the family circle."

² H. R. Tate, *J. A. I.* xxxiv. 137.

³ Declé, 487.

⁴ Tate, *loc. cit.*

nights in the *maniata*, "an isolated spot in the woods on which has been erected a sort of kraal, consisting of two or three dozen huts about eighteen feet long, three feet broad and three feet high, resembling dog-kennels. These huts are only furnished with a single bed of dried grass, and have no doors. Here the Taveta youth spend their time when the work for the day is finished. All children born in this kraal are put to death at birth." At the age of fifteen or sixteen a girl is formally betrothed. The ceremonies of betrothal differ according to the clan of the husband. It is only necessary to refer here to those of the Ndighiri clan. A Mndighiri bridegroom is required to capture his bride by force and hand her over to four stalwart relations who carry her struggling to her suitor's dwelling. There it is averred they have all four a right of intercourse with her. The actual marriage follows at a later date. A man can obtain a separation from his wife with the consent of the chief and elders if she refuse to work or cause trouble by stealing from a neighbour, or some offence of that kind, but not for adultery. Adultery is only punishable when the man who commits it is not of the same "age" as the husband of the woman. Even if he were to rape the wife of a comrade of his own "age" he could at most be fined one goat for assault. A man lends his wives to a comrade of his own "age;" and they court their lovers under his very eyes. Sexual intercourse with an unmarried girl is punished by a fine, but only when the man belongs to a different "age" from that of the girl.¹

¹ Hollis, *Journ. Afr. Soc.* i. 110, 111, 117, 124; Johnston, *Kilimanjaro*, 430, 433. At Moschi a few miles off among a related

Adultery is punished among the Baganda by whipping the male offender. "On no account whatever can a woman be subjected to corporal punishment. A wife is not discarded by her husband on account of faithlessness. Even if she contracts disease from promiscuous connection, and temporarily leaves her husband's house, she is taken back when she wishes to return, and the husband even brings the influence of her relatives to bear on her with the object of inducing her to return."¹ Among the Madi and the Shuli on the Upper Nile the unmarried girls sleep in huts raised above the ground like granaries. There the boys

people fraternal polyandry exists. Mrs. French-Sheldon (*J. A. I.* xxi. 365), writing before the British occupation, reports that every Taveta warrior had a girl living with him; the girls were selected for this purpose on attaining puberty and before marriage. The life they thus led did not prejudice their subsequent marriage, nor was the warrior with whom such a girl might happen to live compelled or expected to marry her. She describes the ceremony of capture of the bride as if it were that of marriage, but it seems to be betrothal only; and in this form it is confined to one clan. The Wataita, to whom Sir Harry Johnston assigns it, are divided from the rest of the Wataveta by the river Lumi, and partly (or chiefly perhaps) belong to the Ndighiri clan (*Journ. Afr. Soc.* i. 100, 98). In Teita the host offers his own wives to his guest (*Post, Afr. Jur.* i. 472, citing Krapf).

¹ Johnston, *Uganda*, ii. 553. The king was much stricter before British rule as regarded his own wives. The offending wife and her paramour were literally "chopped up alive together." Adultery is now punished with fines in the native courts. By a custom common among the Bantu north of the Zambezi one of the royal princesses who was called *Lubuga* (king-sister) had royal precedence. She was never officially married, but she was allowed to take as many men as she liked: all Uganda was said to be her husband. The dowager queen in like manner had complete sexual freedom (Roscoe, *J. A. I.* xxxi. 122). But neither of these women was allowed to have children; hence they practised abortion (*Id.* xxxii. 36, 67).

who have reached maturity have free access to them. If a girl become pregnant her lover is bound to marry her, paying the customary bride-price. This freedom is not among the Shuli confined to unmarried girls; and husbands are not very sensitive about the vagaries of their consorts.¹ A similar report is made concerning the adjoining tribe of the Latuka. Among them women and girls are said to be much more numerous than men, and it is suggested that this is the reason why the women are not renowned for chastity, and why the men are so lenient towards their wives.²

The marriage custom of the Nasamonians of antiquity, is said to be still in use by the modern Abyssinians.³ The Beni Amer are Mohammedans. Among them, as we already know, virginity is assured until marriage. Wives, however, think everything permitted to them; no conception can be formed of their levity, the motive of which is said to be low greed.⁴ The people of Kordofan have likewise accepted the Prophet of Mecca, but Islam has not improved their sexual morality. Girls have unbounded licence, surrendering themselves readily even to strangers: when they have given proof of their fertility they are more likely to marry. Nor, it is well understood, do married women wholly resign their freedom. Their husbands of course know how to compensate themselves. Many a man beyond the wives whom the Koran allows him has others elsewhere. He marries and after a few days' sojourn with his bride takes a journey that may extend over months to

¹ Emin Pasha, 103, 108, 271.

² *Id.* 225.

³ McLennan, *Studies*, i. 173, citing Mansfield Parkyns, *Life in Abyssinia*, ii. 51 sqq.

⁴ Munzinger, 326.

another part of the country or to Dar-Fur. In the course of his travels he marries, if possible, several more wives. The grass-widows he leaves behind him swarm in all the villages, making themselves as comfortable as they can, and indemnifying themselves for their husbands' neglect by receiving especially strangers and travellers with open arms.¹ In the Kingdom of Merine between Bondu and Wulli when a married man went on a journey his nearest neighbour took possession of his wife and supplied her husband's place until the latter returned. This custom was mutually observed and every one submitted to it.²

More than one traveller testifies to the excessive freedom of the Monbuttu women. "It is not considered improper," says Emin Pasha, "for a grown-up girl, though a prince's daughter, to visit her lover at nights, even should he be a servant. Should lovers wish to marry, the girl's father is informed of the fact, and he makes a feeble attempt to obtain payment for the bride. If the young man is rich, the price settled upon is immediately paid; if he is poor, the claim is not pressed. As a rule the women appear to have considerable freedom in their amatory proceedings, but open prostitution is rarely seen. It is possible, however, that in the interior of the country, at a distance from the stations, other customs may be in vogue."³ Schweinfurth's experience twelve or fifteen years earlier indicates that this conjecture is hardly in

¹ Frobenius, 100. No further away from the civilisation, such as it was, of his day than Assuan, Benjamin of Tudela accuses the inhabitants of going naked and indulging in absolute promiscuity. These were not Negroes (*Early Trav.* 117).

² Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 472, citing Rubault.

³ Emin Pasha, 208.

accordance with the facts. The daily witness of the Nubians who were with him "only too plainly testified that fidelity to the obligations of marriage was little known. Not a few of the women were openly obscene. Their general demeanour surprised me very much when I considered the comparative advance of their race in the arts of civilisation. Their immodesty far surpassed anything that I had observed in the very lowest of the Negro tribes." Towards their husbands they exhibited "the highest degree of independence. The position in the household occupied by the men was illustrated by the reply which would be made if they were solicited to sell anything as a curiosity: 'Oh, ask my wife; it is hers.'¹ The polygyny, which is practised on a large scale, does not seem to have reduced these women to subjection. "Wives are cheap and may be obtained even for nothing." They are very prolific. "Sterility is a disgrace, and sometimes results in the wife being returned to her father. Usually, however, the husband prefers to add to his wives in the hope of obtaining children. . . . Cases of *flagrant* adultery are brought under the notice of the chief, who confiscates the property of the adulterer and gives two-thirds of it to the woman's father and one-third to the injured man." The father is required to provide the husband with another wife, usually a sister of the guilty woman.² A more recent writer speaks more strongly still, going so far as to say that "morality is practically non-existent among the Mang-bettou." He ascribes this state of things to the large number of wives monopolised by the chiefs,

¹ Schweinfurth, ii. 91.

² Emin Pasha, 208, 209. The italics are mine.

“sometimes up to five hundred,” so that “there are no women left for the young men of the village to marry.”¹ This, however, hardly agrees with the accounts of Emin and Schweinfurth, and cannot apply universally. The real reason must lie deeper.

Not very different is the report of the Azandi or Niam-niams, neighbours of the Monbuttu. They practise polygyny. All women are said to be in theory the property of the chiefs. “The woman’s feelings do not appear to be consulted very much in matters matrimonial; but if she is not happy in her conjugal life she takes the law into her own hands, which is usually by eloping with some spouseless man. . . . Neither the men nor the women are particularly faithful to one another, and absence from one another for more than five or six days puts a great strain on their powers of self-control.” A man who had intercourse with a chief’s wife would be punished severely, by maiming or disfigurement. But in the case of ordinary people “a present of cloth or beads or spears invariably acts as a salve on the outraged feelings of the husband.” Syphilis is very common.² We have in a previous chapter considered the institutions of the Dinkas.³

Among the Wadjagga marriage is easily dissolved. A man will always send his wife away for sterility; and her father must then repay the bride-price. It is however the woman who usually separates from her husband and betakes herself to another, and that for the most trifling causes. There are women who have

¹ Capt. Guy Burrows, *J. A. I.* xxviii. 46.

² Melland, *Journ. Afr. Soc.* iii. 240, 242.

³ *Supra*, vol. i. p. 313.

had as many as ten husbands. The aid of the chief in such cases can be invoked by either party. The prevailing polygyny causes a still greater sexual laxity among the women than among the men. Many husbands, even men of wealth and rank, regard their wives' proceedings with so much indifference that they make no objection to their adultery. Others, when a lover is caught in the act, only make use of their rights to extort the payment of a few goats. In fact it happens again and again that the husband eggs his wife on, in order to pluck the crow afterwards. The whole sphere of matrimonial causes is so full of baseness and fraud that the chief often gives no damages to either side, being unable to repress his disgust and characterising the affair as *kindo kyesi*, an abominable thing. Husbands, whose moral feeling is strong enough, a German missionary tells us, simply to repudiate an adulterous wife and let her go to her paramour without suing for damages are an exception.¹ Nor is polygyny any better safeguard of sexual morality among the Ngoni on the west of Lake Nyassa. "Men with several wives and many of the wives of polygamists have assignations with members of other families. I have been told," says a missionary, "by serious old men that such is the state of family life in the villages that any man could raise a case against his neighbour at any time, and that is the reason why friendliness appears so marked among them—each has to bow to the other in fear of offending him and leading to revelations which would rob him of his all."² Sir Harry Johnston's testimony to the same effect is of more general application

¹ Gutmann, *Globus*, xcii. 31, 32.

² Elmslie, 59.

“Adultery,” he says, “is extremely common, and in very few parts of British Central Africa is looked upon as a very serious matter, as a wrong which cannot be compensated by a small payment. The natives regard it with the same amount of emotion as they would the stealing of their fowls or corn in lieu of buying them, even though the price charged for them is very small.”¹

The Swahili of the east coast profess Islam, but they have little of it beside the name and a few ritual observances. Unmarried girls are free to all men. After marriage a man is required to maintain his wife by giving her rations. But “many women receive no more than five *pishi* of corn for ten days’ allowance. This being very little they give themselves up to harlotry for maintenance.”² Chastity is unknown. “Upon the coast, when an adulterer is openly detected, he is fined according to the husband’s rank; mostly however such peccadilloes are little noticed.”³ In the Portuguese province of Sena on the lower Zambesi it is not common for virginity to be preserved beyond the age of twelve. After marriage adultery is common. On discovery the husband may repudiate his wife and receive from her paramour the amount paid for her on marriage, together with a *solatium*

¹ Johnston, *Brit. Cent. Afr.* 412. Between the sentences quoted are others which appear to be a note interpolated by accident in the text. They describe the jealousy of the natives with regard to Europeans. Other observations follow, ascribing to the native women in general fidelity to the marriage-tie while it lasts. I find a difficulty in reconciling these with the emphatic words I have quoted.

² Krapf, *Suahili Dict.* svv. *Munda*, *Posho*.

³ Burton, *Zanzibar*, i. 419.

called *upombo*. The adulterine offspring belongs to the begetter on payment of the *upombo*—otherwise I infer to the husband. Cases are not unknown in which, for the sake of getting the *upombo*, the husband has induced his wife to commit adultery.¹

Among the peoples of the Marotse Kingdom in Northern Rhodesia marriage, it is said, hardly exists. A man and woman unite one day and live together as long as they like and separate even more easily than they united. A Swiss Protestant missionary declares the social condition to be the ideal of certain reformers in Europe—free love. It would be difficult to find a man of forty who still retained his first wife. There is no ceremony; the pair enter into no definite engagement. Once the chief authorises the man to marry he is bound to make a few presents to his intended wife, and then they settle down together without the slightest fuss. Even for the children of chiefs there is no ceremony: an ox is killed, or perhaps more than one, for the purpose of a rejoicing; but it is not until the marriage is over. The husband of the king's daughter is only formally brought to the *khotta* and officially recognised the day after the marriage has in fact taken place. Family life, as we understand it, has no existence.²

Testimony to the licentiousness of the various branches of the Bartu race dwelling south of the Zambesi is unanimous and emphatic from the earliest writers to the present time. Jakob Francken, who visited Delagoa Bay in the sixth decade of the eighteenth century, says that the Kaffir girls of eleven

¹ M. M. Lopes, *Journ. Afr. Soc.* vi. 364, 356, 382.

² Béguin, 113; *Bull. Soc. Neuchât. de Géog.* xi. 99.

and twelve years old are usually all lovers and are reckoned marriageable; jealousy has no place among the Kaffirs, for the mother offers herself and her daughter in the presence of her husband, and sometimes the husband offers his wife; but the Tembe are the most disorderly of all, for as soon as one sets foot in the country the creatures offer themselves, living in this respect like the beasts.¹

Alberti, who was on military service in Cape Colony at the beginning of the last century, reports somewhat more favourably of the morals of married women among the most southerly tribes, with which alone he came into contact. But the unmarried girls and widows were quite free in their relations with men. It was a token of hospitality to offer to a guest a girl as bedfellow; and if the offer were not made he easily found one for himself.² According to the testimony of other writers the bedfellow was not by any means necessarily an unmarried girl, but often among both Basuto and Kaffirs a wife of the host.³

Fortunately we possess, in the writings of a Swiss Protestant missionary, an account of the population about Delagoa Bay, which is the most complete and

¹ *Rec. S. E. Afr.* vi. 496, 498.

² Alberti, 124, 162.

³ Endemann, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* vi. 33; Nauhaus, *Ibid.* xiv. *Verh.* 210. The latter states in comprehensive terms the Kaffir law of adultery thus: A married man is *never* an adulterer as regards his own wife. A wife is only guilty if she yield herself to another man *against the will of her husband*. A man is only guilty who has intercourse with a married woman *without the permission of her husband*. A girl is only guilty who has not been successful in secretly applying the means of abortion constantly in use. A man is only guilty who has ravished a girl and been by her denounced to her father; but this very seldom happens.

careful monograph ever published on any Bantu people. In spite of the wars and devastations which have taken place in South Africa, in spite of the wholesale slaughter repeatedly committed both by Bantu and Europeans, the Thonga tribes which now occupy that part of South Africa are substantially the same as those of Francken's day. It is understood, M. Junod declares, that the young people have the right to make love as much as they like and to go as far as they will. The only restrictions are that a young man is to avoid the married women, and that an unmarried girl is not to become a mother. Within these limits they are free to indulge their passions, and anybody who is continent is more laughed at than admired. The girls are even more abandoned than the boys. The law however is severe on adultery. The adulterer is condemned to repay the bride-price paid by the husband, because he has appropriated something (namely, the wife) belonging to the latter. But the wife is no more punished than a cow stolen by a robber, unless she be caught in the act, when the husband may give himself the pleasure of administering a good thrashing. The question of purity, of chastity, does not enter into the matter; and so indifferent are the women to their husband's morals that they will play the go-between for them in their overtures to other girls.¹ Among the relics of uterine descent found among the Baronga are the close relations existing between the maternal uncle and his nephew.

¹ Junod, *Les Baronga*, 29, 32, 299, 490, 65, 66. As to marriage customs, 32, 490 (*cf.* Endemann on the Bechuana marriage customs and Grützner on those of the Basuto of the Transvaal cited in a note below).

It would be irrelevant here to enumerate their correlative rights and duties. One, however, of such rights is that of the nephew in certain contingencies to inherit his uncle's widows. This right he is accustomed to anticipate whenever he chooses. He calls them wives and they call him husband. He is entitled to amuse himself with any of them as a betrothed lover. When he visits his uncle he deposits his sleeping-mat in the hut of the wife he prefers, and stays with her while he remains at the kraal.¹ Such conduct as this does not come within the Ronga definition of adultery. We can hardly go wrong in believing, though M. Junod is silent on the point, that the hospitality which lends a wife to any other guest is equally outside it. If so, Francken's description is hardly exaggerated. I have already exposed at sufficient length the condition of sexual morality among the Basuto and some of their neighbours; ² if anything, these tribes are more licentious than the Baronga. A missionary of great experience, writing of the Kaffir tribes of the south as well as the Basuto, but without specifying more closely, says: "Adultery is common, and frequently a woman allures with the knowledge of her husband, as to him

¹ Junod, 77. The term *malume*, maternal uncle, includes a much wider circle of relatives than we are accustomed to associate with it. Among the Mashuna, when an old man has several young wives, a son or younger brother (to whom they would fall after his death) frequently anticipates that event by taking and using them in his lifetime. But this conduct is not viewed favourably by the husband (*S. A. Native Affairs Com.* iv. 80). On the other hand, compare stories of the matrilineal Haidas of Queen Charlotte Islands in which the maternal uncle expressly puts his wife at his nephew's disposal (*Jesup Exped.* x. 604, 746).

² *Supra* vol. i. p. 316. Cf. Endemann, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* vi. 39; Grütznér, *Id.* x. 82; H. E. Mabile, *Journ. Afr. Soc.* v. 245, 365; Fritsch, 95.

belongs the fine inflicted by the chief on conviction." According to the same writer a paramour is "a recognised institution among the younger wives of old men;" and there are cases of temporary exchange of wives. The latter are not common; they seem to correspond to the practice already noted among the Masai, and to be occasioned by "sterility on the part of one or both wives, it being found that occasionally an exchange results in children being born." Any such offspring belong by law to the lawful husband.¹ Further north, among the Matabele, a chaste woman was almost unknown in the old days. "Even the king's wives very often misbehaved themselves. When they were found out of course they were killed; but they took very good care not to be found out if it was possible."²

General licence on the occasion of puberty ceremonies is found among many of these tribes. The boys and girls who have passed through the ceremonies indulge in it freely. Sexual intercourse is, indeed, often compulsory.³ Nor is it confined to the newly initiated. In the Zoutpansberg District of the Transvaal large assemblies are held by the Bavenda on these occasions. All work is suspended; singing dancing drilling and so forth occupy the people; no man "is allowed intercourse with his own wife, yet

¹ Rev. J. Macdonald, *J. A. I.* xix. 270, 273, 272; *Cape Native Laws Com.* Evidence, 106; *S. A. Native Affairs Com.* ii. 77, 173, 706, 1242. Nauhaus, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xiv. Verhandl. 209, 210.

² *S. A. Native Affairs Com.* iv. 171.

³ *Cape Native Laws Com.* Evidence, 81, 212, 218, 273; App. 20, 408; Campbell, *Trav.* 514; Hewat, 109, 111; Callaway, *Tales*, 255; Fritsch, 109, 111; Kidd, 208 *sqq.* Cf. the Yao custom, *supra*, p. 123. Hewat, 107, explains why conception follows intercourse more rarely than might be expected.

morals are allowed to become very lax; prostitution is freely indulged in, and adultery is not viewed with any sense of heinousness on account of the surroundings." The practices of the Basuto of the same district are similar: candidates and visitors alike are encouraged in eating drinking and licentiousness.¹ Among the Kaffirs of the south marriages are similar occasions of licence.²

A curious purification ceremony is performed by the Bechuana in the month of January. The exact day is fixed by the chief and a gathering of all the adult males is held in the great kraal of the tribe. The leaves of a species of gourd are crushed in the hand and the big toes and navel are anointed with the juice. Every man then goes home to his own kraal and the ceremony is there repeated, the head of the family smearing every member with the juice. Some more leaves are pounded, mixed with milk in a wooden dish and the dogs are called to drink it. That night every man ritually sleeps with his chief wife. If the wife however have been guilty of infidelity during the year she must first confess it to her husband, and must be purified. The purification, if necessary, is performed on the following morning. The husband's father presides at the ceremony, which is performed by a witch-doctor. It consists in fumigating the woman and her husband with the smoke of a bean-plant placed in a pot between the woman's knees as she sits on the ground. Her husband sits opposite her with her knees between his and a kaross of ox-

¹ Wheelwright, *J. A. I.* xxxv. 254, 255; Gottschling, *Ibid.* 372; *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxviii. Verhandl. 364.

² *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xiv. Verhandl. 209.

skin is thrown over them both. Husband and wife then make each a slight perpendicular cut with a razor under the navel of the other. With the blood which follows each mixes a little medicine and rubs it into the cut in the other's abdomen. The purification is then complete and the ritual coition may be proceeded with. But if the husband be away from home and unable to return for the ceremony, the wife is entitled to proceed to the ritual coition with some other man. When the husband returns he has to undergo the purification; but even after that he cannot have sexual intercourse with her until the next year's ceremony. If, on the other hand, she have ventured to postpone the ritual coition until her husband's return it is then performed without the purification ceremony. The husband appears to have no right to complain of his wife's performance of ritual coition, in his absence, with another man: it is he, not she, who is thereby placed under a ban and until he is purified by fumigation and the rest of it, his very shadow would be fatal to her or to his children.¹ So far as the meaning of this ceremony can be read, it seems to be a yearly renewal of sexual relations—of marriage—between husband and wife; indeed it is wider than that, it is a yearly renewal of sexual life. Unless the full ceremony be performed the party omitting it, though involuntarily, is subject to the direst supernatural penalties. Attention may be specially drawn to the fact that not only is the wife entitled to perform it in her husband's absence with another man, but that she positively incurs a risk for her husband's sake in postponing it until his return. Moreover no penalty is incurred

¹ Rev. W. C. Willoughby, *J. A. I.* xxxv. 311.

by the infidelities she may confess prior to the performance: they are purged by the subsequent purification ceremony.

The information which we possess in reference to the Hottentots is of a contradictory character. On the one hand Kolben, who visited the Cape of Good Hope at the beginning of the eighteenth century and made a personal study of the Hottentot customs, denies with great emphasis their indifference to the chastity of married women. He asserts that they punished adultery with death, and that a woman who was divorced from her husband by the judgment of the men of the kraal could not marry again during her husband's life.¹ On the other hand, Sir James Alexander, recording his journey about a hundred and twenty years later through Great Namaqualand and confirming Kolben's statements in some other particulars, avers that chastity is of small account among the Namaquas. "The chiefs even, when they go to the sea, lend their wives to the white men for cotton handkerchiefs or brandy; and if a husband has been out hunting and on his return finds his place occupied he sits down at the door of his hut and the paramour handing him out a bit of tobacco the injured man contentedly smokes it till the other chooses to retire. This surely," observes the traveller with surprise, "is the acme of complaisance."² It is generally recognised that Kolben's account of the Hottentots errs, if at all, on the side of leniency. He gives no definition of adultery. His description of their wooing, though antenuptial intercourse is not asserted, leads to the inference that it took place. And if a divorced woman

¹ Kolben, 157.

² Alexander, i. 196

might not marry again we may readily surmise that she did not refrain from the company of men, and that any children she may have borne in consequence would belong to her husband. With regard to Alexander's evidence the transaction with the white men would certainly not come within a Hottentot definition of adultery; nor doubtless would such transactions occur only with white men. Alexander himself reports that sometimes two chiefs would have four wives between them;¹ and an earlier traveller says it frequently happened that a woman married two husbands.² Alexander's other statement given above finds abundant confirmation. Among the Hottentots, as in other polygynic societies, the multiplication of wives leads inevitably to irregular connections the more or less open recognition of which is not uncommon. We are therefore not surprised to learn that in some tribes a woman frequently has "a real husband and a *locum tenens* or substitute," and that among the Korana every wife has a lover.³ Apart from this their dances were occasions of sensuality. The pot-dance of the Hottentots in Cape Colony lasted several days during which unbridled licence reigned, though it is alleged that children probably begotten during this period were all put to death. The nightly dances of the Korana are also described as distinguished by lasciviousness. Fritsch's verdict on the Colonial Hottentots, that they were certainly not remarkable for excessive chastity, is applicable to all.⁴

Among the Bushmen, as we saw in the last chapter, there is little difficulty in putting an end to the con-

¹ Alexander, i. 169.

² Thunberg, ii. 193.

³ *Id.* 42, 64; Stow, 96.

⁴ Fritsch, 328, 375, 329.

jugal relation. An experience related by Alexander throws further light on the Bushmen's attitude towards their women. At Great Fountain he had been annoyed by the Namaqua youth seeking the Bushmen women at night in the neighbourhood of his camp. Subsequently bivouacking near the Orange River, where also there were Bushmen, he warned the latter and suggested they should come and put themselves under his protection to prevent a repetition of the proceedings. "To my exceeding surprise," he says, "imbued as I was with notions of oriental jealousy, the Boschmans said: 'Take the women; the people may do with them as they please; what else is the use of them?' Seeing the Boschmans' feeling on this point (beasts could not have been worse) I now thought that the occurrences at the Great Fountain were not of so serious or disgraceful a nature as I had at first imagined they were."¹

A few of the Bantu tribes on the western side of the continent may be mentioned. Among the Bambala sexual morality in our sense of the word can scarcely be said to exist, and virginity is not considered of the slightest importance. Polyandry, indeed, as an institution does not exist; "but a childless man will secretly introduce his brother to his wife in order that he may have a child by her; such a proceeding is of course, a *secret de polichinelle*." Polygyny is common.² The Fans of French Congo "regard virtue very lightly. Before marriage a girl can do nearly as she pleases.

¹ Alexander, ii. 21.

² Torday and Joyce, *J. A. I.* xxxv. 410. The Bambala are in a transitional state between motherright and fatherright, (See *supra*, vol. i, pp. 276, 282.)

It is absolutely safe to state that it would be almost impossible to find a maiden in a Fang village over sixteen years of age. Adultery is common and one of the chief causes of 'women palavers.' Women rank first in value as goods for trade, next in value are goats, then guns and cloth." Wives are lent to guests.¹ A French traveller relates, in illustration of the absence of jealousy and the desire to make money out of their wives' favours, that a few days before he had seen a husband posted as sentinel at the entrance of his hut in order that no importunate man might disturb the passing amours of a native militia-man in the traveller's retinue with one of his wives.²

Among the Bakoko in the Cameroon a bride-price is paid. If before betrothal a girl be free of her favours the suitor disregards it with equanimity. A man frequently bespeaks a girl as soon as she is born and pays the bride-price by instalments until she arrives at a marriageable age. If after betrothal and before marriage the girl have sexual intercourse with another man the engagement is broken off, and the girl's family must repay the amount received. Divorce is easy, at least to the husband, but he rarely makes use of the privilege. A married woman is not sacred from her husband's brother and is not backward in reciprocating his advances. Any man who fancies his neighbour's wife can hire her from him for a cask of powder or its equivalent. The desire for the goods will conquer any reluctance the husband may feel. But sexual intercourse with a married woman without the husband's consent entails on both parties a severe thrashing

¹ A. L. Bennett, *Id.* xxix. 70, 79. Cf. Nassau, 6, 10, 370.
Roche, *Pahouins*, 95, 96.

by the husband, if discovered, though the seducer may escape if willing to pay compensation. No punishment follows the seduction of a maiden who is not betrothed to some one else ; nor is she dishonoured by it. If it come to the father's ears the lover pays a sum of money and the affair is settled. " In general the Bakoko consider their wives and daughters as a source of gain. The seducer is in their eyes only a human being who wants to cheat them of the money that is due to them."¹ Comparatively few brides among the Banaka and Bapuku are maidens. When a bridegroom finds his bride a maiden it is a subject of great rejoicing ; he congratulates her parents, telling them that he has found a pure wife and thanking them heartily for so valuable a benefit. When a man has agreed on the bride-price and has begun to pay it he is entitled to secret intercourse with his bride. Men lend their wives, and put them at the disposal of a guest. Otherwise a man is entitled to compensation for an infidelity on the part of his wife. A child belongs to his mother's husband whoever may have been the father : if begotten by other than the husband the actual father has no right to him.²

The Haussa Fulba wife is lent by her husband " for a consideration " to other men ; or he winks at her love-affairs in order to swoop down upon her lovers for compensation. But all her children are his ; they enhance his position in society, and he is proud of them. Even if he be absent for years from her and on returning find an increase in his family, he makes no fuss

¹ Eberhard von Schkopf, *Beiträge zur Kolonialpolitik*, iv. 524.

² Steinmetz, 36, 38. The accounts differ as to the extent of the freedom of an unmarried girl.

about it. He accepts it as his own child, or forgives her : at worst he quietly forsakes her company for that of his other wives.¹

Among the Mande of Kong and Jimini husband and wife are nominally required to be faithful to one another. But polygyny without limit is permitted, and the husband is merely required to pay a sum of money to a wife whom he forsakes in too notorious a manner for another. On the other hand, no punishment falls on the wife for adultery. Her accomplice, if a free man, is fined by the village chief to the extent of a few fowls ; if unfree he is liable in addition to be put in fetters. The offspring of adultery does not inherit, but becomes the property of his mother's brother. Like other domestic slaves, he cannot be sold and is always well-treated ; he may marry a free woman, and his lot is said to be by no means unhappy.² On the other hand, among the Mande of Seguella every child born by whatever father during the marriage is considered as the husband's child. Husband and wife are considered to owe a reciprocal duty of fidelity. But adultery is not in general a cause of divorce on either side : a pecuniary indemnity is all that the offended party can demand. Even long absence of the husband and omission to maintain the wife meanwhile are not a cause of divorce. The woman in such a case is authorised, generally at the end of a year, to go and live with some other man. When the husband returns he takes her back, together with any children that may have been born in his absence. Illegitimate children born before the marriage belong to their mother who has full parental rights over them ; but

¹ *Globus*, xciv. 61 *sqq.*

² Clozel, 318, 319, 320.

if she afterwards marry the father their position is regularised and they belong to him. Divorces are pronounced by the head of the family, with the concurrence of some of the relations or friends, unless they take place by mutual consent, when it is enough to declare them in the presence of four witnesses.¹ In Benin very few women are true to their husbands, many of them having at least one lover. When a child is born the woman does not declare who is its father until her husband is dead. Many women live openly with their lovers. The great majority of lawsuits are for the return of the wife, and many women prefer prison to returning to their legal husbands.² In the neighbouring Ibo country there is a yearly festival called *Mbari* (beautiful) held in the principal villages, and the most comely young women take part in it. During the festival there is absolutely no restriction placed upon them at night, "and they visit where and whom they wish. Even women who are married and live away return to their native villages on these occasions." The festival lasts for some weeks.³ Among the Yoruba-speaking peoples in general adultery is intercourse by a married woman with other men than her husband without his knowledge and consent; but husbands lend their wives (and more frequently their concubines) to their guests and friends.⁴ The Ewhe-speaking people of German Togoland have a moral code hardly more developed.

¹ Clozel, 331, 329, 330.

² Dennett, *At the Back*, 199, 198. See as to the privileges of the king's daughters, 176.

³ *Man*, iv. No. 106; *Journ. Afr. Soc.*, iv, 134.

⁴ Ellis, *Yoruba*, 182.

Among the Hos adultery is deemed of less consequence than theft ; and to be found out in theft, though a disgrace, entails no serious punishment. A mother, for instance, will comfort a son who has been discovered in an intrigue, by telling him that after all it is not larceny and what he has done can be repaired with a few cowries. A married man usually has " lady-friends " in his neighbour's harems. If he goes about to markets or on other business he has mistresses in all the villages to which his affairs take him. A husband who discovers an intrigue contents himself at first with admonishing his wife ; if admonition have no effect she may be sent away. The matter is arranged with the disturber of his domestic bliss by means of a simple warning or at most a trifling fine. In the case of friendly or related stocks this fine was until a few years ago no more than sixty pfennings. It is only in the case of strange or hostile stocks that it leads to bigger demands or formerly to war. Open concubinage is also practised with (among others) widows and wives who have been dismissed by their husbands. The offspring however, if any, always belong to the lawful husband, no difference in heirship or otherwise being made between them and his undoubted children ; and only the husband dares even to bury an adulterine child who may happen to die. Among the Matse unmarried girls have full sexual liberty. If a girl have a lover and marry any other man, the latter exacts compensation from the former ; but if subsequently satisfied that his wife has given up the lover since her marriage he remits it. A woman is never punished for adultery, unless her intrigue has caused her husband's death, probably by witchcraft as

among the Wayao. She is only punished for obstinate refusal to live with him.¹

The Bassa Komo on the Benue in Nigeria do not regard adultery as a punishable offence. It may cause a quarrel—even a fatal quarrel—between the husband and the adulterer; but it is no cause of repudiation of the wife. Indeed the adulterine issue belongs to the husband, so far as we can gather, just like his own children.²

Among the Tuareg the freedom of women goes very far. The dissolution of morals is said to be unprecedented. Though the women largely outnumber the men their infidelity seldom puts an end to the marriage. The husband may quarrel with the paramour, scold his wife or even go the length of giving her a few blows, but that is all. A murder on that account would entail the penalties of murder, and is in fact unheard of. The women practically do what they like with no interference by the men before marriage, and very little after. If they are tired of a marriage they put an end to it without further ado; it is extremely rare for a husband to take such a step.³

Among the Berbers a friendly exchange of wives is said to take place often between two men. The owner of the less young and plump wife pays money by way of equality of exchange.⁴ The Berbers of the Tunisian oases are reported to hold women in great

¹ Spieth, 120, 195-197, 187, 744. As to ceremonial observances in connection with the worship of some of the gods, *Id.* 797, 802.

² *Journ. Afr. Soc.* viii. 15.

³ *Globus*, xciv. 188.

⁴ Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 471, citing Rohlf's, *Beiträge zur Entdeckung und Erforschung Afrikas*, 1876, 89.

contempt, "not even doing them the honour of being jealous of them." In the oasis of Gofsa cuckolds used to be openly ridiculed and never took serious offence; "in fact it was customary to select as *kaid* one of those who had been most compromised in this respect."¹ An interesting relic of the hospitality which lends a wife to a guest is found among the Mohammedan Krumirs. A stranger visiting the tribe is received by one of the tribesmen and lodged in the same tent with his host's wife. But the husband mounts guard at the door, gun in hand, and the least movement on the stranger's part during the night draws upon him the husband's menaces, and often even death at his hands. The influence of Islam has not been sufficient to put an end to the ancient guest-right, though it has reduced it to an empty ceremony.²

Mohammed imposed no ascetic regard for continence upon his followers if they belonged to the male sex, but he displayed less concern towards the desires and appetites of the women. His modern adherents, at all events among the Bedouins, however, have remedied all that. Community of women, rather than polygamy, Mr. Palgrave who travelled among them tells us, is their connubial condition. It is emphatically a wise Bedouin child who knows his own father. Their current saying with reference to sexual matters is "dogs are better than we are," and the traveller from his own observation gives them "credit for having so far at least spoken the truth the whole truth and nothing but the truth."³ This account is with all its emphasis vague. A native writer cited by

¹ Bruun, 296.

² Bertholon, *Arch. Anthr. Crim.* viii. 609.

³ Palgrave, *Arabia*, i. 10.

Sprenger gives further particulars of the customs of the town of Mirbât. He states that the women go every night to the outer part of the city and devote themselves to strange men, sporting with them the greater part of the night. Meanwhile the husband brother son or nephew goes by without taking any notice and entertains himself with another woman.¹ On the other side of the Red Sea the Hassenyeh Arabs of the White Nile practise a curious form of marriage. The most respectable people marry for not more than four days in the week, and sometimes for fewer. During these days the wife is required to observe matrimonial chastity. On the other days she is free to receive whatever man she may fancy ; and husbands appear pleased with any attention paid to their wives during their days of freedom ; it is so much evidence that they are attractive.² The same people are reported to place a wife at the service of a guest.³ At Mecca the old mother-goddess Al-Uzza was worshipped in "the times of ignorance." She was probably identical with Semitic goddess of fertility adored under various names all over Western Asia and carried by the Phœnician colonies to Carthage and elsewhere. The festivals in her honour were everywhere licentious, as became her character. Such festivals are still held at Mecca under another patronage ; and they are still as of old licentious.⁴ At some of these festivals in Arabia held in

¹ Barton, 44.

² *Id.* 63, citing Wilken, *Matriarchaat*, 24.

³ Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 472, citing Taylor. Dulaure, 301 note, cites two examples of the rites of hospitality in Arabia and Syria : doubtless many more could be added.

⁴ On the worship of the Semitic goddess see Frazer, *Adonis*, Bk. i. *passim* ; Tylor *Essays*, 189 *sqq.* ; Augustine, *Civ. Dei.* ii. 4, 26 ; Barton, 233 *sqq.*

connection with the circumcision of children, where no licentious acts are now performed, the original nature of the rites is unmistakably exhibited in the dances by maidens, while the young men stand by and select their wives from the dancers.¹

Returning to the continent of Australia we will consider the sexual relations, so far as they concern the present argument, of the Arunta and their neighbouring tribes on either side of the Macdonnell Range. These tribes are in the patrilineal stage. Their matrimonial arrangements differ somewhat from those of the Dieri considered on an earlier page, inasmuch as the relation of *pirrauru* is unknown. But the appropriation of a woman to one husband is hardly less qualified on that account. Like the Dieri each of these central tribes is divided socially into a number of groups of men on the one side and of women on the other who stand in the relation of *unawa* (Dieri, *noa*) or potential spouses to one another. When a girl arrives at

¹ Barton, 99, 100, 110, citing Doughty, *Arabia Deserta*, i. 340. Concerning the manners of the Druses of Mount Lebanon the Spanish rabbi Benjamin of Tudela, who visited Palestine in the twelfth century, relates that fathers committed incest with their own daughters and that once a year a festival was held at which promiscuous intercourse took place. This was perhaps a calumny (*Early Trav.* 80. Cf. Churchill, *Mount Lebanon*, ii. 1853, 238-241). The Yezidis, or Devil-worshippers of Asiatic Turkey, are reported to sanction unions of a kind that would be called irregular and adulterous by either their Christian or their Mohammedan neighbours. Indeed, if the admission of an attendant at the principal Yezidi shrine near Mosul, made to Mr. Badger, can be relied on such unions are part of their religious worship, or at least are ordinary incidents in the precincts of the shrine. The admission however was vague, was instantly though ambiguously denied by an elder attendant, and the form of Mr. Badger's examination of the witnesses as recorded by himself does not carry conviction (Badger, *Nestorians*, i. 109).

maturity she will have been allotted to one of the men who are *unawa* to her. Before she is handed over to him she has to undergo a cruel and revolting rite which is performed with the cognisance but not, among the Arunta, in the presence of the bridegroom (if we may dignify him by that name). The rite is immediately followed by sexual intercourse with the men who take part in it, beginning with men with whom intercourse is at ordinary times forbidden and concluding with those who, like the bridegroom, are *unawa* to her. She is then adorned with head-bands and tufts of fur, with necklaces and arm-bands of fur-string, and her body is painted all over with a mixture of fat and red ochre. Thus decorated she is handed over to her husband, who will most likely send her back the next day to the same men for a repetition of the intercourse, though it is not, among the Arunta, obligatory on him to do so. From that time she becomes exclusively appropriated to him, subject to certain tribal customs.¹ The first of these customs is the right to lend her when he pleases to men who stand in the relation of *unawa* to her. Such loans are usually made to guests who are visiting the tribe. They are dependent on the husband's will, and are a mark of personal favour by him to the visitor or other friend in question. But tribal custom, independent of the husband's will, limits his exclusive ownership of the woman much more seriously. On the occasion of an important corroboree it is every man's duty at different times to send his wife to the ground, that the men

¹ S. and G., *Cent. Tribes*, 92 *sqq.* 107; *North. Tribes*, 133 *sqq.* There seems some doubt whether after all the Arunta are properly speaking in the stage of fatherright.

present may have access to her. And as in the rites preliminary to appropriation by her husband the proceedings commence with intercourse on the part of a man who is, except on ceremonial occasions, most strictly forbidden to her.¹ During the boys' puberty ceremonies there is also at one period a general interchange of women ushered in by a special dance by the women, whose decorations and movements are of an unmistakable character.² If a woman's allotted husband die, she is usually handed on to one of his younger brothers, who first of all lends her for a day or two to other men. Among the Kaitish, for example, the first men who thus have intercourse with her are such as are ordinarily prohibited; and as in the ceremony prior to her marriage it is only after passing from the hands of these that men who are in the relation of *unawa* are allowed intercourse with her.³

There are other occasions on which women are lent either ceremonially or as a token of goodwill, but we need not here follow the details. It will suffice to say that frequently the sexual licence amounts to absolute promiscuity, when men have intercourse with women whom at other times they dare not touch, under penalty of death for incest. There is abundant evidence to justify Messrs. Spencer and Gillen's conclusion that while jealousy is not unknown among these tribes it is but feebly developed. "For a man to have unlawful intercourse with any woman arouses a feeling which is due not so much to jealousy as to the fact that the delinquent has infringed a tribal

¹ S. and G., *Cent. Tribes*, 93, 98, 381, 96.

² *Ibid.* 381.

³ *Ibid. North. Tribes*, 136.

custom." If the intercourse has been with a woman who belongs to the class from which his wife comes he is called a thief; if with one with whom it is altogether unlawful for him to have intercourse, then he is called *iturka*, the most opprobrious term in the Arunta tongue. "In the one case he has merely stolen property, in the other he has offended against tribal law."¹ The status of the children does not depend upon paternity. There is no such thing as an illegitimate or adulterine child. Any child a woman may have is reckoned to the phratry and class of her husband, and he has presumably some sort of property in it, though according to native belief he is concerned in the procreation at most in a wholly subordinate way, as we have seen in a previous chapter.²

If the central tribes are an extreme example of the indifference among the patrilineal natives to what we regard as female virtue, it is certain that a similar attitude may be traced elsewhere. Among the tribes about Maryborough in Queensland the unmarried girls, with perhaps some widows, camped away from the main camp and there were courted by the young men. At the end of the puberty ceremonies marriages were arranged after the fashion of the rape of the Sabines; and unless a man kept a good look-out upon his *lubra* it was more than probable that she would be missing after such a raid by the men in want of wives. Wives were lent to strangers. Women however who were always laying themselves out to attract men

¹ S. and G., *Cent. Tribes*, 98-100, 106, 381.

² *Supra*, vol. i. p. 237; S. and G., *Cent. Tribes*, 68, 72; *North. Tribes*, 96. I use the terms *phratry* and *class* for *moiety* and *subclass*.

obtained a bad reputation; and entertainment was often provided by their means for visitors.¹ The Narrinyeri youth, after completion of the puberty ceremonies, had full licence as to the younger women, even those of their own class and totem. Marriages were effected by way of exchange of sisters or other female relatives. A man had the right to exchange his wife for the wife of another man, but the practice was not looked upon favourably by his clan. Marriage by elopement also occurred, but the woman was regarded with disfavour, because there had been no exchange of a sister for her. A young man might call his comrades to help him in an elopement, but they then had the right of access to the girl; and his male relatives would only defend him from the girl's kindred on condition of access to her.² Elopement was the ordinary method of marriage among the Kurnai: it was effected with the assistance of the bridegroom's comrades who had been initiated at the same ceremony as himself, and their help was given on the same condition as among the Narrinyeri. When the Aurora Australis was seen it was believed to be Mungan's fire which might burn the people up. To avert this danger the old men instituted a magical ceremony, part of which was a general exchange of wives for a day. Men also lent their wives to guests. Dr. Howitt further cites a case within his personal recollection where a Kurnai, having two wives, lent one to a friend who was going on a journey by himself,

¹ Howitt, 232 *sqq.*

² *Id.* 260, 261, 674; Taplin, *Narrinyeri*, 14. The latter also says (p. 10) "that on some occasions amongst a certain class of natives a great deal of licentious revelry will take place." He is speaking of native weddings.

saying: "Poor fellow! He is a widower and has a long way to go, and will feel very lonely."¹ The Yerkla-mining rarely lend women, "excepting to visitors, but it is occasionally done for a friend who has no wife; but in all cases only to one who is of the proper class-name [that is, to whom the woman might legally have been married]. The most frequent case is when one of the Headmen (medicine-men) requests a loan for some friendly visitor."² Among the Narrang-ga tribes of Yorke Peninsula, "when the local totem-clans met at some tribal ceremony brothers exchanged wives for a time, but did not lend them to strangers."³ The Yuin lent their wives to guests. A man who had more wives than he had an immediate use for would sometimes give one away to a poor fellow who had none.⁴ This was a thoroughly businesslike arrangement: he reduced the number of mouths he had to hunt for and at the same time secured the attachment of the woman's new husband. Lastly, among the Yaitmathang a youth after passing through the puberty ceremonies might choose any woman of the tribe, his own blood-relations excepted, for the night.⁵ In this case, as among the Narrinyeri, it would seem that the class-restrictions on mating were disregarded as well as the rights of husbands. It is obvious that among the Blackfellows the laxity of sexual relations was in no way affected by the change of reckoning from maternal to paternal descent.

¹ Howitt, 276, 266.

² *Id.* 258.

³ *Id.* 260. The term *brothers* must be understood in the wider sense according to native reckoning.

⁴ *Id.* 266. On the universality of the practice of lending a wife to a guest *cf.* Brough Smyth, ii. 301; as to the licence at corroborees and on other occasions, *Id.* 319.

⁵ Howitt, 566.

We have in an earlier part of the present chapter discussed the sexual relations of various American tribes which reckon kinship through the mother. We have still to consider those of the tribes which have advanced to agnatic descent or which recognise kinship through both parents. Here we find the practice of offering the wife or other female dependent to a guest for temporary companionship very widespread, if not universal. Lewis and Clark's expedition up the Missouri in the year 1804, was received in a friendly manner both by the Sioux and the Arikara Pawnees, and the men were literally persecuted with offers of squaws for their use. The women besides were "disposed to be amorous," and the men found no difficulty in procuring companions for the night. But while these interviews were among the Sioux chiefly clandestine and nominally secret from the husband or other relations, among the Arikara the etiquette was reversed. "That the wife or the sister should submit to a stranger's embraces without the consent of her husband or brother is a cause of great disgrace and offence, especially as for many purposes of civility or gratitude the husband and brother will themselves present to a stranger these females and be gratified by attentions to them." In other words the unauthorised embraces were an infringement of the husband's property, which, on the other hand, he had no hesitation in offering in the name of hospitality and friendship.¹ The Mandans and the Minnetarees welcomed the expedition with similar demonstrations.² The Sho-

¹ Lewis and Clark, i. 157, 161.

² *Id.* 189, 215. The white traders of a later date used to enter into alliances similar to those of the African traders so graphically

shonees were not indeed so importunate in volunteering the services of their wives, yet a Shoshonean husband would for a trifling present lend his wife for a night to a stranger and prolong the loan in consideration of an addition to the value of the gift. He would however regard favours which he had not authorised as "highly offensive and quite as disgraceful to his character as the same licentiousness in civilised societies."¹ The members of the expedition found the persevering gallantry of the Chinook and Clatsop women particularly troublesome. Their kindness always exceeded the ordinary courtesies of hospitality. A man would lend his wife or daughter for a fishhook or a strand of beads. To decline the offer was to disparage the lady's charms; and nothing seemed to irritate both sexes more than the refusal to accept the favours of the women. A chief came one day with his two squaws, whose services he offered to the two chiefs of the expedition. When they were refused both he and the whole party of Indians were greatly offended, none more so than the ladies themselves. The unmarried girls were their own mistresses; and, as among all the other Indians with whom the leaders of the expedition were acquainted, they were in the habit of soliciting the favours of the other sex, with the full approval of their friends and kindred.²

Later inquiries have fully confirmed this account of the Chinook and resulted in extending it to other tribes of the neighbourhood. We are told in general terms of

described by Miss Kingsley. These were always of a temporary character, and did not injure a lady's future prospects when the connection came to an end (Catlin, i. 120).

¹ Lewis and Clark, ii. 119.

² *Id.* 331, 291.

the tribes of Western Washington and North-western Oregon that the idea of chastity is entirely wanting in both sexes. "Prostitution is almost universal. An Indian, perhaps, will not let his favourite wife, but he looks upon his others, his sisters daughters female relatives and slaves, as a legitimate source of profit; and this seems to have been a trait of the coast tribes from their first intercourse with the whites. Occasionally adultery forms a cause of difficulty; but it is then only because the woman is reserved for the time being to the husband's use, or because he fears to be cheated of his just emoluments. Cohabitation of unmarried females among their own people brings no disgrace if unaccompanied with childbirth, which they take care to prevent."¹

The Mandans, another of the tribes visited by Lewis and Clark, are said by later travellers to have punished adultery on the part of the wife by cutting off her nose.² Here as elsewhere adultery means the bestowal of favours by the wife upon another man without her husband's consent, which we have seen was often given. When a certain dance, called the dance of the half-shorn head, was sold by its Mandan possessors, they received in part payment the temporary use of the wives of the purchasers, each woman having the right to choose her consort.³ With such customs it is

¹ G. Gibbs, *Contrib. N. Am. Ethn.* i. 199.

² Will and Spinden, *Peabody Mus. Papers*, iii. 131, apparently on the authority of Maximilian Prince of Wied. The same punishment was said to be inflicted by the Ojibways and Blackfeet; but among the latter it does not prevent the women from painting their faces as an invitation to men (Petitot, *Traditions*, 492).

³ Dorsey, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 505; citing Maximilian, *Trav. N. Amer.* 426.

hardly surprising that, notwithstanding the severe punishment awaiting adultery, what is technically called virtue in a woman was rather scarce. The men boasted their love-exploits and often carried about the village small bundles of sticks each representing a conquest, or one big stick with stripes indicating the number. The Hidatsas had a similar custom.¹ In Montana a Crow husband, with the aid of a party of his male friends, inflicts condign punishment on a faithless wife by compelling her to submit to their embraces, and erects a monument of stones on the spot as a witness of her shame. He then dismisses her. But this does not seem to prevent her remarriage, and with that event she is restored to social consideration. Nor does it affect the prevalence of sexual immorality among both old and young of the tribe.²

Among the northern Maidu of the foot-hills adultery was said to be very common, and the general moral status in sexual matters was low. When a girl among the north-eastern Maidu came to puberty dances were held during four consecutive nights and great licence was permitted. Dancing couples would drop out of the ring or line and wander away into the brush, to resume their places later in the dance. Young and old, married as well as single, all took part; and while a woman might refuse to yield herself it was considered evidence of bad temper and was widely commented on.³ Hunter, who lived in captivity with the Kickapoos Kansas and Osages during his childhood and early manhood in the opening years of the last century, tells

¹ Will and Spinden, *loc. cit.*

² S. C. Simms, *Amer. Anthr.* N.S. v. 374.

³ Dixon, *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xvii. 240, 236.

us that jealousy was a passion but little known and much less indulged by those tribes. The principal causes of divorce were indolence intemperance and cowardice. He adds to these impotence and sterility, but takes care to say that he had never known an instance of either and concludes that they must be exceedingly rare. Separation of husband and wife depended upon the wife's will as much as the husband's; and if she chose to leave him and return to her parents she found no difficulty in marrying again.¹ Another account says of the Osages that a man's concubines (probably meaning his subordinate wives) were offered to a guest. The Assineboin in return for hospitality of this kind used to stipulate for a present.² We gather from the traditional narratives of the Foxes that marriages were easily put an end to, and that the first night of a marriage, or sometimes more, was not very rarely given up to a brother or a specially beloved friend.³

Among the Dene or Athapascans of the north of Canada the temporary exchange of wives was regarded as a pre-eminent token of friendship and the greatest proof of hospitality. The majority indeed of the Dene have little regard for chastity; and the lewdness of the Carrier women is said to be unsurpassed.⁴ To the south-west of the Ungava district dwells a tribe of Indians, perhaps related to their neighbours the Montagnais of the early Jesuit missionaries. It is not clear from Mr. Turner's account of them whether they

¹ Hunter, 247.

² Post, *Studien*, 345, citing Waitz.

³ Jones, *Fox Texts*, i. 217, 305, 313.

⁴ F. A. G. Morice, *Anthropos*, ii. 33, 32

reckon kinship through the father or the mother. The women are treated well and no notice is taken of occasional laxity in their morals so long as it is not notorious. In the Ungava district itself the Nenenot or Naskopie men exhibit less jealousy than the women. Their sexual relations are very loose. Continence on the part of either husband or wife is unusual, and only notorious unchastity is sufficient to cause the offender to be put away. The paternal origin of a child is therefore often obscure. For that reason we are told the husband at the time of the child's birth is supposed to be its father.¹ While accepting the facts we may be permitted to doubt the author's reasoning. The Kwakiutl believe "that the birth of twins will produce permanent backaches in the parents. In order to avert this the man, a short time after the birth, induces a young man to have intercourse with his wife, while she in return procures a girl for her husband. It is believed that the backache will then attack them."² Among the Ahts of British Columbia and the more northern tribes of the coast the temporary present of a wife is one of the greatest honours that can be shown to a guest.³ The Aleuts of the American islands exchanged wives and a rich woman was permitted to indulge in two husbands.⁴ In fact, the custom of lending or exchanging wives in token of hospitality and friendship, on certain ceremonial occasions, or as the price of obtaining

¹ Turner, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 183, 269-71.

² Boas, *Brit. Ass. Rep.* 1896, 575.

³ Sproat, 95. Some of the tribes vaguely alluded to by the writer are doubtless matrilineal.

⁴ Bancroft, i. 92.

secret knowledge, was very general among the North American tribes and has been noted by explorers and other observers from the earliest period.¹

Mention has been made of ceremonies in other parts of the world in which more or less promiscuous ritual coition is practised. Such festivals are by no means wanting among the aborigines of North America. While the expedition of Lewis and Clark sojourned in one of the Mandan villages a buffalo dance was performed. The object of this celebration was to obtain the return of the buffaloes, which had become scarce. At the appointed hour the old men seated themselves cross-legged on skins round a fire in the middle of the lodge with a doll dressed like a young woman placed before them. Each young man brought a platter of food a pipe of tobacco and his wife, who was dressed only in a robe or mantle thrown loosely around her body. Selecting the old man whom he intended to honour he spread the food before him, offered him the pipe and smoked with him. Immediately the old man exhibiting the image threw it on the ground and stepping out of the circle pretended to attempt sexual intercourse with it as if with a woman. The young man's wife at once casting herself on the elder folded him in her arms, and her husband humbly prayed that he would honour him by embracing

¹ Mooney, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xix. 456. Mr. Mooney's remark is called forth by a Cherokee tale in which a husband changes shapes with a buzzard to obtain success in hunting deer. While the husband in the form of the buzzard flies to locate the game, the buzzard in the husband's form goes home to entertain his wife. An Ojibway tale (*Journ. Am. F. L.* xix. 229) relates this practice of another tribe which cannot be identified, but implicitly repudiates it for the Ojibway. The repudiation can hardly be relied on.

her there and then. Often the elder at first appeared reluctant, but at length moved by the youth's perseverance, by his prayers gifts and even tears, yielded to his solicitations, the husband meanwhile standing by, rejoicing at the honour which was being done him and at his dignity thus preserved by acceptance of his offer.¹ The buffalo was the most important animal to the Indians of the Plains. When the buffaloes were absent, want of all the necessaries of life threatened the people. The presence of a herd and a successful hunt meant plenty and wealth and whatever an Indian required to fulfil his ideal of happiness. There can be little doubt that this strange scene, which amazed the explorers beyond measure, was a magical process intended to draw the buffaloes back and with the buffaloes the prosperity of which they were the symbol and the substance. Nor was this the only ritual of the kind performed by the Mandans; but in the other orgy witnessed by the explorers it is stated that all the women taking part were unmarried. In the same way at the great buffalo medicine-feast of the Hidatsas, said to have been instituted by the women, when prayers were offered for success in hunting and in battle, the men and women indulged in something like promiscuous intercourse.²

One other example will suffice. The Arapaho, an Algonkin-speaking people, were discovered at the beginning of the last century inhabiting a territory which now forms the eastern half of Colorado and the south-eastern quarter of Wyoming. Their principal

¹ Lewis and Clark, i. 209.

² Dorsey, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 505, citing Maximilian, *Trav. N. Amer.* 419.

religious ceremony is called the Sun-dance. It is performed from time to time in compliance with a vow made by a member of the tribe at some crisis of his life, such as sickness either of himself or some of his kindred, lunacy, ominous dreams or for deliverance from a great danger, as when sorely pressed on the war-path. The whole community joins in the performance, which consists in an elaborate series of solemn rites extending over eight days and undertaken in a deeply religious spirit. A great lodge is built, every portion of which with its accessories is symbolic. One of the chief functionaries is the Lodge-maker, and another is his official "grandfather," the Transferrer. At a certain point of the performance the Lodge-maker's wife and the Transferrer leave together, the Rabbit-tipi, a lodge where the secret preparations are made for the dance. Deliberately and solemnly and in ritual order they prepare for this duty. The woman flinging a buffalo robe around her removes all her clothing, and covered only with a robe she follows the Transferrer who is similarly clad. While a sacred song is sung and intense emotion prevails in the lodge, they pass out by a sunwise circuit over the fumes of rising incense, and proceed to a spot a short distance from the lodge. It is midnight. After a few moments' prayer in which they both emphasise the fact that they are about to do that which was commanded at the time of the origin of the ceremony and that what they are about to do is in keeping with the wish of their Father, the woman throws her covering on the ground and lies down on her back. The Transferrer standing by her side offers her body to Man-above, the Grandfather, to the Four-Old-Men and various

minor gods. No doubt can be entertained that formerly this offering was followed by actual intercourse between the Transferrer and the Lodge-maker's wife. But it is averred that this is now prohibited, and it was not certainly performed when the ceremony was witnessed by Mr. Dorsey in 1902. During the act of intercourse, whether really or only in symbol enacted, the Transferrer places in the woman's mouth a piece of root which is transferred to the Lodge-maker's mouth from his wife's on her return to the tipi. The woman re-entering the tipi addresses her husband: "I have returned, having performed the holy act which was commanded"; whereupon he and the other dancers thank her and pray for her success. The rite is repeated with similar formalities on the second night following, after the great offerings-lodge is completed, but before the first dance actually commences. In this rite—a dramatic representation in intimate relation with the myths of the tribe—the Transferrer represents the Man-above, while the woman represents the mother of the tribe. The root placed in her mouth represents the seed or food given by the All-Powerful (Man-above), "while the issue of their connection is believed to be the birth of the people hereafter, or an increase in the population." The rite is also a plea to all protective powers for their aid and care.¹ It is thus believed to have a potent influence on the well-being of the people. Nor is this all. "At the sun-dance an old man crying out to the entire camp-circle told the young people to

¹ Dorsey, *Field Columbian Mus. Pub. Anthropol.* iv. 173, 101. The neighbouring tribe of the Cheyenne had the same rite at the Sun-dance (Dorsey, *Id.* *Anthropol.* ix. 130).

amuse themselves; he told the women to consent if they were approached by a young man, for this was their opportunity; and he called to the young men not to beat or anger their wives, or be jealous during the dance: they might make a woman cry, but meanwhile she would surely be thinking of some other young man. At such dances the old women say to the girls: 'We are old, and our skin is not smooth; we are of no use. But you are young and plump; therefore find enjoyment. We have to take care of the children, and the time will come when you will do the same.'"¹

In Central America the sexual morality of the Mosquito Indians leaves much to be desired from our point of view. To be sure, a married pair will seldom separate, though either of them can do so at pleasure; for wives are hard to find and to be without a wife is not only an ignominious but a most distressing plight for an Indian. Whether in consequence of this or not, the women are allowed complete freedom and infidelity is common. The husband if he discover it is usually contented with payment of the customary fine.² In Mexico, according to Mr. Lumholtz, the uncivilised Tarahumare is in the ordinary course of his existence too bashful and modest to enforce even his matrimonial rights and privileges. Happily there are numerous feasts, as well private as public, at which *tesvino*, the national intoxicating liquor made from Indian corn, is offered to the gods and consumed by mortals, else the race would die out. On these occasions sacrifices are offered, dancing and drink are

¹ Kroeber, *Bull. Am. Mus. N. H.* xviii. 15.

² Bell, *Tangweera*, 261. Cf. 197.

freely resorted to, and the solemnity ends with an orgy. When it is time to return home the track is strewn with men and women who, overcome with the effects of their spree, have lain down wherever they happened to be to sleep themselves sober. Especially at the agricultural festivals sexual promiscuity takes place; and perhaps it is in some measure at least looked upon as a ritual performance not displeasing to the higher powers.¹

In South America among the tribes of the Paraguayan Chaco very little jealousy appears to exist. A missionary who records this thinks it speaks well for the women; but, on the other hand, he definitely states in the next sentence that no punishment is meted out to the offender for theft fraud or adultery.² The women of the Mboyas, one of the Paraguayan tribes, bestowed their favours on the slightest inducement being held out to them. Generally among the Paraguayan tribes it is said that chastity was entirely unknown; fathers-in-law freely indulged in sexual intercourse with their daughters-in-law. The animal passions were gratified in public without concealment. A wife could be put away without the least formality; no shame or dishonour on either side attached to repudiation. Among some tribes polygyny was permitted only to the *cacique*. He claimed the privilege of selecting the fairest damsel of the village as his bride, and he sometimes handed her over to his followers to be deflowered.³ The Araucanians cele-

¹ Lumholtz, *Unknown Mexico*, i. 352.

² Grubb, 103.

³ Featherman, *Guarano-Mar*, 435. There seem to have been great differences among the tribes in their customs and sexual morality.

brate at different times a religious festival called *kamarouko*. According to the ancient rite it is said the conductors of the solemnity were to be virgins. A sexual orgy winds up the festival; and though it is possible that alcohol may conduce to the brutality of the present-day performances it seems improbable that this feature of the ceremonies is wholly traceable to drink.¹ Dr. Preuss quotes from von Tschudi a description of a harvest festival among the Peruvians taken from an old Spanish ecclesiastic. In the month of December, we learn, at the time of the approaching maturity of the fruit called *pal'tay* or *pal'ta* those who are to take part in the feast prepare themselves by abstinence from salt and *utsu*, a species of capsicum, and by strict continence. On a certain day designated at the beginning of the feast (which lasted six days and six nights) men and women assembled all stark naked at an appointed place between the fruit-gardens. At a given signal they started in a race for a fairly distant hill. Every man who during the race overtook a woman had intercourse with her on the spot.²

The foregoing survey of practices foreign to our ethical code, and utterly inconsistent with masculine jealousy as we understand the passion, might easily be extended. Accurate statistics are, of course, impossible on the subject. The examples I have collected however show that these practices are found not here and there isolated in a vast ocean of healthier morality; they abound in every quarter of the globe

¹ *Journ. Am. F. L.* xiv. 151, reviewing and citing Comte Henri de la Vault, *Voyage en Patagonie*.

² Preuss, *Globus*, lxxxvi. 358, quoting Pedro da Villagomez, *Carta pastoral* from von Tschudi, *Beiträge zur Kenntnis des alten Peru* (Vienna, 1891), 26.

and in varying degrees of civilisation from the lowest savagery upwards. Nor are they breaches of the traditional code of morals: on the contrary, they are its embodiment and expression. By them not merely are unmarried women free to dispose of their persons; married women bestow their favours at the instance, or with the consent, of their husbands, or else in obedience to some religious or social duty, upon strange men and at times upon men whom they are required in ordinary circumstances to shun under the severest penalties of the tribal religion, penalties not the sanction of a merely conjugal duty but of the wider social organisation. Even when their favours cannot be brought within any of these categories, when they are bestowed without the knowledge or concurrence of their husbands the transgression is frequently of small account. It is winked at, or it is deemed no more than a petty theft for which the husband is willing to be placated by payment of compensation, in many cases trifling in amount or according to a fixed tariff, or else by the castigation of the erring wife or the partner of her guilt.¹

The view thus implied of what we should call serious offences against virtue is not, it is true, universal. But it is common enough and distributed widely enough to lead the student seriously to ask

¹ In Northern Queensland, where the husband enjoys the common rights of lending exchanging selling or divorcing his wife, while she has no corresponding powers, there seem to be curious divergencies in the way in which rape of a married woman is regarded. In some places the culprit exposes himself to death, or to a severe punishment short of death; elsewhere, a comparatively few miles off, the woman's husband or betrothed may not even consider himself aggrieved (Roth, *Bull.* viii. 6 (s. 2), 9 (s. 10).

whether the masculine passion of jealousy can be as fundamental and primitive as it is sometimes asserted to be. If the answer be, as I believe it must be, in the negative certain hypothetical reconstructions of the history of marriage will need reconsideration.

Our immediate business however is not with these : we are concerned rather with the relation of parent and child. The evidence before us culminating in the present chapter proves beyond doubt a general indifference in the lower culture to the actual paternity of a child. It is true that among many nations the pregnancy of an unmarried girl must be followed by her marriage ; while among others the alternative of abortion or infanticide is preferred. Economic causes are frequently responsible for this : the girl-mother's family are unwilling to support an additional member who ought to be dependent on another person. Or the pressure of social forms is often responsible. The transfer of the *potestas* to the husband tends to the servitude of all women, unmarried as well as married. A girl's freedom is abridged ; her right to entertain lovers decays ; she is married by the time she is mature or as soon afterwards as possible. Often she is betrothed when a mere child and compelled to continence until marriage. There is no place in the social framework for the offspring of her amours ; it becomes a disgrace for any other than a wife to bring a child into the world. On the other hand, it is by no means uncommon that a girl who is pregnant or has given birth to a child is more readily married ; her value increases when she is shown to be prolific. Her husband is sure of at least one child ; and whether he himself is the begetter or not is a matter about

which he is quite careless. Nor is the marriage-day the *terminus ad quem* of his carelessness. In a considerable proportion of the cases cited the husband, if he ponder the subject at all, must be aware that some of the children begotten after marriage have not been begotten by him, though they may be the result of other sexual relations by his wife sanctioned by tribal usage. Even adulterine issue, defined in the terms of the lower culture as the result of relations not so sanctioned, is frequently received by the husband as his own. In the communities in which the practices we have passed in review are found children are as a rule but little burden; on the contrary they may be a source of power and wealth. A husband therefore does not too curiously inquire into the origin of a child who will raise his status and add to his influence in society. Nay, even if he knows that he is not the father, by recognising it as his child he acquires the benefit of its birth as if he had been himself the agent in begetting it. It may be said that this will not apply to cases of more or less nomadic populations, like the Bushmen and the Australian blackfellows who wander over a comparatively barren country. To them children instead of adding to their power and wealth are a weakness and an incumbrance. There is a measure of truth here. The burden and the danger of too many children is relieved by infanticide, especially of girls. Yet it is easy to overstate the objection. To these poverty-stricken populations children are their greatest asset. Burden though they may be in their earliest years they quickly learn to help themselves, and as they grow up they take their full share in providing for the wants and assuring the safety of the

community. The limits of subsistence may be narrow, but they are indefinite. Where the principal food is the flesh of wild animals numbers are often essential to success in hunting, as they are also in defence against human and other foes. Nor in the search for vegetable food and the smaller animals are numbers to be despised. This is the work wherein children begin first to help and wherein with their sharp eyes and agile movements they form a valuable adjunct to the women. They thus soon become of importance for their own sakes and not merely as future hunters and warriors. When the basis of subsistence shifts and provision for future supplies is laid up by the keeping of cattle or the sowing of grain, then the value of a child increases. The boys watch the cattle or the cornfields; the girls render material assistance to their mothers in the various household duties incident to their condition. After a few years the boys accompany their elders to market or to war, they support and assist them in their bargains and their quarrels their hunting and their husbandry, while the girls often bring wealth in the bride-prices paid for them. Thus both boys and girls are a source alike of consideration in the community and of material benefit.

Moreover, where a tribe is exposed to hardships, where food is scarce, skies are inclement and foes are numerous, where long and painful journeys must be undertaken, and labour is severe, the women are usually not very prolific. Some races too are by nature comparatively infertile. In such cases a birth may be an event welcomed for its comparative rarity. The instinct of self-preservation is a social no less than an individual instinct. We have seen how it is said

to operate in an extreme case like that of the Sia. Having in mind the customs of other peoples passed in review we may well doubt that it has caused all the promiscuity (for it almost amounts to that) which has been described as prevalent in that tribe. But it does assuredly tend to produce disregard of the exact paternity of a child born to the tribe. For the only way in which a society with its organisation its traditions and its corporate life can continue to exist is by the production of offspring. Children therefore have their importance independent of the assistance they may be expected to render in the provision of food or in warlike efficiency. Where they are rare the desire for them outweighs a nice consideration of the manner in which they are obtained.

What is true of the larger community of the tribe is true also of the smaller community of the family. Children are its supreme necessity. It matters comparatively little whether they are legitimate, or even whether they have the family blood in their veins. Carelessness on this point arising under motherright is in no way diminished—nay, it may become actually intensified—with the change to agnatic descent. That change is often accompanied or followed by increased accumulation of property and by a religious development which concentrates the cult of the dead upon the family *manes*. When this happens the holder of the property as the head of the family becomes especially charged with the religious duties upon which his own welfare and that of the entire family depend. It is incumbent upon him to have an heir upon whom shall devolve his property and the religious obligations bound up with it. The more children a father has

the more secure he is that the edifice of the family will stand, and the duties on which tremendous issues both here and hereafter hang will continue to be discharged. Religion thus unites with economic and social considerations to emphasise the importance of children. They are not merely a source of power and wealth and influence : without them a man's relation to the invisible beings whose anger he dreads and from whose favour he has everything to hope is uncertain and at the peril of every blast. So long therefore as a child is reckoned to his stock and will carry on his name and property his traditions and worship, a husband is content to accept the fact of birth without making a fuss about the real paternity, provided public opinion does not oblige him actively to prosecute an inquiry.

But he goes further. So great is the need for children that he is not content to leave their production to the chance of a guest or of his wives' voluntary amours. He employs other men expressly to do what he cannot do for himself. Customs consecrated and sometimes enforced by tribal law enable him to obtain children, in his lifetime or even after his death, to inherit his position and property and to fulfil his duties to the state or to religion. Examples are endless in number. Perhaps the most striking is that which has come most recently to light in the practice of the Dinkas detailed in an earlier chapter. The posthumous child of a Dinka husband is not as usual the child of one of his own wives. It is the child of a woman specially selected after his death, appropriated for the purpose by means of a marriage ceremony in his name and then united to a man with the choice of

whom he has had no more to do than with the choice of the woman. And yet in the contemplation of law the child is his and has no other father. Sonship is here as obviously fictitious as in the case of adoption. The widespread custom of adoption which dates from savagery is another device testifying alike to the intense desire for children and to the indifference for the source from which as a matter of fact they come. By means of a simple ceremony a child or a grown person is transferred from his native kindred into the family of the adopter and is thenceforth regarded for all purposes as the offspring of his new parent. In this way when the natural means of procuring children fail, or for some other good reason, the relation of parent and child is created between persons who are known to have no natural kinship with one another, a bond is formed as sacred and enduring as that which among ourselves unites begetter and begotten or that still closer bond between the mother and the fruit of her womb.

Thus fatherright, far from being founded on certainty of paternity, positively fosters indifference, and if it does not promote fraud at least becomes a hotbed of legal fictions. It is a purely artificial system.

CHAPTER VII

PHYSIOLOGICAL IGNORANCE ON THE SUBJECT OF CONCEPTION. CONCLUSION

The foregoing considerations lead to the conclusion that paternity was not understood by early man, and even yet the cause of birth is more or less of a mystery to some peoples in the lower culture. Reasons for this ignorance : among others the disproportion of births to acts of sexual union. Every woman in the lower stages of culture is accustomed to intercourse. Premature intercourse very widespread. It is not only unproductive, but it impairs fertility. Even where the true cause of birth has been discovered it has been nowhere held invariable and indispensable. In Australia and a few other countries it is still unrecognised. Summary of the argument.

THE beliefs the practices and the institutions passed in review in previous chapters point beyond mistake to the conclusion that actual paternity is, speaking generally, of small account in the lower culture. If paternity carried the value, the social and legal importance, assigned to it among the highly civilised peoples of Europe and America, it is inconceivable that husbands would as a more or less ordinary incident of social life sanction or submit to the bestowal by their wives on other men of the favours which ought to be reserved to themselves alone. Motherright might indeed be conceivable as the social condition of our earliest human progenitors ; but it would have been speedily

and everywhere superseded by a mode of reckoning descent and family allegiance in which paternity would have had its due consideration ; and it is very doubtful whether any distinguishable relics of the earlier organisation of society would have remained.

When side by side with these customs and institutions we place the world-wide and persistent beliefs and practices which derive the origin of a child from something else than the natural act of generation, we are led to the further conclusion that not merely is actual paternity of small account but, strange as it may seem, it is even not understood. By this I do not mean that its processes are not scientifically known : that is a matter of course. Nor do I mean that everywhere where these institutions these practices or these beliefs prevail there is now absolute ignorance on this subject. What I do mean is that for generations and æons the truth that a child is only born in consequence of an act of sexual union, that the birth of a child is the natural consequence of such an act performed in favouring circumstances, and that every child must be the result of such an act and of no other cause, was not realised by mankind, that down to the present day it is imperfectly realised by some peoples, and that there are still others among whom it is unknown.

Such ignorance is by no means so incredible as at the first blush it may appear. It is of a piece with the ignorance and misconception relating to man's nature and environment and his position in the universe, prevalent in all but the highest culture. Comprehension of the process of birth, as of all other natural processes, can only be attained by close patient and unprejudiced observation. Observation of that

kind was for many ages beyond the power of mankind. The savage hunter who marks down or traps his game has learned its habits and can detect its presence by the lightest sound, or by a visible indication which would pass unnoticed by one less experienced in the ways of the wilderness. The warrior or the avenger of blood tracks his victim more unerringly than the bloodhound. In these cases his mind has been concentrated and his observation sharpened by the daily necessities of life, by the contest of skill with his human and non-human competitors. Here the deductions from sight and sound are immediately verifiable, and his reasoning powers are not clouded by axioms which do not correspond to reality. But the same hunter who is so keen and certain in his conclusions as to the movements of his prey believes that he can by magical or religious ceremonies draw from unknown distances the herd of bisons which he desires to hunt, or gather the clouds and bring down the rain upon the parched and aching land. No failures suffice to convince him of his error, because the process which brings the bison into his neighbourhood or produces a change of meteoric conditions cannot be discovered without a long and complicated induction based upon a much wider knowledge than he possesses, and because in the absence of this knowledge he is incessantly misled by preconceptions of the universe and its government, his limited experience and reason trained only to deal with his immediate needs and surroundings cannot correct or disperse.

The attention of mankind would not be early or easily fastened upon the procreative process. It is lengthy, extending over months during which the

observer's attention would be inevitably diverted by a variety of objects, most of them of far more pressing import and many of them involving his own life or death. The sexual passion would be gratified instinctively without any thought of the consequences and in an overwhelming proportion of cases without the consequence of pregnancy at all. When that consequence occurred it would not be visible for weeks or months after the act which produced it. A hundred other events might have taken place in the interval which would be liable to be credited with the result by one wholly ignorant of natural laws. If any of these were once accepted as a hypothetic cause the attention would be concentrated upon it, the observation would speedily appear to be confirmed by other real or imagined occurrences, and the partially developed reason of primitive man would be caught in the snare of the fallacy *post hoc ergo propter hoc*. Such a speculation once germinated would be very difficult to uproot from the uncultivated soil : it would interlace and wind itself about the kindred hypotheses equally false and equally plausible that choked the healthier growths of the human intellect. Thus the correction of a mistake, even where the attention was directed to the subject, would be extremely tardy and gradual, extending over many generations and leaving traces perhaps to the end of time. Other blunders of archaic thought on matters that seem perfectly obvious to us have become permanent as part of the mental equipment of the race. In this way Animism originating far back in the ages of childhood is now an enduring and vital endowment of the thought the poetry and the religion of the loftiest civilisation. When the notion

of birth by other than the natural means of fertilisation has run its course in the beliefs and practices of mankind it will remain embedded in the literature and will lend one more mystic charm to the most exquisite fairy tales of the world.

It is impossible here exhaustively to discuss the many causes that may have retarded the discovery of the truth concerning the mystery of birth. I have alluded however to one deserving of some further illustration. Pregnancy only results from sexual intercourse by the concurrence of favouring conditions. The nourishment of the parents' bodies, their respective ages and vital energies, the conjunction of the critical moment when the womb becomes specially receptive, and the state of mental emotion which may so operate as to accelerate, or on the other hand may altogether prevent, quickening are among the considerations most urgent to be taken into account in estimating the probability of conception. Unless these conditions be favourable pregnancy cannot ensue. This is ground familiar to us and need not be insisted on: But such nice calculations are not familiar to the savage; and savagery and the lower degrees of civilisation often tend to obscure them.

In these stages every female is accustomed to sexual intercourse, frequently from a very early age. But every woman does not bear children, and none bear at all times. Where polygyny prevails so many young women are monopolised by the elder or more powerful men that young or uninfluential men have to content themselves with widows or women rejected by their superiors. So, as we have noted in the last chapter, among the Yuin a poor fellow who had no

wife received sometimes a cast-off wife from one who had more than he wanted.¹ Where children are much desired the commonest reason for casting off a wife is likely to be her barrenness. Whether this be the reason in a particular case or not, a widow or a cast-off wife would often be virtually beyond the age of child-bearing, though menstruation might not have ceased. In such cases, of course, no offspring would result from the union.

On the other hand, among many peoples sexual intercourse begins long before maturity. Premature intercourse produces children no more than the intercourse of women who are past bearing. But if practised by immature girls with adult men, it often results in such injury to the sexual organs as may seriously affect the reproductive powers after maturity is reached. In the last chapter incidental mention has been made of copulation before puberty among the Bahuana of the Congo basin, the Maoris, and the populations of the Marquesas Islands and the islands of Ambon and Uliase in the East Indies.² From the list of other cases of premature sexual relations, it would seem necessary for our purpose expressly to exclude the custom of infant marriage which has grown up among the Hindus under a complexity of influences not yet wholly understood. In Vedic times marriage was the marriage of adults. But in the law-books, the composition of later ages, a father is enjoined to marry his daughter before she attain puberty; and he is held guilty of a grave sin if he omit to perform this duty. Whatever the causes of the change it took place in a civilised not in a savage

¹ *Supra*, p. 228.

² *Supra*, pp. 113, 172, 176, 138.

society. Its cruelty has been mitigated in the Panjab and elsewhere outside Bengal by a custom of deferring actual consummation to a later date. This however is contrary to the intention of the sacred laws, which appear to contemplate marriage with a view to immediate consummation.¹ Infant marriage under these laws was originally confined to the Aryan-speaking population. With other practices inculcated by the Brahmans it is now spreading wherever social distinction is desired and threatens to become the general rule in the Indian peninsula. It is quite possible and even likely that some of the peoples of that vast area may have practised infant marriage, at all events as an occasional thing, independently of Brahman influence. So subtle however is that influence that it is difficult to point with certainty to a case. The Todas may be described as untouched by Brahmanism. The custom of infant marriage is well established among them, but the girl does not usually join her husband until she is about fifteen or sixteen years of age. Shortly before she reaches puberty a man belonging to the opposite endogamous group to that of which she is a member, and therefore ineligible for marriage though not for cohabitation with her, is called in to perform the ceremony of putting his mantle over her. He comes in the daytime to her village and lying down beside her for a few minutes puts his mantle over her, so that it covers them both. Defloration is not part of this rite; the rite is only a preliminary to that. "Fourteen or fifteen days later," says Dr. Rivers, "a man of strong physique, who may

¹ *Ind. Census*, i. (1901), 431 sqq. Cf. *Sacred Bks.* xiv. 91, 314; xxv. 328, 343, 344.

belong to either division and to any clan except that of the girl, comes and stays in the village for one night and has intercourse with the girl. This must take place before puberty, and it seemed that there were few things regarded as more disgraceful than that this ceremony should be delayed till after this period. It might be a subject of reproach and abuse for the remainder of the woman's life, and it was even said that men might refuse to marry her if this ceremony had not been performed at the proper time."¹ The ceremonial defloration thus accomplished is obviously a puberty rite and nothing more, whatever causes may have operated to require its performance prior to the actual attainment of maturity.

But if we look outside India we find the practice of sexual intercourse before puberty not uncommon in the lower culture. Among the Chukchi young men marry early, and sexual relations sometimes begin before full maturity is reached. Indeed children are often reared together with a view to marriage. They sleep with one another from the beginning and the marriage is consummated on the first impulse of nature, or even before the maturity of either of them. Such marriages are considered to be the strongest. How frequently in these circumstances premature consummation takes place is rendered probable from the innate sensuality of the Chukchi and their enjoyment of ribald sayings and lewd gestures, which would familiarise the children with sexual matters from a very early age. It is true that they have discovered that an early marriage is injurious to the woman's health and tends to diminish the number of births, and that

¹ Rivers, 503.

consequently it is usually held blamable to have intercourse with a girl who is not perfectly mature. Practice however lags behind their precepts at a considerable distance.¹

Much further to the south the Gold on the lower reaches of the Amur river before the arrival of the Russians were in the habit of marrying their children while still very young. Girls were married as young as eight or nine years, and boys at the age of ten or eleven. It sometimes "happened that a ten-year-old boy had to marry a twenty-year-old girl. Such early marriages are prohibited nowadays by the Russian Government, and intelligent Gold have come to understand how detrimental these marriages have been to their people. Although nominally abolished, premature intercourse still continues and contributes, no less than epidemics and alcoholism, to the gradual ruin of the people. Russian physicians who have become familiar with the people through visits to hospitals or to their villages assert that incest is not unusual between brother and sister and among other relatives."² Esthonian girls are unchaste before the age of puberty.³

The girls of the lower classes in Cochin China sometimes marry in their seventh year.⁴ Turcoman girls reach puberty generally between fourteen and sixteen years of age; but they are very often married earlier, the usual age being from twelve to fifteen.⁵

¹ Bogoras, *Jesup Exped.* vii. 37, 361; *Amer. Anthropol. N. S.* iii. 102.

² Laufer, *Amer. Anthropol. N. S.* ii. 318.

³ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 235.

⁴ *Id.* 393, vaguely citing Crawford.

⁵ Volkov, *L'Anthropol.* viii. 356, citing Yavorsky.

Among the Samoyeds early marriages were formerly very common. A bride-price was paid, and girls were disposed of often as young as six or seven years, in order that the bridegroom might be sure of his bride's virginity.¹ A similar reason is given by Plutarch in his comparison of Numa and Lycurgus for the Roman fathers' practice of giving their daughters in marriage at the age of twelve or under. But in early times Roman brides were probably taken much younger than that. As a juridical writer has pointed out, a consideration of the regulations for the profession of vestal virgins leads to the conclusion that Roman girls were taken as brides as young as six years of age. Numa's traditional legislation raised the age to the twelfth year; but seeing that the year at that time numbered only ten months, even that legislation legalised marriage in the bride's tenth year. It is of course possible that consummation was postponed; but was it always postponed until after puberty?² We may note that even down to the Reformation and later girls were sometimes married before puberty. Illustrations are to be found in all collections of European laws and all literatures.

Passing to the East Indian Islands, we are told that in the Dutch possessions long before maturity children indulge in sexual intercourse, and it is by no means uncommon for brother and sister to commit incest at five or six years old.³ On the island of

¹ Kahle, *Zeits. des. Vereins*, xi. 442, citing de la Martinière, a traveller of the seventeenth century. It does not appear that consummation immediately followed; but it probably took place before maturity.

² S. Brassloff, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xxii. 144.

³ Ploss, *Weib*, i. 301, citing vaguely van der Burg.

Engano, according to Modigliani, what we understand by morality does not exist ; and he gives reasons for believing that even quite young children (*bambine*) could give points to the most abandoned women of Europe.¹ In the Barito River Basin of Borneo children are often married at three or five years. After marriage they are indeed often, but not always, separated until puberty. At every opportunity however their mutual relation is revealed to them. " Besides, they frequently meet each other ; and it is seen with pleasure when there arises a certain familiarity not agreeing with our ideas of morality." ² The Banyanese of the same island marry in their eighth or ninth year.³ Among the Achehnese where child-marriage is frequent girls of eight to ten, nay even of seven years of age, are actually handed over to their husbands even when the latter are adult or elderly men. So universal is this custom that parents whose daughter at the age of eight to ten years does not occasionally share her husband's bed are greatly concerned thereat, unless there are special reasons for her not doing so, as where though formally married to a man at a great distance he has not yet arrived to take possession of her, being prevented by the distance or by the small local wars so frequent before the Dutch succeeded in establishing their rule.⁴ In several districts of the island of Serang girls' teeth are filed before puberty. When the work is accomplished, the patient goes to bathe and is clad in festival array

¹ Modigliani, *Isola*, 139.

² Roth, *Sarawak*, ii. clxxix. translating Schwaner.

³ Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 394, citing vaguely Finke.

⁴ Hurgronje, i. 295.

adorned with gold and silver armlets or necklaces, with gold hairpins and combs. A feast is then prepared and a little of every kind of food is placed in a bamboo vessel or sieve which an old woman shakes thrice over the girl's head. The latter must afterwards taste it all. The women bring forward an earthen pot filled with spring-water and covered with a fresh pisang-leaf. One of the old women takes the index-finger of the girl's right hand and sticks it through the leaf in proof that she is still a maid, and as a symbol of the rupture of the hymen or to show that the possession of virginity means nothing for her. The leaf is subsequently put on the ridge of the house between the sago leaves wherewith the roof is thatched. Thereupon the women present fall to eating and drinking. When they have finished they start singing to the accompaniment of drums. The men are admitted to the house. From that moment free intercourse with men is permitted to the *débutante*, even before the menses show themselves. In some villages the old men have unhindered access that very evening to her apartment, while the guests amuse themselves with singing outside. In most places on the island girls before puberty are accustomed to practise copulation with adult and old men, the object being, it is said, to promote their growth: nay, they are often even married and the marriage consummated.¹

Little importance is attached by the Tami Islanders off the north-eastern coast of New Guinea to a girl's unchastity before puberty, though when the critical period is reached her parents keep her more to the house and limit her intercourse with

¹ Riedel, 137, 96, 134.

her previous playfellows. The object of doing so however is rather to secure her instruction in her duties as house-wife than to prevent accidents arising from sexual indulgence, for she is quite free to sleep in a small separate hut and there to receive her lovers at night. She is speedily married, and the husband troubles very little about her previous life: girls are said to be few, and there is not much choice.¹ The same want of women is felt on the Gazelle Peninsula in the Bismarck Archipelago. To secure a girl the bride-price is paid for her while she is still a child. As soon as she is a little bigger she is delivered over to her husband, and whether she has reached maturity or not is quite unimportant.² In the New Hebrides on the island of Malekula there seems to be no betrothal, but girls are married when about six or eight years of age.³ In New Caledonia little regard is paid to virginity: a girl loses it in playing about at a very early age.⁴ On the Murray Islands, Torres Straits, "absence of the menstrual function was not considered a hindrance to marriage."⁵ Across the Straits in Queensland it is the rule in at least all the northern tribes that a little girl may be given to and will live with her spouse long before she reaches the age of puberty. Outside formal marriage the elder men may in some tribes tamper with young girls of the proper

¹ Kohler, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 345, quoting report of a missionary.

² Meier, *Anthropos*, ii. 380. A similar report is given by a missionary writing about the New Britain group in general terms and giving instances within his own knowledge (*J. A. I.* xviii. 288).

³ *Rep. Austr. Ass.* iv. 704.

⁴ Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 309.

⁵ *J. A. I.* xviii. 11.

marriageable class with impunity; indeed quite young children are handed over to the old men to be "broken in."¹ Among some of the tribes of South Australia the girls are said to be accustomed to sexual intercourse from their eighth year: they marry and cohabit regularly with their husbands at the age of from eight to twelve.² On Easter Island the women are comparatively few. It is said that they number only one third of the population. Whether, as has been surmised, it is attributable to this or not, the girls are married at ten years old, long before they are sufficiently developed. Their children are consequently weak and unhealthy; and there is great mortality from scrofulous disease in the children and from phthisis in the adults.³ On Yaluit, one of the Marshall Islands, we learn, no value was attached to the chastity of the unmarried girls; sexual intercourse begins with the first stirrings of nature before menstruation. It is universally believed that there is no girl of twelve who has not been deflowered; and contagious sexual diseases have been found among children of ten.⁴ The Igorots of the province of Benguet and the sub-province of Lepanto in Luzon, the largest of the Philippine Islands, betroth their children at a very early age, and marry them at or even before the age of

¹ Roth, *Bull.* v. 23 (s. 83); viii. 9 (s. 10).

² Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 392, citing Hersbach (a second-hand authority). Ploss (*op. cit.* i. 296) states on the authority of somebody, apparently Eyre, that the Australian girl has intercourse from her tenth year with youths of fourteen or fifteen. If Eyre be his source he is doubtless referring to south-eastern tribes.

³ *J. A. I.* v. 112, 113, summarising Dr. Philippi's work on Easter Island published at Santiago in 1873.

⁴ Kohler, *Zeits. vergl. Rechtsw.* xiv. 417, quoting a report by an official.

puberty.¹ Child-marriage is also common among the Tagbanúa.² On the Sandwich Islands the girls marry before puberty; and according to a writer cited by Ploss menstruation is held to be the result of coition, and its appearance in an unmarried girl is taken as a sign of misconduct.³

In Madagascar, children are betrothed by their parents while very young, and even married totally irrespective of their inclinations, and often before they are able to understand the nature of the engagement into which they are entering.⁴ Independently of this, public opinion tolerated until lately licentiousness among them. Of the Valave, one of the Malagasy tribes, it is recorded in particular that the children copulate at a very early age without any interference by their parents, who indeed encourage and take a positive pleasure in watching them. To these customs the comparative sterility of the women is not without reason ascribed.⁵

Precocious intercourse of the sexes is, as might be expected, very common on the continent of Africa. At Thebes in ancient times a beautiful girl of noble family and tender years was regularly dedicated at the

¹ Worcester, *Philippine Journ. Science*, i. (Manila, 1906) 850.

² McGee, *Amer. Anthr. N. S.* i. 172, citing Worcester, *Phil. Ids.*

³ Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 235. In face of the known character of the Sandwich Islanders I do not understand how the sexual intercourse of an unmarried girl can be deemed misbehaviour. Unfortunately, for reasons already given, I am unable to check Ploss's statement.

⁴ Ellis, *Hist. Mad.* i. 167.

⁵ Sibree, *J. A. I.* ix. 39; Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 301, citing vaguely Audebert. The latter gives details which I forbear to transcribe. Sibree, *Great Afr. Isl.* 248, ascribes the sterility of the Malagasy partly to the frequent marriages of relations and partly to the cause mentioned above. *Cf. Anthropos*, ii. 983.

temple of the god identified by Strabo with Zeus. She prostituted herself with any man according to her fancy until she reached the age of puberty. She was then mourned for as dead, and doubtless her place was supplied by another. The life she led does not seem to have hindered her subsequent marriage.¹ The Copts still marry their children as young as seven or eight years, and mothers are seen among them who are not more than twelve.² In Nubia not longer than a generation or two ago, girls used to be disposed of and accustomed to intercourse long before their first menstruation.³ In Abyssinia they are married before puberty, sometimes as early their ninth year.⁴ Among the Masai both boys and girls are circumcised. An uncircumcised boy is not permitted sexual intercourse with a circumcised woman, but no objection exists to his intercourse with any uncircumcised girl.⁵ The operation is performed on a girl shortly after her first menstruation. Previous to that as early as eight years old girls may be taken, as already observed, to live with the warriors in their kraal, where Sir Harry Johnston remarks they "have as agreeable a time of it as can be provided in Masai society." The sexual relations they sustain with the various inhabitants of the kraal are "considered in no way to be immoral, because the girls are under age and therefore cannot

¹ Strabo, xvii. 1, 46.

² Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 346, apparently on the authority of Frau von Minutoli.

³ Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 399, citing Abbadie.

⁴ Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 385, citing Ruppell, *Reise in Abyssinien*, ii. 50.

⁵ S. Bagge, *J. A. I.* xxxiv. 169. The Rev. J. Roscoe speaks of wives who do not menstruate among the Baganda (*Id.* xxxi. 121; xxxii. 39, 59); but it is not clear whether the absence of menstruation must be attributed to age or disease.

conceive." If puberty arrive before a girl quits the kraal precautions are taken against child-bearing, though that event does not seem to be very seriously regarded.¹ The customs among the Nandi are similar.² The Mpogoro girl in German East Africa reaches puberty in her tenth year. Long before that she is probably betrothed, for it is the custom for two friendly fathers to betroth their children, the son of one to the daughter of the other, from infancy. When the boy is able to work, about his seventh year, he serves his intended father-in-law for a twelvemonth. During or at the end of that time he builds a hut for himself and his bride, and there they go to reside about their seventh or eighth year. They sleep together and enjoy sexual intercourse until the girl's first menstruation. They are then separated until the bride-price be paid, after which the marriage is definitely concluded. To the European who remonstrates astonished and disgusted at this premature connection, saying: "But they are both mere children," the laconic answer is returned: "But for all that they are Wapogoro."³

Over nearly the whole of the province of British Central Africa, chastity is an unknown condition among little girls under the age of puberty, save perhaps among the Mang'anja. If not betrothed it is a matter of absolute indifference what she does before

¹ *Supra*, p. 193; Johnston, *Uganda*, ii. 824; Hollis, xvi. A story is told by the Masai to account for the custom, the gist of which is that it was instituted to provide an outlet for the feminine passions and prevent treachery for the purpose of gratifying them with hostile warriors (Hollis, 120).

² Johnston, *op. cit.* ii. 878; Hollis, *Nandi*, 16, 58.

³ Dr. Fabry, *Globus*, xci. 221.

she has reached maturity; consequently there is scarce a girl who remains a virgin after about five years of age. True, she is often betrothed at birth or when a few months old. In that case she will be delivered to her future husband's family at the age of four or five; and although she may not formally cohabit with him before puberty, it constantly happens that he deflowers her long before then.¹ At the harvest festival celebrated by the Azimba, a boy and a girl under the age of puberty are allowed to "keep house" by themselves during the daytime, and sexual intercourse often or always takes place. Some of the girls are betrothed and even married before puberty. In any case they are required to undergo the puberty ceremonies. If not previously deflowered, artificial defloration is then performed by the women. On the conclusion of the ceremonies a man is hired by the girl's father to have sexual intercourse with her on the following night, unless she already have a husband, in which case the latter performs this rite.² The ceremonies of the Wayao take place at an earlier age, "when the girl is very young, scarcely approaching" maturity. On her return home "she must find some man to be with her," otherwise she will die, or at any rate will not bear children. This ritual coition and consequently the entire rites are regarded as necessary to be performed before puberty. But though the ceremonies antedate that era of her life, she may have been already married and living with her husband;

¹ Johnston, *Brit. Cent. Afr.* 408 note.

² H. Crawford Angus, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* xxx. Verhandl. 480. This communication was made through Dr. R. Felkin, and may therefore be considered as stamped with his authority as well as that of the writer.

for a girl of only five years old may be married and cohabit with a youth who is much older : at the age of nine it is likely she will be.¹ In fact, on the Tanganyika plateau and in north-eastern Rhodesia Nyassaland and Portuguese Zambezia, it is a common custom for girls to be married and living with their husbands before puberty.² In the Transvaal the smallest Basuto children practise coition in secret ; boys give the girls beads brass wire and other trifles as hire.³ Of the people about Delagoa Bay, probably Baronga, Captain W. F. W. Owen reported in 1823 that both sexes during youth appeared to be without restraint, commencing their intercourse before their tenth year.⁴ Hottentot girls were married not seldom in their eighth or ninth year, Bushman girls still younger. The latter are sometimes mothers at twelve or even ten years of age.⁵

¹ Macdonald, *Africana*, i. 125, 146 ; Johnston, *Brit. Cent. Afr.* 410. The latter gives details of the rites, which are not unlike those of the Azimba except that they are performed on a batch of girls, whereas from the account cited above it would seem that the Azimba rites are performed on the girls individually as they arrive at maturity. He states the age of the Yao girl as from eight to eleven : at any rate it is before puberty. He implies that they are not yet married, but Mr. Macdonald's testimony is express.

² Declé, 293 ; Capt. C. H. Stigand, *J. A. I.* xxxvii. 121.

³ H. Grütznér, *Zeits. f. Ethnol.* ix. Verhandl. 83.

⁴ *Rec. S. E. Africa*, ii. 478. More than sixty years earlier the medical officer of a Dutch vessel wrecked on the same coast had reported that young girls of eleven and twelve were usually already lovers and were reckoned marriageable. They had, therefore, doubtless passed through the puberty ceremonies. They often bore children at twelve or thirteen and ceased by the time they were thirty (Jacob Francken, *Id.* vi. 496). Herero girls are married not older than twelve ; but here again it is probable that puberty has been attained (Fritsch, 235).

⁵ Ploss, *op. cit.* i. 397, citing vaguely Damberger for the former and Burchell for the latter.

If we turn to the forest lands and more richly watered provinces of the west of Africa we find among various tribes a similar condition of infantile morality. The children of the Bambala indulge in sexual intercourse from a very early age. The boys begin when about ten years old, the girls at six or seven, long before menstruation. Virginity, it need hardly be said, is not deemed of the slightest importance, and sexual excess is noted by observers as having an evil effect upon the mental and physical characters of the race.¹ The Bayaka, on the other hand, a neighbouring people consider virginity essential in a bride, and she can be repudiated if she be not found a maiden. At the same time we are told that "females are permitted to have intercourse at a very early age, even before menstruation; males after circumcision." This can only mean that the stricter morals of the Bayaka regard virginity as a more indispensable qualification of a bride than maturity.² On the Lower Congo there used to be in most towns bachelors' houses where the young men of the place slept. Girls under puberty had free ingress to these houses at night, and were even encouraged by their parents to go thither, "as it showed that they had proper desires and would eventually bear children."³ Among the Bashilanga the bride is bespoken early, and her wedding is frequently celebrated on the same day as the festival following her first menstruation. But already ere this she has had sexual intercourse: it is usually begun shortly before maturity.⁴ The Shekiani girls are married at seven or

¹ Torday and Joyce, *J. A. I.* xxxv. 410, 420.

² *Id.* *J. A. I.* xxxvi. 45, 51.

³ J. H. Weeks, *F. L.* xix. 418.

⁴ *Mittheil. Afrik. Gesell.* iv. 260, from the report of Pogge. There

eight years of age, before puberty.¹ Among the Mbondemos and the tribes about Corisco Bay young girls, quite children, are often married from political reasons to old men.² The sturdy tribe of the Fan practise the marriage of infant girls.³

The true Negroes present a picture not very different. Among the Agni of Indénié the sole condition requisite for marriage is the consent of both families. Betrothal often takes place during infancy. In such a case the bridegroom sometimes makes a few presents to the bride's family and she goes to live with him until she attains puberty. Either party may then refuse to make the marriage definitive on paying to the family of the other an indemnity of twenty-five francs.⁴ The Abron law considers impuberty an absolute bar to the marriage of a free girl; but she has a right to a *bon ami*, and can if he live in another village go and live with him for a fortnight or three weeks at a time. It is true that the relations between them are supposed to be purely platonic; for she is as a rule betrothed from birth and her affianced husband would have a right to impose a heavy fine on the lover who robbed him of his rights. It is another question how far the hypothesis usually corresponds to the fact. Marriage with a slave-girl, on the other hand, must be consummated before puberty, otherwise all the children must be put to death.⁵ The

does not seem to be any reason for the question raised by the editor of the report as to the consistency of Pogge's statements.

¹ Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 384 citing Du Chaillu, *Ashango*, 162.

² *Id.* 366, citing the same, 51.

³ Kingsley, *Trav.* 404. The Benga and Igalwa are also addicted to it, but it is said to be a recent innovation (*Ibid.* 402).

⁴ Clozel, 149.

⁵ *Ibid.* 194, 195.

customs of the Mande of Bonduku are similar. The girl chooses her *bon ami* at the age of nine or ten: she prepares his food and passes every night with him. In these circumstances, despite the possibility of a sound thrashing by the bridegroom when he finds that he has been anticipated, the temptation must be such as a Negro temperament can hardly resist. Among the Mande, moreover, although in theory impuberty constitutes a bar to marriage, in practice there is no such hindrance to it. As among the Abrons, the only real obstacle is the bride's desire to preserve her freedom as long as possible; and means are doubtless found to overcome her resistance.¹ In the kingdom of Bouna there is no minimum age. A boy is marriageable as soon as he has been circumcised, and a girl immediately after suffering the corresponding operation. These rites are performed at different ages according to convenience.² Nor in Seguela is there any downward limit of age; as soon as the bride-price is paid the husband can have possession. To be sure the consent of the bride is required by law; but her father obtains that by hook or by crook.³ Among the Alladians the bride must be delivered to her husband before the first menstruation. In practice betrothal often takes place while very young. From the moment it is completed by a small gift to the head of the girl's family, her father and her mother, the bridegroom is liable to her maintenance. Naturally therefore he expects possession with the least possible delay; and it is given as soon as she is deemed strong enough.⁴ The Bagos on the River Nunez, unite

¹ Clozel, 279, 280.

² *Ibid.* 309.

³ *Ibid.* 329.

⁴ *Ibid.* 394, 393.

children of seven or eight years old, and the formal marriage is celebrated as soon as the girl has lost her virginity.¹ In Sierra Leone girls are betrothed early, often before birth; and on the betrothal of an infant girl she is at once given over to the bridegroom.²

Among several of the American peoples little regard is paid to puberty in their sexual relations. Child-marriages are common among the Eskimo between the lower Yukon and the Kuskokwim. The boy goes to live at his father-in-law's house and "transfers filial duty of every kind" from his own father to his wife's father. In such cases the girl is frequently not over four or five years of age.³ Among the Indians dwelling to the south-west of the Ungava district "girls are often taken as wives before they attain puberty, and for this reason they seldom have large families," two three or four children being the usual number. The Nenenot girls "arrive at puberty at the age of fourteen or fifteen, and are taken as wives at even an earlier age. So early are they taken in marriage that before they are thirty years of age they often appear as though they were fifty."⁴ Among the Northern Maidu of the foot-hill region girls were often given in marriage when only six or eight years of age.⁵ We have already studied the Zuñi customs. Among them "marriage usually occurs at very tender years, girls frequently

¹ Post, *Afr. Jur.* i. 366, citing Caillié, i. 243, 244.

² *Ibid.* 366, 369, citing Winterbottom, 200; and Matthews, 124.

³ Nelson, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xviii. 291. It is not quite clear from the author's expressions whether intercourse is permitted below puberty. It is not at all events distinctly disclaimed, and we are probably right in assuming it.

⁴ Turner, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xi. 183, 271.

⁵ Dixon, *Bull. Am. Mus. Nat. Hist.* xvii. 240.

marrying two years before reaching puberty," and as we have seen they are not prolific.¹ The Creeks were a polygamous people. Every man took as many wives as he chose; but they were only married for a year, the relation being renewable at the end of that time by the will of the parties. It was common for a man of position who had already half a dozen wives to marry a child of eight or nine years of age, if he found one who pleased him and with whose family he could arrange the matter. Since she entered his house on marriage consummation presumably followed without delay.² In one of the Bororo villages in Central Brazil girls of eight and ten years were found already married. There is some reason to think this an exceptional case, due to the scarcity of women. It shows however that there was no invincible repugnance to such early unions.³ Among the Guatos about the confluence of the San Lourenço and the Paraguay rivers it is the practice to marry girls of from five to eight years, or at least to buy them from their parents. A traveller quoted by Ploss was witness to actual intercourse in one such case, while in every camp little girls were to all appearance thus used.⁴

Thus without prolonging the list it would appear that sexual intercourse before puberty is either fully recognised by a formal marriage or tolerated as the gratification of a natural instinct among a great variety of peoples in all quarters of the world. The acts of coition in such cases would not merely be unproductive of children, they would, as noted by several observers

¹ Mrs. Stevenson, *Rep. Bur. Ethn.* xxiii. 303.

² Bartram, 513.

³ von den Steinen, 501.

⁴ Ploss, i. 399, citing vaguely Rohde.

cited in the foregoing pages, tend to lessen the reproductive power of the race. Other causes operating in the same direction have also been suggested. Whatever the cause, when the fertility of the race was small—that is to say, when the number of acts of sexual union exceeded by an abnormal and overwhelming proportion the result in child-birth—the connection between cause and effect would long remain unnoticed.

It might be thought that the relation between the menses and the reproductive powers would be speedily traced. So far, however, is this from being the case that it has not even yet been discovered everywhere. The natives on the Tully River in North Queensland attribute menstruation to the breaking and discharge of the liver. “What causes the breakage the women do not know. They maintain however that it has nothing to do with pregnancy, though they admit its non-existence during that physiological period.” They declare that they can stop their menses by standing under a particular kind of gum-tree and allowing some of its sticky exudation to fall upon them. This procedure is said to be resorted to in order to enable them to walk about at all times without inconvenience. On the Pennefather River the menses are said to be produced by a kind of curlew operating on the woman.¹ It is needless to remind the reader that the Sandwich Islanders hold the menses, as stated a few pages back, to be the result of sexual intercourse. The horror of blood and especially of menstrual blood is universal in the lower culture. It usually causes women to be severed entirely from the men during the flow: a practice which, to say the least of it, would not

¹ Roth, *N. Queensl. Ethnog. Bull.* v. 22, s. 80.

tend to elucidate the relation between menstruation and conception.

In the long run to be sure the true cause of birth was discovered. But such was the force of tradition that it has nowhere been recognised without the important qualification that though sexual intercourse may now be the ordinary method of fertilisation, it has not always been a condition precedent to child-birth, and other causes are still operative to which the same result is attributable. Even at the present day the Arunta invariably ascribe birth to a totally different cause;¹ and it is important in this connection as showing their ignorance on the subject to note that they date conception from the time when the woman becomes conscious of pregnancy—that is to say, from quickening. In this respect they resemble the Bahau of Central Borneo, who, according to Nieuwenhuis, have no notion of the real duration of pregnancy, dating its commencement only from the time it first becomes

¹ *Supra*, vol. i. p. 238. Mr. Strehlow has not been able to find confirmation of Messrs. Spencer and Gillen's report that the Arunta hold intercourse to be merely a preparation of the woman for the reception and birth of a spirit-child already formed and inhabiting one of the local totem-centres. It is possible this report is due to a misunderstanding. An objection urged (*J. A. I.* xxxv. 329) to the Arunta theory of birth, that the Arunta would be much astonished if a woman not "prepared" for motherhood by intercourse with men received and gave birth to a spirit-child, is of no weight. They would indeed be astonished, because *every woman has sexual intercourse.* But every woman does not bear in consequence.

Mr. Strehlow, like Mr. Lang, hints that the Arunta are not so innocent as they pretend: so difficult is it for a white man to imagine the ignorance of the savage—a difficulty not confined to the subject under consideration. But the similar (often virtually identical) reports concerning the ignorance of other Australian tribes are strong confirmation of the reports of Arunta ignorance.

visible.¹ The Niol-Niol of Dampier Land in north-western Australia likewise hold birth to be wholly independent of sexual intercourse. A man who has never had intercourse with one of his wives is not surprised, and no suspicion is awakened in his mind, if she give birth to a child. For a child is not begotten by coition. It is engendered by conveyance into the mother's body of a previously existing soul called a Raia which has the power of assuming a body in this way: a result only to be effected through the instrumentality of the medicine man.²

The North Queenslander about Cape Bedford believes that babies are made in the distant west, where the sun sets, by nature-spirits living in the dense scrub, who enter women either in shape of a curlew, or rather of a spur-winged plover, if a girl, or of a pretty snake, if a boy, and there return to the human form which properly belongs to them and so in due time are born as children. So far from having attained a true solution of the mystery of child-birth are these unsophisticated natives that they believe a child thus conceived to be sent in answer to the husband's prayer as a punishment to his wife when he

¹ *Globus*, lxxxvi. 381, citing Nieuwenhuis, *Quer durch Borneo* (Leiden, 1904). The ignorance of the Bahau extends to other details of the mechanism of conception. On the other hand so little is pregnancy understood that among various peoples it is believed to be often of what we know to be unnatural length. Thus the Mohammedan law, as we have seen, recognises the possibility of a very extended gestation (*supra*, vol. i. p. 321). The Hos of Togoland affirm that pregnancy in many cases extends for fourteen fifteen or even sixteen months (Spieth, 198).

² Father Jos. Bischofs, *Anthropos*, iii. 35. The beliefs of other natives of Western Australia to the same effect have already been discussed, *supra*, vol. i. p. 243.

is vexed with her. When at night they hear a plover crying out they will say: "Hallo! there's a baby somewhere about." If a woman out hunting see a snake of the species referred to she will run away; her companions will search for the creature—possibly she herself may join them—and if it cannot be found they know that it has reached its destination and the future mother is pregnant. The Pennfather blacks hold that babies are fashioned out of swamp-mud by a supernatural being called Anjea and secretly inserted in the women, who are unconscious of the fact at the time. Thunder, who in the beginning formed Anjea himself, also continues his procreative work in the same manner and from the same material as the latter; but there is this difference between his workmanship and Anjea's that the babies he makes are all left-handed whereas those which owe their origin to Anjea are right-handed. On the Proserpine River a supernatural being named Kunya forms the babies out of pandanus roots and inserts them into the women while they bathe.¹ He obtains the vital spirit from the after-birth of the child's reputed human father if the child be a boy, or if a girl from that of the reputed father's sister, the hiding-place of which he knows.² At Cape Grafton a species of pigeon brings the baby ready made to the mother in the course of a dream.³ We have in a previous chapter considered the beliefs of the Tully River blacks which are equally wide of the truth.⁴ In north-west-central Queensland so

¹ Roth, *N. Queensl. Ethnog. Bull.* v. 23, ss. 82, 83.

² *Id.* 18, s. 69a.

³ *Id.* 22, s. 81.

⁴ *Supra*, vol. i. pp. 52, 119. They are aware, however, that the ordinary means of generation apply to the lower animals; that it is

profound is the ignorance of the physiological laws of reproduction that even the possibility of taking artificial measures to prevent fertilisation is apparently beyond the native's comprehension. White managers of pastoral stations declare that only with great difficulty, if at all, could the blacks in their employ be made to understand the object of spaying cattle.¹

Nor are these the only Australian tribes which ascribe their little ones to the direct mechanical intervention of supernatural beings. At the other extremity of Queensland, just across the southern border in New South Wales, the Euahlayi hold that babies, perhaps baby-spirits (for this is what they are called by the lady from whom our information is derived), are manufactured at special centres. Somewhere on the Culgoa River baby-girls are made. Bahloo the moon is their author, assisted by Wahn the crow. Sometimes however Wahn presumes to make them on his own account, with the dire result that the babies he makes always prove noisy and quarrelsome women. There is in one of the creeks a hole which is only to be seen when the river-bed is dry. As the

different with human beings is a mark of their superiority (Roth, *Bull.* v. s. 81). A similar opinion seems to be held by some of the Arunta (Strehlow, ii. 52).

¹ Roth, *Ethnol. Studies*, 179, s. 320. They understood abortion, which is quite a different thing. Attention may perhaps be drawn in this connection to the general ignorance in the lower culture on a kindred subject. It might be supposed that the cause of venereal disease would be fairly obvious. Yet it is very commonly ascribed, like many other diseases, to witchcraft. Of many peoples is probably true what a well-informed observer in the latter part of the eighteenth century asserts emphatically of the natives of Sierra Leone, among whom venereal disease was frequent, that they cannot be "convinced that it proceeds from impure coition" (Matthews, 136).

water runs along the bed and fills this hole a stone gradually rises with it from the hole, keeping its top clear. It is Goomarh, the spirit-stone of Bahloo, which no mortal would dare to touch; for from this stone the baby-girls are launched upon their mission of incarnation. The wood-lizard Boomayahmayahmul is the principal artificer of boy-babies, assisted from time to time by Bahloo. The babies, boy and girls, when thus made are usually despatched to another being who rejoices in the name of Waddahgudjaelwon. She in turn sends them to hang on *coolabah* (eucalyptus?) trees until some woman passes under them, when they immediately pounce on her and enter her womb. Sometimes two drop from the same branch and enter the same woman: then she bears twins. Every child born in this way has a coolabah leaf in its mouth at birth; and one of the attendant women proceeds to remove it. The whirlwind-spirit Wurrawilberoo, who seems to have his normal residence in two dark spots in the constellation Scorpio, sometimes snatches up a baby-spirit and whirls it along to a woman against whom he has a grudge. Now and then he seizes two and gives her twins. Bahloo has also a spiteful way of punishing a woman for having the temerity to stare at him by sending her twins. A child who dies young is born again. If this were all, the theory of the Euahlayi would hardly differ from that of the Arunta or the blackfellows of Northern Queensland. But it seems that they do regard a human father as usual and regular; for only those children who are born with teeth are definitely said to be born without sexual intercourse; and such babes are put to death. What part the

human father exactly plays we are not told. His power would be naught without the assistance of the makers and distributors of babies whose complicated proceedings have been described. On the whole it looks as if these proceedings embody the earlier guesses of the people at the mystery of birth, through which they are dimly beginning to perceive the real concatenation of cause and effect.¹

Of no other people than the Australian blackfellows have we such definite evidence that reproduction is held to be independent of coition. The wonder is, after making all allowance for the slow progress of knowledge, that any tribe can yet be found ignorant that the cause of birth is the union of the sexes. Elsewhere however traces of this ignorance have been found. It is questionable whether the Seri of the Californian Gulf have any clear recognition of paternity.² On the Slave Coast of West Africa, "the Awunas, an eastern Ewhe tribe, say that the lower jaw is the only part of the body which a child derives from its mother, all the rest being derived from the ancestral *luwhoo* (the Tshi *Kra*). The father furnishes nothing."³ Their kinsmen the Hos of Togoland go further. Though on a higher step of civilisation than the Queenslanders they attribute as little of the child as the latter even to the mother. It is their belief

¹ Parker, *Euahlayi*, 50, 51, 52, 61, 98.

² McGee, *Rep. Bur. Ethnol.* xvii. 272*. Dr. McGee bases his opinion, to some extent at any rate, on philological grounds. Whether he has any direct evidence I do not know. The extreme rudeness of the Seri and the overwhelmingly preponderant position of women in their social organisation lend strong colour to the supposition of their ignorance (*supra*, p. 78).

³ Ellis, *Yoruba*, 131 note.

that God makes babies out of the under-jaws of deceased members of the same family, supplying the muscles and other fleshy parts from potter's clay, which he kneads to the right shape, and then secretly inserts them thus made in the tiniest possible human form into the womb.¹ The Indians on the Amazon River do indeed recognise paternity as a present phenomenon, but they account for the various objects of the universe by motherhood alone: the sun is the mother of the living beings and the moon of vegetables unassisted by any masculine power.² Thus while they have come to recognise the common course of nature to-day they still hesitate to attribute the same conditions to the sacred objects of their faith. The notion of paternity is absent from the Toda word for *father*:³ hence the father obtained for the expected child by means of the bow-and-arrow ceremony is not a begetter but merely a man who undertakes certain duties with regard to mother and offspring, and as often as not is not the real parent. Indeed, while the word for *mother* in

¹ Spieth, 558. It seems to be for this reason that the under-jaws of fallen foes adorn their sacred ivory trumpets and drums as trophies of victory, for in this way it may be suggested they would be kept out of reach of the procreating divinity (H. Klose, *Globus*, lxxxix. 12). Among the Guans, another branch of the Ewhe, the god appears not to restrict himself to under-jaws of the same family in fabricating new human human beings (*cf. supra*, vol. i. p. 246, where the word *goddess* is an error for *god*). The under-jaw of a dead king of the Baganda used always to be cut off at burial and preserved in a wooden dish (Cunningham, 226). This is comprehensible if the jaw were deemed necessary for the continuation of his posterity.

² Nery, 250. In the same way a hero of the Narrinyeri is declared to have no father, only a mother (Taplin, *Narrinyeri*, 43). He is now a star.

³ Rivers, *Todas*, 517 note.

most if not all languages means producer, procreatrix, it is probable that in very many the word for *father* means in its origin no more than elder man,¹ or provider, and is quite unconnected with the notion of begetting. But philological considerations cannot here be discussed. Enough has been said to prove that the physiological process of conception is not recognised even yet by various Australian tribes, and to render it doubtful how far the relation of father and child is understood by peoples in other parts of the world.

The argument which I have endeavoured to put before the reader may now be recapitulated.

We set out to investigate stories found in every part of the world attributing the birth of a hero to supernatural impregnation of his mother. These narratives are not merely ebullitions of the fancy, tales told for the pleasure of telling. Many of them are soberly credited by nations in various stages of civilisation. They frequently form part of the sacred store of religious tradition, and the main incident has been taken up into Christianity. Turning to practical superstitions we found means for producing children, analogous and even identical with those described in the stories, actually in use as widely as the stories themselves. We found, moreover, a number of precautions against such impregnation, as well as similar beliefs with regard to the impregnation of certain of the lower animals.

Among the stories many either explicitly or implicitly identify the hero thus supernaturally born as a new birth of a dead man or some other animal. The

¹ As among the Yakut (Sumner, *J. A. I.* xxxi. 92 ; cf. 80).

next step of investigation therefore was to inquire into the range and meaning of stories in which the hero passes through series of transformations by means of death and a fresh birth. These tales, like the others previously examined, were found to be practically universal in their distribution, and in a very large number of cases seriously believed. They were inseparably connected too with widely extended beliefs, often compendiously but not quite accurately designated the Belief in Transmigration of Souls and the Belief in Reincarnation. Both in the tales and in the creeds (if creeds they may be called) it was by no means uncommon to find that the new birth took place independently of procreation by the union of the sexes, and in no few instances by the mere volition of the personage thus to be born again.

These stories and beliefs amount together to a great body of traditional philosophy, confined not to one race or country but common to mankind. To all appearance this philosophy must be based on ignorance of the physiological law of reproduction. Ignorance so profound however seems to us incredible. We therefore proceeded to examine social institutions in order to ascertain whether they gave any countenance to the hypothesis. It was not necessary to inquire how kinship first came to be recognised. Whatever the history of its recognition kinship can only be reckoned in one of three ways. It may be reckoned through the father only, through the mother only, or through both parents. In all the higher civilisations kinship is reckoned through both parents, but where the earlier stages of culture have not been passed kinship is usually reckoned only through one.

Anthropological research has abundantly demonstrated that among the lowest races kinship is with some exceptions reckoned exclusively through the mother, and where it is reckoned exclusively through the father there are generally indications of a previous stage in which it was reckoned through the mother ; whereas the contrary case of kinship reckoned through the mother with traces of a previous reckoning through the father is not known to exist. We are accordingly justified in postulating the reckoning of kinship through the mother (called *motherright*) as the earlier. In strict *motherright* the father is not considered as belonging to the kin of the children, the headship of the family is vested in the mother's brothers or maternal uncles, the father does not transmit his name or property to his children ; on the other hand, he is often placed by the operation of the blood-feud in an antagonistic position towards them.

We examined the theory which accounts for *motherright* as founded on the uncertainty of paternity and rejected it on the ground that while *motherright* prevails not only where paternity is uncertain but also where it is practically certain, the opposite organisation of *fatherright* is founded on no guarantee of certainty. On the contrary, licence is often as great in *fatherright* as in *motherright* and the legal father may be perfectly well known not to have begotten the children. Without pretending to trace exhaustively the history of the transition from *motherright* to *fatherright*, we considered some of its stages and came to the conclusion that whereas *motherright* was founded on the recognition of a common blood, *fatherright* was traceable to social and economic causes of a different

character, that no assertion of a common blood was implied in fatherright, but that it was an artificial organisation formed upon the analogy of the organisation of motherright which it supplanted.

Even where kinship is reckoned through the father then, as well as where it is reckoned through the mother, the question of actual paternity is little regarded. Children have their own value apart from the question whether they belong in blood to the stock, provided they can legally be counted to it. That value often increases rather than diminishes with the rise of fatherright. The necessity of having issue to carry on the property and the religious duties of the family is supreme. It is no objection to a child's sonship that he has none of his legal father's blood in his veins: he is legally his son and has the legal rights of a son all the same, and even though the father may be quite conscious that he had no share in begetting him. The child's sufficient title is to have been born of the father's legal wife.

But though economic and religious needs may thus foster indifference on the subject of paternity, this carelessness could hardly have arisen—at all events it could not be so widely prevalent—if the relation of a father had been as well understood as the relation of a mother to the offspring. The same ignorance which appears to be involved in the stories of supernatural birth and the practices correlative therewith, the same ignorance which is exhibited in the stories of metamorphosis by death and new birth and in the belief in metempsychosis and reincarnation, is thus stamped upon the social organisation of the lower culture. Nor does the transition from motherright to father-

right of necessity imply any change in this respect. So far diffused is the evidence of ignorance that such ignorance must have been universal ; so deeply rooted is it that it must have prevailed through many ages. The question of paternity is not one that would have early engaged the attention of mankind. It needed close and persistent observation ; it would have been obscured by subjects more immediately urgent ; and if savage society still preserve the main lines of primitive institutions the sexual customs of that archaic period must have involved it in such complexity as would have been almost impossible to unravel. Nor even yet have various tribes, especially in Australia, succeeded in penetrating the mystery. It is true that most of the races of mankind have in course of time attained a rough and elementary knowledge of the laws of reproduction. But the consequences in the traditions—whether stories beliefs institutions or practices—of mankind of the long reign of ignorance have not disappeared, and it is probable that some of them are destined to last as long as the human race. Sexual morality may be improved, husbands may no longer recognise children whom they are conscious they have not begotten, kinships may come to be everywhere formally reckoned through both parents, the efforts of women to obtain children by magical means may cease, child-birth from other than natural causes may be scornfully repudiated as a contemporaneous possibility. But conservative prejudice religious awe the delight in miracle for its own sake the laziness of mind which prefers to believe what somebody else has affirmed and will not take the trouble to examine the evidence are more tenacious

of their existence than the lowest physical organisms. They will long continue to accept as actual historical events some tales of the supernatural birth of extraordinary personages in the far and misty past, or to insist that after all there may be "something in" the theory of reincarnation invented to solve the moral and material problems of the universe at a period when imagination ruthlessly overtopped reason and knowledge was limited indeed. And when even these relics of primeval ignorance and archaic speculation shall have been gathered to the limbo of vain and discarded opinions the stories enshrined in literature, adorned by genius and entwined with the dearest and most generous affections of the individual and the race will survive, imperishable until humanity itself shall pass away.

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL APPENDIX

It is intended in the following list to give only such bibliographical information as may facilitate reference to works cited in the foregoing pages and not there sufficiently described.

- ABERCROMBY, the Hon. JOHN. "The Pre- and Protohistoric Finns both Eastern and Western." Two vols. London, 1898.
- "L'Abrégé des Merveilles traduit de l'Arabe d'après les Manuscrits de la Bibliothèque Nationale de Paris." Par le Baron CARRA DE VAUX. Paris, 1898.
- ADDY, SIDNEY OLDALL. "Household Tales with other Traditional Remains." London, 1895.
- ALBERTI, LODEWYK. "De Kaffers aan de Zuidkust van Afrika." Amsterdam, 1810.
- ALEXANDER, Sir JAMES EDWARD. "An Expedition of Discovery into the Interior of Africa." Two vols. London, 1838.
- ALLEN, Capt. WILLIAM, and THOMSON, T. R. H. "A Narrative of the Expedition to the River Niger in 1841." Two vols. London, 1848.
- "American Anthropologist." New Series. Ten vols. New York, 1899-
- "American Antiquarian and Oriental Journal." vols. Chicago, 1879 (?)—
- "Am Urquell. Monatschrift für Volkskunde." Herausgegeben von FRIEDRICH S. KRAUSS. Six vols. Wien, 1890-96.
- ANDERSON, JOHN. "A Report on the Expedition to Western Yunan viâ Bhamô." Calcutta, 1871.
- ANDREE, RICHARD. "Braunschweiger Volkskunde." Braunschweig, 1896.
- "Zur Volkskunde der Juden." Bielefeld und Leipzig, 1881.
- ANDRIAN, FERD., Freiherr von. "Ueber Wortaberglauben." [Sonderabdruck aus d. Corresp.-Bl. der deutschen anthrop. Gesellschaft, No. 10, 1896.] München, 1896.
- ANNANDALE, NELSON, and ROBINSON, HERBERT C. "Fasciculi Malayenses." Anthropology. Two Parts. Liverpool, 1903.

- "L'Année Sociologique," publiée sous la direction de ÉMILE DURKHEIM. Ten vols. Paris, 1898-1907.
- "L'Anthropologie" paraissant tous les deux mois. Nineteen vols. Paris, 1890-
- "Anthropos. Ephemeris Internationalis Ethnologica et Linguistica." Four vols. Salzburg, Oesterreich, 1906-
- "Antiquary, The, a Magazine devoted to the study of the Past." Forty-four vols. London, 1880-
- D'ARBOIS DE JUBAINVILLE, H. "L'Épopée Celtique en Irlande." Tome Premier. Paris, 1892. [The only volume yet issued.]
- ARBER, EDWARD (Editor). "The first Three English books on America." Chiefly translations &c. by RICHARD DEAN. Westminster, 1895.
- "Archæologia: or Miscellaneous Tracts relating to Antiquity, published by the Society of Antiquaries of London." Sixty-one vols. London, 1773-
- "Archæological Review, The." Four vols. London, 1888-90.
- "Archiv für Anthropologie." N. F. Braunschweig. Eight vols. 1904- [The old series of twenty-eight vols. began in 1866].
- "Archives d'Anthropologie Criminelle." Twenty-four vols. Paris, 1886-
- "Archiv für Religionswissenschaft." Twelve vols. Freiburg i. B. 1898-
- "Archivio per lo Studio delle Tradizioni Popolari." Rivista trimestrale diritta da G. PITRÈ e SALOMONE-MARINO. Twenty-four vols. Palermo, 1882-
- ARNOT, FRED. S. "Garenganze, or Seven Years' Pioneer Mission Work in Central Africa." Second ed. London, N.D. [Preface dated 1889.]
- ASTON, W. G. "Nihongi. Chronicles of Japan from the Earliest times to A.D. 697," transld. by. Two vols. London, 1896 [Japan Soc.].
- "Shinto (The Way of the Gods)." London, 1905.
- AUBREY, JOHN. "Remaines of Gentilisme and Judaisme." 1686-87. Edited by JAMES BRITTEN, F.L.S. London, 1881. [Folklore Soc.]
- AYMONIER, ETIENNE. "Cochinchine Française. Excursions et Reconnaissances." vols. Saigon. [The only article cited is in No. 16 (1883). "Notes sur les Coutumes et Croyances Superstitieuses des Cambodgiens" par M. E. A.]
- BADGER, REV. GEORGE PERCY. "The Nestorians and their Ritual." Two vols. London, 1852.

- BANCROFT, HUBERT HOWE. "The Native Races of the Pacific States of North America." Five vols. London, 1875-6.
- BARTRAM, WILLIAM. "Travels through North and South Carolina" [&c.]. London, 1794.
- BARTON, GEORGE AARON. "A Sketch of Semitic Origins social and religious." New York, 1902.
- BASTIAN, ADOLF. "Indonesien, oder die Inseln des Malayischen Archipel." Five vols. Berlin, 1884-94.
- "Die deutsche Expedition an der Loango-Küste." Two vols. Jena, 1874-5.
- BATCHELOR, Rev. JOHN. "The Ainu and their Folk-Lore." London, 1901.
- BÉGUIN, EUGÈNE. "Le Marotsé: Etude géographique et ethnographique." Lausanne, 1903.
- "Beiträge zur Kolonialpolitik und Kolonialwirtschaft, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Kolonialgesellschaft." vols. Berlin, 1898-9-
- BELL, C. NAPIER. "Tangweera: Life and Adventures among Gentle Savages." London, 1899.
- BENTLEY, Rev. W. HOLMAN. "Pioneering on the Congo." Two vols. London, 1900.
- BÉRENGER-FÉRAUD, L. J. B. "Superstitions et Survivances étudiées." Five vols. Paris, 1895-1896.
- "Traditions et Reminiscences Populaires de la Provence." Paris, 1886.
- BERGEN, FANNY D. (Editor). "Current Superstitions collected from the Oral Tradition of English-speaking Folk." Boston and New York, 1896 [Amer. F. L. Soc.]
- "Bijdragen tot de Taal- Land- en Volkenkunde von Nederlandsch Indië, uitgegeven door het Koninklijk Instituut." 59 vols. 'SGravenhage, 1852-
- BINGER, le Capitaine. "Du Niger au Golfe de Guinée par le pays de Kong et le Mossi." Two vols. Paris, 1892.
- BOAS, FRANZ. "Chinook Texts." Washington [Bureau of Ethnology], 1894.
- "Indianische Sagen vor der Nord-Pacifischen Küste Americas." Berlin, 1895.
- "Kathlamet Texts." Washington, 1901 [Bureau of Ethnology, Bull. 26].
- BOURKE, JOHN G. "The Snake-dance of the Moquis of Arizona." London, 1884.
- BOWDICH, T. EDWARD. "Mission from Cape Coast Castle to Ashantee." London, 1819.

- BRADLEY-BIRT, F. B. "The Story of an Indian Upland." London, 1905.
- BRAND, JOHN. "Observations on Popular Antiquities," arranged and revised with additions by HENRY ELLIS. Two vols. London, 1813.
- BRETT, Revd. WILLIAM HENRY. "The Indian Tribes of Guiana; their condition and habits." London, 1868.
- "Legends and Myths of the Aboriginal Indians of British Guiana." London, N.D.
- BRINTON, DANIEL G. "American Hero-Myths. A study in the Native Religions." Philadelphia, 1882.
- "Essays of an Americanist." Philadelphia, 1890.
- "The Lenâpé and their Legends, with the complete text and symbols of the Walam Olum." Philadelphia, 1885.
- Brit. Ass. Rep. *see* Rep. Brit. Ass.
- BRUUN, DANIEL. "The Cave-Dwellers of Southern Tunisia," translated by L. A. E. B. London, 1898.
- BUDGE, E. A. WALLIS. "Egyptian Magic." London, 1899.
- "The Histories of Rabban Hôrmûzd the Persian and Rabban Bar-Idtâ:" The Syriac text with English translations. Two vols. London, 1902.
- "Bulletin of the American Museum of Natural History." vols. New York, 1881—
- "Bulletin de Folklore. Organe de la Société du Folklore Wallon." Three vols. Bruxelles, 1891—
- "Bulletin de la Société Neuchateloise de Géographie." vols. Neuchatel. 1889 (?)—
- BURTON, RICHARD F. "A Mission to Gelele, King of Dahomee." Two vols. London, 1864.
- "The Lake Regions of Central Africa." Two vols. London, 1860.
- "Wanderings in West Africa from Liverpool to Fernando Po," by A. R. G. S. Two vols. London, 1863.
- "Wit and Wisdom from West Africa." London, 1865.
- "Zanzibar: City, Island, and Coast." Two vols. London, 1872.
- BURGT, J. M. M. VAN DER. "Un grand Peuple de l'Afrique Equatoriale: Eléments d'une Monographie sur l'Urundi et les Warundi." Bois-le-Duc, 1904.
- CALLAWAY, Rev. Canon. "Nursery Tales and Histories of the Zulus in their own words." With a Translation and Notes. Vol. i. [all published]. London, 1868.

- CALLAWAY, Rev. Canon. "The Religious System of the Amazulu." Vol. i. [incomplete, all published]. London, 1870.
- CAMPBELL, JOHN. "Travels in South Africa, undertaken at the request of the Missionary Society." London, 1815.
- CASALIS, E. "Les Bassoutos." Paris, 1859. [English version, London, 1861.]
- CATLIN, GEORGE. "Illustrations of the Manners Customs and Condition of the North American Indians." Two vols. London, 1876.
- CHANDRA DAS, SARAT. "Journey to Lhasa and Central Tibet." Edited by the Hon. W. W. ROCKHILL. London, 1902.
- CHARENCEY, Comte H. DE. "Le Folklore dans les deux Mondes." Paris, 1894.
- CHARLEVOIX, le P. DE. "Histoire et Description Générale de la Nouvelle France." Six vols. Paris, 1744.
- CHATELAIN, HELI. "Folk-tales of Angola." Boston, 1894. [Amer. F. L. Soc.]
- CHAUVET, HORACE. "Folk-Lore Catalan: Légendes du Roussillon." Paris and Perpignan, 1899.
- CHILD, FRANCIS JAMES. "The English and Scottish Popular Ballads." Five vols. Boston and New York, N.D. [1882-98.]
- "Choice Notes from *Notes and Queries*: Folk-Lore." London, 1859.
- CHRISTIAN, F. W. "The Caroline Islands: Travel in the sea of the little lands." London, 1899.
- CLOZEL, F. J., ET VILLAMUR, ROGER. "Les Coutumes Indigènes de la Cote d' Ivoire." Paris, 1902.
- CODRINGTON, R. H. "The Melanesians: Studies in their Anthropology and Folk-Lore." Oxford, 1891.
- "Congress, The International Folklore, 1891. Papers and Transactions." Ed. by JOSEPH JACOBS and ALFRED NUTT. London, 1892.
- "Contributions to North American Ethnology." Nine vols. Washington, Department of the Interior, 1877-93.
- "Corpus Poeticum Boreale: The Poetry of the Old Northern Tongue from the earliest times to the thirteenth century," by GUDBRAND VIGFUSSON and F. YORK POWELL. Two vols. Oxford, 1883.
- "County Folk-Lore. Printed Extracts, No. 2, Suffolk." Ed. by the Lady EVELINE CAMILLA GURDON. London, 1893. [F. L. Soc.]
- CRANTZ, DAVID. "The History of Greenland." Trans. from the High Dutch. Two vols. London, 1767.

- CROOKE, WILLIAM. "The Popular Religion and Folklore of Northern India." Two vols. Westminster, 1896.
- "Things Indian: being discursive notes on various subjects connected with India." London, 1906.
- "The Tribes and Castes of the North-western Provinces and Oudh." Four vols. Calcutta, 1896.
- CRUICKSHANK, BRODIE. "Eighteen Years on the Gold Coast of Africa." Two vols. London, 1853.
- CUNNINGHAM, J. F. "Uganda and its Peoples." London, 1905.
- CURR, EDWARD M. "The Australian Race." Four vols. Melbourne and London, 1886-7.
- CURTIN, JEREMIAH. "Creation Myths of Primitive America." London, 1899.
- CURTISS, SAMUEL IVES. "Primitive Semitic Religion To-day." London, 1902.
- CUSHING, FRANK HAMILTON. "Zuñi Folk Tales." New York and London, 1901.
- CUZACQ, P. "La Naissance le Mariage et le Décès." Paris, 1902.
- DALTON, EDWARD TUITE. "Descriptive Ethnology of Bengal." Calcutta, 1872
- DAMES, M. LONGWORTH. "Popular Poetry of the Baloches." Two vols. in one. London, 1907 [F. L. Soc. : Vol. i. contains the translations and is alone cited].
- DANNERT, EDUARD. "Zum Rechte der Herero." Berlin, 1906.
- DAVIDS, T. W. RHYS. "Buddhist Birth Stories; or Jātaka Tales," transl. by. Vol. i. [all published] London, 1880.
- "Buddhism: being a Sketch of the Life and Teachings of Gautama the Buddha." London, N.D.
- DAVIDSON, JAMES W. "The Island of Formosa past and present." London and Yokohama, 1903.
- DAVY, JOHN. "An Account of the Interior of Ceylon and of its Inhabitants." London, 1821.
- DAWSON, JAMES. "Australian Aborigines." Melbourne, 1881.
- DAYÁ, DALPATRÁM. "Bhut Nibandh. Demonology [etc.] of Guzerat," transl. by ALEXANDER KINLOCH FORBES. Bombay, N.D.
- DEANS, JAMES. "Tales from the Totems of the Hidery." Chicago, 1899.
- DECLÉ, LIONEL. "Three Years in Savage Africa," London, 1898.
- "Denham Tracts, The." A Collection of Folklore by MICHAEL AISLABIE DENHAM, reprinted and Ed. by Dr. JAMES HARDY. Two vols. London, 1892-95 [F. L. Soc.].

- DENIS, FERDINAND. "Une Fête Brésilienne célébrée à Rouen en 1550." Paris, 1850.
- DENNETT, R. E. "At the Back of the Black Man's Mind." London, 1906.
- "Notes on the Folklore of the Fjort (French Congo)." London, 1898 [F. L. Soc.].
- DIETERICH, ALBERT. "Mutter Erde; ein versuch über Volksreligion." Leipzig und Berlin, 1905.
- DOBRIZHOFFER, MARTIN. "An Account of the Abipones of Paraguay," from the Latin of. Three vols. London, 1822.
- DOOLITTLE, Rev. JUSTUS. "Social Life of the Chinese." Two vols. London, 1866.
- DORMAN, RUSHTON M. "The Origin of Primitive Superstitions." Philadelphia, 1881.
- DORSEY, GEORGE A. "The Pawnee Mythology." Part I. [all published]. Washington, 1906 [Carnegie Institution].
- "Traditions of the Skidi Pawnee." Boston, 1904 ["Memoirs of Amer. F. L. Soc." vol. viii.]
- "The Mythology of the Wichita." Washington, 1904 [Carnegie Institution].
- DULAURE, J. A. "Des Divinités Génératrices chez les Anciens et les Modernes." Avec un chapitre complémentaire par A. VAN GENNEP. Paris, 1905.
- "Early Travels in Palestine." Ed. by THOMAS WRIGHT, London, 1848.
- EGEDE, HANS. "A Description of Greenland." London, 1818.
- EHRENREICH, PAUL. "Die Mythen und Legenden der Südamerikanischen Urvölker." Berlin, 1905.
- ELLIOT, Sir HENRY M. "Memoirs on the History, Folklore and Distribution of the Races of the North-Western Provinces of India." Ed. by JOHN BEAMES. Two vols. London, 1869.
- ELLIS, A. B. "The Ewe-speaking Peoples of the Slave Coast of West Africa." London, 1890.
- "The Tshi-speaking Peoples of the Gold Coast of West Africa." London, 1887.
- "The Yoruba-speaking Peoples of the Slave Coast of West Africa." London, 1894.
- ELLIS, WILLIAM. "Polynesian Researches." Four vols. London, 1831.
- "Narrative of a Tour through Hawaii." London, 1826.
- ELLIS, WILLIAM. "History of Madagascar." Two vols. London. N.D. [Preface dated 1838].

- ELWORTHY, FREDERICK THOMAS. "The Evil Eye." London, 1895.
- ELMSLIE, W. A. "Among the wild Ngoni." Edinburgh, 1901.
- "Emin Pasha in Central Africa," being a Collection of his Letters and Journals. Edited by Prof. G. SCHWEINFURTH, translated by Mrs. R. W. FELKEN. London, 1888.
- "English Historical Review, The." Twenty-four vols. London, 1886—
- ERMAN, ADOLPH. "Travels in Siberia." Trans. by W. D. COOLEY. Two vols. London, 1848.
- FARNELL, LEWIS RICHARD. "The Cults of the Greek States." Five vols. Oxford, 1896-1909.
- FEATHERMAN, A. "Social History of the Races of Mankind." Seven vols., not numbered but distinguished by the names of the races treated of. London, 1881-91.
- FERRAND, GABRIEL. "Contes Populaires Malgaches." Paris, 1893, "Field Columbian Museum [now Field Museum of Natural History], Publications of the. Anthropological Series." Nine vols. Chicago, 18—
- FINAMORE, GENNARO. "Tradizioni Popolari Abruzzesi." Torino, 1894.
- "Folk-Lore, a Quarterly Review of Myth Tradition Institution and Custom" [Organ of the F. L. Soc.]. Twenty vols. London, 1890—
- "Folk-Lore Journal, The" [Organ of the F. L. Soc.]. Seven vols. London, 1883-89.
- FORBES, ALEXANDER KINLOCH. "Râs Mâlâ; or Hindoo Annals of the Province of Goozerat." London, 1878.
- FOWLER, W. WARDE. "The Roman Festivals of the period of the Republic." London, 1899.
- FRAZER, J. G. "Adonis Attis Osiris: Studies in the History of Oriental Religion." Second ed. London, 1907.
- "The Golden Bough: a Study in Magic and Religion." Second ed. Three vols. London, 1900.
- FRIEND, Rev. HILDERIC. "Flowers and Flower Lore." Two vols. paged continuously. London, 1884.
- FRITSCH, GUSTAV. "Die Eingeborenen Süd-Afrikas." One vol. with atlas of portraits. Breslau, 1872.
- FROBENIUS, HERMAN. "Die Heiden-Niger des ägyptischen Sudan." Berlin, 1893.
- FROUDE, JAMES ANTHONY. "History of England from the Fall of Wolsey to the Defeat of the Spanish Armada." Twelve vols. London, N.D.

- GARCILASO DE LA VEGA. "First part of the Royal Commentaries of the Yncas." Transl. by CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM. Two vols. London, 1869 [Hakluyt Soc.].
- GARNETT, LUCY M. J. "The Women of Turkey and their Folklore." Two vols. London, 1890-91.
- GENNEP, ARNOLD VAN. "Tabou et Totémisme à Madagascar." Paris, 1904.
- "Gentleman's Magazine Library, The." Classified collection of the chief contents of the *Gentleman's Magazine* from 1731 to 1868, edited by GEORGE LAWRENCE GOMME. Thirty vols., not numbered, but distinguished by the titles of their contents. London, 1885-1905.
- GEORGEAKIS, G., et PINEAU, LEON. "Le Folk-Lore de Lesbos." Paris, 1894.
- GEORGI, J. "Description de toutes les Nations de l'Empire de Russie." Traduite de l'Allemand. St. Petersburg, 1777.
- GERVASE OF TILBURY. "Otia Imperialia. In einer Auswahl herausgegeben von FELIX LIEBRECHT." Hannover, 1856.
- "Globus: Illustrierte Zeitschrift für Länder- und Völkerkunde." Ninety-six vols. Braunschweig, 1862-
- GODDARD, PLINY EARL. "Life and Culture of the Hupa." Vol. i. of the Univ. California Pub.: *q.v.*
- GOMME (Mrs.) ALICE BERTHA. "The Traditional Games of England, Scotland and Ireland." Two vols. London, 1894-98.
- GRANADA, D. DANIEL. "Reseña Histórico-descriptiva de antiguas y modernas Supersticiones del Río de la Plata." Monte Video, 1896.
- GRAY, JOHN HENRY. "China: a History of the Laws, Manners and Customs of the People." Two vols. London, 1878.
- GREY, Sir GEORGE. "Polynesian Mythology and Ancient Traditional History of the New Zealand Race." London, 1855.
- GRIMM, JAKOB. "Deutsche Rechtsalterthümer." Göttingen, 1854.
- ; "Teutonic Mythology." Transl. from the 4th ed. by JAMES STEVEN STALLYBRASS. Four vols. paged continuously. London, 1880-88.
- GROOT, J. J. M. DE. "The Religious System of China." Five vols. published. The first three and the last two paged continuously. Leide, 1892-1907.
- GRUBB, W. BARBROOKE and his fellow workers. "Among the Indians of the Paraguayan Chaco." Ed. by GERTRUDE WILSON. London, 1904.

- GUBERNATIS, ANGELO DE. "La Mythologie des Plantes." Two vols. Paris, 1878-82.
- "Zoological Mythology." Two vols. London, 1872.
- GUPPY, H. B. "The Solomon Islands and their Natives." London, 1887.
- GURDON, Major P. R. T. "The Khasis." London, 1907.
- HAHN, FERDINAND. "Einführung in das Gebiet der Kolsmission." Gütersloh, 1907.
- HAHN, THEOPHILUS. "Tsunigoam, the Supreme Being of the Khoi-Khoi." London, 1881.
- HARRISON, JANE ELLEN. "Prolegomena to the Study of Greek Religion." Cambridge, 1908.
- HAUTTECŒUR, HENRY. "Le Folklore de l'Île de Kythnos." Bruxelles, 1898.
- HEWAT, MATTHEW L. "Bantu Folk Lore (Medical and General)." Cape Town, N.D.
- HOBLEY, C. W. "Eastern Uganda: an Ethnological Survey." London, 1902 [Anthropological Inst.].
- HODSON, T. C. "The Meithei." London, 1908.
- HÖFLER, M. "Volksmedizin und Aberglaube in Oberbayern." München, 1888.
- HOLLIS, A. C. "The Masai, their Language and Folklore." Oxford, 1905.
- "The Nandi, their Language and Folklore." Oxford, 1909.
- HUTTER, FRANZ. "Wanderungen und Forschungen im Nord-Hinterland von Kamerun." Braunschweig, 1902.
- HOWITT, A. W. "The Native Tribes of South-east Australia." London, 1904.
- HULL, ELEANOR (Editor). "The Cuchullin Saga in Irish Literature." Translated by various scholars. London, 1898.
- HUNTER, JOHN D. "Memoirs of a Captivity among the Indians of North America." London, 1823.
- HURGRONJE, C. SNOUCK. "The Achehnese." Transl. by A. W. S. O'Sullivan. Two vols. Leyden, 1906.
- IM THURN, EVERARD F. "Among the Indians of Guiana." London, 1883.
- "Indian N. and Q."—*See Panjab.*
- "Internationales Archiv für Ethnographie." Nineteen vols. Leiden 1888—
- Irish Texts Society. Ten vols. London, 1899—

- IVER, L. K. ANANTHA KRISHNA. "The Ethnographical Survey of the Cochin State." Monograph No. 19. Caste, Izhuvas. Ernakulam, 1905.
- JAMES, H. E. M. "The Long White Mountain: a Journey in Manchuria with some Account of the History [etc.] of that Country." London, 1888.
- "Jātaka, The, or Stories of the Buddha's former Births." Transl. from the Pāli, Ed. by Prof. E. B. COWELL. Six volumes. Cambridge, 1895-1907.
- JAUSSEN, ANTONIN. "Coutumes des Arabes au Pays de Moab." Paris, 1908.
- JENKS, ALBERT ERNEST. "The Bontoc Igorot." Manila, 1905 [Philippine Islands Ethnol. Survey Publications, vol. i.]
- "Jesuit Relations, The, and Allied Documents." The original texts with English translations. Edited by REUBEN GOLD THWAITES. Seventy-three vols. Cleveland, 1896-1901.
- Jesup North Pacific Expedition, Publications of the. Edited by FRANZ BOAS. Twelve vols., not yet all issued. New York & Leiden, 1900- [The earlier volumes were issued as part of the *Memoirs of the American Museum of Natural History*.]
- JEVONS, FRANK BYRON. "An Introduction to the History of Religion." London, 1896.
- (Editor). "Plutarch's Romane Questions." Transl. A.D. 1603 by PHILEMON HOLLAND. London, 1892.
- JOHNSTON, Sir HARRY H. "British Central Africa." London, 1895.
- "The River Congo from its mouth to Bólóbó." London, 1884.
- "The Uganda Protectorate." Two vols., paged continuously. London, 1902.
- JOLLY, JULIUS. "Grundriss der Indo-Arischen Philologie und Altertumskunde. Recht und Sitte." Strassburg, 1896.
- JONES, WILLIAM. "Fox Texts." Leyden, 1907 [Publications of the Amer. Ethnol. Soc. ed. by FRANZ BOAS, vol. i.]
- "Journal of the African Society." Eight vols. London, 1901-
- "Journal of American Folklore." Twenty-one vols. Boston, 1888- [Organ of the Amer. F. L. Soc.]
- "Journal of the Anthropological [now Royal Anthropological] Institute of Great Britain and Ireland." Thirty-eight vols. London, 1872- [cited as J. A. I.]
- JUNOD, HENRI A. "Les Baronga. Etude Ethnographique." Neuchatel, 1898.

- KIDD, DUDLEY. "The Essential Kafir." London, 1904.
- KING, C. W. "The Gnostics and their Remains ancient and mediæval." London, 1887.
- KINGSLEY, MARY H. "Travels in West Africa." London, 1897.
— "West African Studies." London, 1899.
- KNIGHT, E. F. "Where Three Empires meet: a Narrative of recent Travel in Kashmir [etc.]." London, 1893.
- KOBEIT, RUDOLF (Editor). "Historische Studien aus dem Pharmakologischen Institute der Kaiserlichen Universität, Dorpat." vols. Halle a S. [Vol. iv. only cited, 1894].
- KOHLER, J. "Zur Urgeschichte der Ehe. Totemismus, Gruppenehe, Mutterrecht." Stuttgart, 1897.
- KOHLRUSCH, C. "Schweizerische Sagenbuch." [Issued in parts; 1st vol. and Part I. of another only issued.] Leipzig, 1854-56.
- KOLBE, WILHELM. "Hessische Volks-Sitten und Gebräuche." Marburg, 1888.
- KOLBEN, PETER. "The Present State of the Cape of Good Hope." Done into English by Mr. MEDLEY. London, 1731.
- KOVALEVSKY, MAXIME. "Modern Customs and Ancient Laws of Russia." London, 1891.
- KRAPF, Rev. Dr. L. "A Dictionary of the Suahili Language." London, 1882.
- KRAUSS, FRIEDRICH S. "Sitte und Brauch der Südslaven." Wien, 1885.
— "Volks Glaube und religiöser Brauch der Südslaven." Münster-i-W., 1890.
- KRUYT, ALB. C. "Het Animisme in den Indischen Archipel." 'SGravenhage, 1906.
- LAMMERT, Dr. G. "Volksmedizin und medizinischer Aberglaube in Bayern und den angrenzenden Bezirken." Würzburg, 1869.
- LANE, EDWARD WILLIAM. "An Account of the Manners and Customs of the Modern Egyptians." Two vols. London, 1842.
- LANDES, A. "Contes et Légendes Annamites." Saigon, 1886.
- LANG, JOHN DUNMORE. "Queensland, Australia, a highly eligible field for Emigration." London, 1861.
- LECKY, W. E. H. "History of the Rise and Influence of the spirit of Rationalism in Europe." Two vols. London, 1865.

- LELAND, CHARLES GODFREY. "Etruscan Roman Remains in Popular Tradition." London, 1892.
- "Gypsy Sorcery and Fortune Telling." London, 1891.
- LEONARD, Major ARTHUR GLYN. "The Lower Niger and its Tribes." London, 1906.
- LESLIE, DAVID. "Among the Zulus and Amatongas." Edited by the Hon. W. H. DRUMMOND. Edinburgh, 1875.
- LEWIS and CLARK, Captains. "History of the Expedition to the sources of the Missouri, thence to the Pacific Ocean, [&c.]." Three vols. London, 1905 [Reprint of Edition of 1814].
- LIEBRECHT, FELIX. "Zur Volkskunde." Heilbronn, 1879.
- LIVINGSTONE, DAVID. "Missionary Travels and Researches in South Africa." London, 1857.
- LLOYD, L. "Peasant Life in Sweden." London, 1870.
- LLOYD, L. C. "A Short Account of Further Bushman Material collected." London, 1889 [cited as Lloyd, Rep.].
- "Llyvyr Coch, Y."—*see* Mabinogion.
- LÖBEL, Dr. THEOPHIL. "Hochzeitsbräuche in der Türkei." Amsterdam, 1897.
- LUCIUS, ERNST. "Die Anfänge des Heiligenkults in der Christlichen Kirche." Herausgegeben von GUSTAV ANRICH. Tübingen, 1904.
- LUMHOLTZ, CARL. "Unknown Mexico: a Record of Five Years' Exploration." Two vols. London, 1903.
- LUNET DE LAJONQUIÈRE, le Commandant E. "Ethnographie du Tonkin Septentrional." Paris, 1906.
- LUZEL, F. M. "Légendes Chrétiennes de la Basse Bretagne." Two vols. Paris, 1881.
- "Mabinogion, The." From the Welsh of the Llyfr Coch o Hergest ("The Red Book of Hergest") translated by Lady CHARLOTTE GUEST, London, 1877. [Another Edition edited by ALFRED NUTT and cited as Nutt's Edition. London, 1902].
- "Y Llyvyr Coch o Hergest." Diplomatic reproduction of the MS. [The first vol. contains the M.] Ed. by JOHN RHYS and J. GWENOGFRYN EVANS. Oxford, 1887.
- MACDONALD, Rev. DUFF. "Africana; or the Heart of Heathen Africa." Two vols. London, 1882.
- MACKENZIE, JOHN. "Ten Years north of the Orange River." Edinburgh, 1871.
- MCLENNAN, JOHN FERGUSON. "The Patriarchal Theory." Ed. by DONALD MCLENNAN. London, 1885.

- McLENNAN, JOHN FERGUSON. "Studies in Ancient History." Two series. London, 1886-96.
- "Madras Government Museum Bulletin." vols. Madras, 1896-
- "Man: a Monthly Record of Anthropological Science." Nine vols. London, 1901- [Roy. Anthropol. Inst.].
- MANNHARDT, WILHELM. "Der Baumkultus der Germanen und ihrer Nachbarstämme." Berlin, 1875.
- "Mythologische Forschungen." Herausgegeben von HERMANN PATZIG. Strassburg and London, 1884.
- MARINER, WILLIAM. "An Account of the Natives of the Tonga Islands in the South Pacific Ocean." Compiled from the communications of Mr. W. M. by JOHN MARTIN. Two vols. Edinburgh, 1827.
- MARKHAM, CLEMENTS R. "Narratives of the Rites and Laws of the Yncas." London, 1873 [Hakluyt Soc.].
- MARSDEN, WILLIAM. "The History of Sumatra." London, 1811.
- MARTIN, MINNIE. "Basutoland, its Legends and Customs." London, 1903.
- MARTIN, M. "A Description of the Western Islands of Scotland." London, 1716.
- MASPERO, G. "Les Contes Populaires de l'Egypte Ancienne." Paris, 1882.
- MATEER, Rev. SAMUEL. "Native Life in Travancore." London, N.D. [1883].
- MATHEWS, R. H. "Ethnological Notes on the Aboriginal Tribes of New South Wales and Victoria." Sydney, 1905 [Reprint from Journ. Roy. Soc. N. S. Wales, xxxviii, 1904].
- MATTHEWS, WASHINGTON. "Navaho Legends." Boston, 1897. [Memoirs of Amer. F. L. Soc. vol. v.]
- MATTHEWS, JOHN. "A Voyage to the River Sierra-Leone on the coast of Africa." London, 1791.
- MAURER, Dr. KONRAD. "Isländische Volkssagen der Gegenwart." Leipzig, 1860.
- MAURY, L. F. ALFRED. "Essai sur les Légendes Pieuses du Moyen Age." Paris, 1843.
- MAYNE, JOHN D. "A Treatise on Hindu Law and Usage." 7th ed. Madras, 1906.
- "Meddygon Myddfai: The Physicians of Myddfai; or the Medical Practice of the celebrated Rhiwallon and his sons, of Myddvai in Carmarthenshire." Transl. by JOHN PUGHE, and ed. by the Rev. JOHN WILLIAMS AB ITHEL. Llandovery, 1861.
- MEIER, ERNST. "Deutsche Sagen Sitten und Gebräuche aus Schwaben." Two vols. paged continuously. Stuttgart, 1852.

- “Mélusine : Recueil de Mythologie Littérature Populaire, Traditions et Usages. Publié par Mm. H. GAIDOZ et E. ROLLAND.” Ten vols. Paris, 1878-1901.
- “Memoirs of the American Museum of Natural History : Anthropology.” vols. New York, 1900—[see also Jesup Expedition.]
- MERENSKY, A. “Beiträge zur Kenntniss Süd-Afrikas.” Berlin, 1875.
- MERKER, M. “Die Masai : Ethnographische Monographie.” Berlin, 1904.
- MEYER, DR. FELIX. “Wirtschaft und Recht der Herero.” Berlin, 1905.
- MEYRAC, ALBERT. “Traditions Coutumes Légendes et Contes des Ardennes.” Charleville, 1890.
- “Mittheilungen der Afrikanischen Gesellschaft in Deutschland.” vols. Berlin, 1878—
- MODIGLIANI, ELIO. “L’Isola delle Donne : Viaggio ad Engano.” Milano, 1894.
- “Un Viaggio a Nias.” Milano, 1890.
- MONDAIN, G. “Des Idées Religieuses des Hovas avant l’introduction du Christianisme.” N.D. [Paris, 190—.]
- MONTEIRO, JOACHIM JOHN. “Angola and the River Congo.” Two vols. London, 1875.
- MORGAN, LEWIS H. “Ancient Society ; or Researches in the Lines of Human Progress.” London, 1877.
- “Houses and House-Life of the American Aborigines.” Contributions to North American Ethnology, vol. iv. Washington, 1881.
- “Systems of Consanguinity and Affinity of the Human Family.” Smiths. Contribns. to Knowledge, vol. xvi. Washington, 1871.
- MÜLLER, J. G. “Geschichte der Amerikanischen Urreligionen.” Basel, 1867.
- MUNZINGER, WERNER. “Ostafrikanische Studien.” Basel, 1883.
- NANSEN, FRIDTJOF. “Eskimo Life.” Transl. by WILLIAM ARCHER. London, 1893.
- NASSAU, REV. ROBERT HAMILL. “Fetichism in West Africa.” London, 1904.
- NERY, F. J. DE SANTA-ANNA. “Folk-Lore Brésilien.” Paris, 1889.
- “North Indian Notes and Queries : a monthly periodical.” Ed. by WILLIAM CROOKE. Five vols. Allahabad, 1891-96.

- NUTT, ALFRED. "The Voyage of Bran, son of Febal, to the Land of the Living, an old Irish Saga." Ed. and transl. by KUNO MEYER, with an Essay [&c.] by ALFRED NUTT. Two vols, London, 1895-97.
- OESTRUP, J. "Contes de Damas." Leyde, 1897.
- "Old New Zealand." By a Pakeha Maori [FREDK. EDWD. MANNING]. London, 1900.
- OSTERMANN, Prof. V. "La Vita in Friuli. Usi Costumi Credenzi Pregiudizî e Superstizioni Popolari." Udine, 1894.
- OWEN, MARY ALICIA. "Folk-Lore of the Musquakie Indians of North America." London, 1904 [F. L. Soc.]
- PALGRAVE, WILLIAM GIFFORD. "Narrative of a Year's Journey through Central and Eastern Arabia." Two vols. London, 1865.
- "Punjab Notes and Queries: a monthly periodical." Ed. by Capt. R. C. TEMPLE. Four vols. [The 4th vol. is entitled "Indian N. & Q."] Allahabad and London, 1883-86.
- PARKER, MRS. K. LANGLOH. "Australian Legendary Tales: Folk-Lore of the Noongahburrabs." Two series [the second entitled "More of A. L. T."] London and Melbourne, 1896-98.
- "The Euahlayi Tribe: A Study of Aboriginal Life in Australia." London, 1905.
- PAULITSCHKE, Dr. PHILIPP. "Ethnographie Nordost-Afrikas." Two vols. Berlin, 1893-96.
- PAYNE, EDWARD JOHN. "History of the New World called America." Two vols. [all published]. Oxford, 1892-99.
- "Papers of the Peabody Museum of American Archæology and Ethnology, Harvard University." Four vols. Cambridge, Mass., 1888-
- PETITOT, ÉMILE. "Traditions Indiennes du Canada Nord-ouest." Paris, 1886.
- PIGORINI-BERI, CATERINA. "Costumi e Superstizioni dell' Appennino Marchigiano." Città di Castello, 1889.
- PITRÈ, GIUSEPPE. "Biblioteca delle Tradizioni Popolari Siciliane." Twenty-two vols. Palermo, Torino, 1871-1904.
- PLACUCCI, MICHELE. "Usi e Pregiudizj dei Contadini della Romagna." [Reprint by Giuseppe Pitrè.] Palermo, 1885.
- PLOSS, Dr. H. "Das Kind in Brauch und Sitte der Völker: Anthropologische Studien." Two vols. Leipzig, 1884.
- "Das Weib in der Natur- und Völkerkunde: Anthropologische Studien." Bearbeitet und herausgegeben von Dr. Max Bartels. Two vols. Leipzig, 1891.

- POLACK, J. S. "Manners and Customs of the New Zealanders." Two vols. London, 1840.
- "Popol Vuh. Le Livre Sacré et les Mythes de l'Antiquité Américaine." Texte Quiché et Traduction Française par l'Abbé BRASSEUR DE BOURBOURG. Paris, 1861.
- POST, Dr. ALBERT HERMANN. "Afrikanische Jurisprudenz." Two vols. Oldenburg and Leipzig, 1887.
- "Die Geschlechtsgenossenschaft der Urzeit und die Entstehung der Ehe." Oldenburg, 1875.
- "Studien zur Entwicklungsgeschichte des Familienrechts." Oldenburg and Leipzig, 1890.
- POTTER, MURRAY ANTHONY. "Sohrab and Rustem: the Epic Theme of a Combat between Father and Son." London, 1902.
- POWERS, STEPHEN. "Tribes of California." Washington, 1877 [Contrib. to N. Amer. Ethnology, vol. iii.].
- "Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland." Forty-three vols. Edinburgh, 1855-
- "Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archæology." Thirty vols. London, 1879-
- RADLOFF, Dr. W. "Proben der Volkslitteratur der Türkischen Stämme Süd-Sibiriens." Seven (?) vols. [The volumes after the 4th are entitled "Proben der Volkslitt. der nördlichen Türkischen Stämme."] St. Petersburg, 1866-
- RALSTON, W. R. S. "The Songs of the Russian People." London, 1872.
- RATTRAY, R. SUTHERLAND. "Some Folk-Lore Stories and Songs in Chinyanja." With an English translation and notes. London, 1907.
- READE, W. WINWOOD. "Savage Africa." London, 1863.
- "Records of South-eastern Africa." Collected by GEORGE MCCALL THEAL. Seven vols. London, 1898-1901.
- "Records of the Past, being English translations of the Assyrian and Egyptian Monuments." Twelve vols. London, N.D.
- "Reports of the Meetings of the Australian Association for the Advancement of Science." Eleven vols. Sydney, 1889-Adelaide, 1907.
- "Reports of the British Association for the Advancement of Science." London. [Yearly volumes cited by the date of the year.]
- "Reports, Annual, of the Bureau of Ethnology." Twenty-six vols. Washington, 1879-80-

- "Report of the United States National Museum." Washington.
[Annual Report cited by the date of the year.]
- "Revue Celtique." Thirty vols. Paris, 1870-
- "Revue de l'Histoire des Religions." Sixty vols. Paris, 1880-
- "Revue des Traditions Populaires." Twenty-five vols. Paris, 1886-
[Organ of the Société des Traditions Populaires].
- RHŶS, JOHN. "Celtic Folklore Welsh and Manx." Two vols.
paged continuously. Oxford, 1901.
- RIEDEL, JOH. GERARD FRIED. "De Sluik- en Kroesharige Rassen
tusschen Selebes en Papua." 'SGravenhage, 1886.
- RIGGS, STEPHEN RETURN. "Dakota Grammar Texts and Ethno-
graphy." [Contrib. to N. Amer. Ethnology, vol. ix.] Wash-
ington, 1893.
- RINK, DR. HENRY. "Tales and Traditions of the Eskimo."
Transl. by the author. Edinburgh, 1875.
- RISLEY, H. H. "The Tribes and Castes of Bengal." Ethnographic
Glossary. Two vols. Calcutta, 1891-92.
- RIVERS, W. H. R. "The Todas." London, 1906.
- "Rivista delle Tradizioni Popolari Italiane diretta da Angelo de
Gubernatis." Two vols. Roma, 1893-94. [Organ of the
Società Nazionale per le Tradizioni Popolari Italiane.]
- ROBERTSON, SIR GEORGE SCOTT. "The Káfirs of the Hindu-
Kush." London, 1896.
- ROCHE, J. B. "Au Pays des Pahouins." Paris, 1904.
- ROCKHILL, WILLIAM WOODVILLE. "The Land of the Lamas.
Notes of a Journey." New York, 1891.
- RODD, RENNELL. "The Customs and Lore of Modern Greece."
London, 1892.
- ROTH, WALTER E. "Ethnological Studies among the North-West-
Central Queensland Aborigines." Brisbane, 1897.
- "North Queensland Ethnography." Eight Bulletins published
by the Government of Queensland, Brisbane, 1901-6. [Sub-
sequent Bulletins are in course of publication in the Records
of the Australian Museum, Sydney.]
- ROTH, HENRY LING. "The Natives of Sarawak and British North
Borneo." Two vols. London, 1896.
- "Sacred Books, The, of the East." Translated by various oriental
scholars and edited by F. MAX MULLER. Fifty vols. [Forty-
nine only published.] Oxford, 1879-
- SAINTYVES, P. "Les Vierges Mères et les Naissances Miraculeuses."
Paris, 1908.
- SARBAH, JOHN MENSAH. "Fanti Customary Laws." London, 1897.

- [Saxon Leechdoms.] "Leechdoms Wortcunning and Starcraft of Early England." Ed. by the Rev. OSWALD COCKAYNE. Three vols. London, 1864-66.
- SCHMIDT, Dr. MAX. "Indianerstudien in Zentralbrasilien." Berlin, 1905.
- SCHOUTEN, GAUTIER. "Voiage aux Indes Orientales." Traduit du Hollandais. Two vols. Amsterdam, 1757.
- SCHROEDER, Dr. LEOPOLD VON. "Die Hochzeitsbräuche der Esten und einiger anderer Finnisch-ugrischer Völkerschaften." Berlin, 1888.
- SCHULENBURG, WILLIBALD VON. "Wendische Volkssagen und Gebräuche aus dem Spreewald." Leipzig, 1880.
- SCHWEINFURTH, Dr. GEORGE. "The Heart of Africa: Three Years' Travels and Adventures." Translated by ELLEN E. FREWER. Two vols. London, 1873.
- "Schweizerischer Archiv für Volkskunde." Thirteen vols. Zürich, 1897- [Organ of the Schweiz. Gesells. f. Volksk.].
- SÉBILLOT, PAUL. "Contes Populaires de la Haute Bretagne." Three series. Paris, 1880-82.
- "Le Folk-Lore de France." Four vols. Paris, 1904-7.
- "Le Paganisme Contemporain chez les Peuples Celto-Latins." Paris, 1908.
- "Petite Légende Dorée de la Haute Bretagne." Nantes, 1897.
- "Traditions et Superstitions de la Haute Bretagne." Two vols. Paris, 1882.
- SEEBOHM, HUGH E. "On the Structure of Greek Tribal Society." London, 1895.
- SIBREE, Rev. JAMES, junr. "The Great African Island. Chapters on Madagascar." London, 1880.
- "Silva Gadelica: A Collection of Tales in Irish." Edited from MSS. and translated by STANDISH H. O'GRADY. Two vols. London, 1892.
- SIMCOX, E. J. "Primitive Civilizations." Two vols. London, 1897.
- SKEAT, WALTER WILLIAM. "Malay Magic." London, 1900.
- and BLAGDEN, CHARLES OTTO. "Pagan Races of the Malay Peninsula." Two vols. London, 1906.
- SMIRNOV, JEAN N. "Les Populations Finnoises des Bassins de la Volga et de la Kama." Etudes traduites par PAUL BOYER. One vol. only published. Paris, 1898.
- SMITH, Capt. JOHN. Works, 1608-1631. Edited by EDWARD ARBER. [The English Scholar's Library.] Birmingham, 1884.

- SMITH, W. ROBERTSON. "Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia." Cambridge, 1885.
- "Lectures on the Religion of the Semites." First series [all published]. Edinburgh, 1889.
- SMYTH, R. BROUGH. "The Aborigines of Victoria." Two vols. Melbourne and London, 1878.
- [South African] "Folk-Lore Journal, ed. by the Working Committee of the S.A.F.L. Soc." Two vols. Cape Town and London, 1879-80.
- "South African Native Affairs Commission, 1903-5. Report and Evidence." Five vols. Cape Town, 1904-5.
- "Southey's Commonplace Book." Ed. by JOHN WOOD WARTER. Four vols. London, 1850.
- SPENCER, BALDWIN, and GILLEN, F. J. "The Native Tribes of Central Australia." London, 1899.
- "The Northern Tribes of Central Australia." London, 1904.
- SPIETH, JAKOB. "Die Ewe-Stämme. Material zur Kunde des Ewe-Volkes in Deutsch-Togo." Berlin, 1906.
- SPROAT, GILBERT MALCOLM. "Scenes and Studies of Savage Life." London, 1868.
- STARR, FREDERICK. "Notes upon the Ethnography of Southern Mexico." Two parts reprinted from *Proceedings of Davenport Academy of Sciences*, vols. viii. and ix. Davenport, Iowa, 1900-2.
- STACK, EDWARD. "The Mikirs." Ed. by Sir CHARLES LYALL. London, 1908.
- STEINEN, KARL VON DEN. "Unter den Naturvölkern Zentral-Brasiliens." Berlin, 1894.
- STEINMETZ, Dr. S. R. "Rechtsverhältnisse von eingeborenen Völkern in Afrika und Ozeanien." Berlin, 1903.
- STEEL, F. A., and TEMPLE, R. C. "Widcawake Stories. A Collection of Tales told by little Children." Bombay, 1884.
- ST. JOHN, SPENCER. "Life in the Forests of the Far East." Two vols. London, 1862.
- STOW, GEORGE W. "The Native Races of South Africa." London, 1905.
- STREHLOW, C. "Die Aranda- und Loritja-Stämme in Zentral-Australien." Two parts published. Frankfurt-a-M. [Veröffentlichungen aus dem Städtischen Völkermuseum.]
- SWAINSON, Rev. CHARLES. "The Folk Lore and Provincial Names of British Birds." London, 1886. [F. L. Soc.]
- TACHARD, GUY. "Second Voyage du Père T. et des Jesuites envoyés par le roy au Royaume de Siam." Amsterdam, 1689.

- TAPLIN, Rev. GEORGE. "The Narrinyeri: an account of South Australian Aborigines." Adelaide, 1874.
- TAVERNIER, JEAN BAPTISTE. "Les Six Voyages de, en Turquie, en Perse et aux Indes." Paris, 1692.
- "Travels in India." Trsltd. by V. BALL. Two vols. London, 1889.
- TAWNEY, C. H. "The Kathákoça; or Treasury of Stories," trsltd. by. London, 1895 [Roy. Asiatic Soc.].
- TAYLOR, Rev. RICHARD. "Te Ika a Maui; New Zealand and its Inhabitants." London, 1870.
- TEIT, JAMES. "Traditions of the Thompson River Indians of British Columbia." Boston, 1898 [Mem. of the Amer. F. L. Soc.].
- TEMESVÁRY, Dr. RUDOLF. "Volksbräuche und Aberglauben in der Geburtshilfe und der Pflege des Neugeborenen in Ungarn." Leipzig, 1900.
- TEMPLE, Capt. R. C. "The Legends of the Panjâb." Three vols. Bombay, N.D.
- THEAL, GEO. MCCALL. "Kaffir Folklore." London, N.D. [1872].
- THOMAS, THOMAS MORGAN. "Eleven Years in Central South Africa." London, N.D. [1872?].
- THOMSON, JOSEPH. "Through Masai Land: a Journey of Exploration." London, 1885.
- THUNBERG, CHARLES PETER. "Travels in Europe Africa and Asia." Four vols. London, 1795.
- THURSTON, EDGAR. "Ethnographic Notes in Southern India." Madras, 1906.
- [Torres Straits] "Reports of the Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to Torres Straits." vols. [vols. 3, 5, 6 and portions of vol. 2 published]. Cambridge, 1901—
- "Transactions of the Ethnological Society of London," N.S. Seven vols. London, 1862-69.
- "Transactions of the Royal Society of Canada." Twenty-four vols. Montreal, 1883-Ottawa—
- TURNER, GEORGE. "Samoa a hundred years ago and long before." London, 1884.
- TYLOR, EDWARD B. "Researches into the Early History of Mankind." 3rd ed. London, 1878.
- "Primitive Culture." Two vols. London, 1871.
- [Tylor Essays] "Anthropological Essays presented to Edward Burnett Tylor in honour of his 75th Birthday." Oxford, 1907.

- "University of California Publications. American Archaeology and Ethnology." Two vols. Berkeley, Cal., 1903-
- VARTHEMA, LUDOVICO DI. "The Travels of, in Egypt [&c]." Trsl. by JOHN WINTER JONES and ed. by GEORGE PERCY BADGER. London, 1863 [Hakluyt Soc].
- VOTH, H. R. "The Traditions of the Hopi." Chicago, 1905 [Field Columb. Mus. Pub. 96, Anthropol. Series, vol. viii.].
- WADDELL, L. AUSTINE. "The Buddhism of Tibet, or Lamaism." London, 1895.
- WERNER, ALICE. "The Natives of British Central Africa." London, 1906.
- WEST, Rev. THOMAS. "Ten Years in South-Central Polynesia." London, 1865.
- WIEDEMANN, ALFRED. "Religion of the Ancient Egyptians," London, 1897.
- WILKEN, G. A. "Over de Verwantschap en het huwelijks en erfrecht bij de volken van het Maleische ras." [Offprint from a Dutch periodical] 1883.
- WILLIAMS, THOMAS. "Fiji and the Fijians," and "Missionary Labours among the Cannibals" by JAMES CALVERT. Ed. by GEORGE STRINGER ROWE. London, 1870.
- WILSON, H. H. (translator). "The Vishnu Purána." London, 1840.
- WINTERBOTTOM, THOMAS. "An account of the Native Africans in the neighbourhood of Sierra Leone." Two vols. London, 1803.
- WINTERNITZ, Dr. M. "Das Altindische Hochzeitsrituell." Wien, 1892.
- WITZSCHEL, Dr. AUGUST. "Kleine Beiträge zur deutschen Mythologie Sitten und Heimatskunde in Sagen und Gebräuchen aus Thüringen." Two vols. Wien, 1866-78.
- WLISLOCKI, Dr. HEINRICH VON. "Volksdichtungen der siebenbürgischen und Südungarischen Zigeuner." Wien, 1870.
- "Volks Glaube und religiöser Brauch der Zigeuner." Münster-i-W., 1891.
- "Volks Glaube und Volksbrauch der Siebenbürger Sachsen." Berlin, 1893.
- "Aus dem Volksleben der Magyaren." München, 1893.
- WOLF, JOHANN WILHELM. "Hessische Sagen." Göttingen, 1853.
- "Niederländische Sagen." Leipzig, 1843.

- WOYCICKI, K. W. "Polnische Volkssagen und Märchen." Translated by FRIEDRICH HEINRICH LEWESTAM. Berlin, 1839.
- WUTTKE, Dr. ADOLF. "Der deutsche Volksaberglaube der Gegenwart." Dritte Bearbeitung von ELARD HUGO MEYER. Berlin, 1900.
- YULE, Colonel HENRY (translator and editor). "The Book of Ser Marco Polo the Venetian." Two vols. London, 1871.
- ZANETTI, Dott. ZENO. "La Medicina delle Nostre Donne Studio Folklorico." Città di Castello, 1892.
- "Zeitschrift des Vereins für Volkskunde." Nineteen vols. Berlin, 1891-
- "Zeitschrift für Ethnologie. Organ der Berliner Gesellschaft für Anthropologie Ethnologie und Urgeschichte." Forty-one vols. Berlin, 1869-
- "Zeitschrift für vergleichende Rechtswissenschaft." Twenty-two vols. Stuttgart, 1887-
- "Zeitschrift für Volkskunde herausgegeben von Dr. EDMUND VECKENSTEDT. Organ der deutschen Gesellschaft für Volkskunde." Four vols. Leipzig, 1889-92.
- ZINGERLE, IGNAZ VINCENZ. "Sagen Marchen und Gebräuche aus Tirol." Innsbruck, 1889.
- "Sitten Bräuche und Meinungen des Tiroler Volkes." Innsbruck, 1871.



INDEX

- ABIPONES.** Marriage customs ii. 25 n
Abraham i. 265
Abyssinia. Marriage customs ii. 21, 199, 264
 See Beni Amer, Gallas
Achehn—see Sumatra
Achewa—see Bantu
Admiralty Islands. Impregnation by sun i. 25
Adoption of children i. 147, 148 ; ii. 248
Adultery, definition in lower culture i. 301, 313 ; ii. 148, 150, 160, 178, 194, 196, 197, 206 n. 207, 218, 231
Aeneas and the snake i. 168
Agnatic descent—see Fatherright
Ainu. Practices to procure children i. 32, 53. Re-birth i. 211
Albanians. Marriage customs ii. 18
Aleutian Islands. Marriage customs ii. 15. Sexual morality ii. 234
Algiers. Prescriptions for barrenness i. 68, 84
Algonkins. Marriage customs ii. 68. Matrimonial life ii. 65. Motherright i. 263 ; ii. 65. Names, influence of i. 214. Organisation i. 298. Roots prized by i. 47 n. Supernatural Birth, i. 22, 23
Arapaho. Sun-dance ii. 236
Cheyenne. Sun-dance ii. 238. Transformation after death i. 186
Illinois. Licentiousness ii. 106
Kickapoos. Licentiousness ii. 232
Algonkins. Naskopies or Nene-nots. Sexual relations, ii. 234. Premature marriages, ii. 271
 See Blackfeet, Musquakies, Ojibways
Ali, i. 18, 173
Aloe on graves i. 162, 163
Amazon River Indians. Cosmology ii. 280
Amulets i. 118-122
Ancestors. As animals i. 174. Influence in securing continuance of family ii. 246. Worship of i. 85, 121 ; in relation to *Illatom* ii. 41 n
 See Naming, Re-birth, Transformation
Andaman Islands. Burial of children i. 227. Indians as deceased ancestors i. 236. Naming children i. 210, 226
Anglo-Saxons. Prescriptions for barrenness i. 54, 62, 233
 See Athelstan
Angoni—see Bantu
Annam. Rabbits, belief as to i. 151. Supernatural Birth i. 13, 19. Tree-spirits i. 168 n
Annunciation, paintings of, i. 20, 21
Ansairee. Transformation after death i. 173
Apaches. Supernatural Birth i. 24
Apis i. 26
Apples, Appletree in impregnation rites and belief i. 36, 40 n. 60, 113, 134
Arabs. Marriage customs ii. 5-7, 16. Practices to obtain children i. 68 115, 119, 124. Supernatural Birth i. 13, 35

- Arabs. Ancient. Sexual morality i. 312; ii. 130, 222
 Bedouins. Licentiousness ii. 221
 Hassenyeh. Marriage customs ii. 222
- Aracan. Sexual morality i. 312
- Arapaho—see Algonkins
- Araucanians. Licentious festivals ii. 241
- Arawaks. Legends ii. 64. Marriage customs ii. 63
- Arianrod i. 133
- Armenia. Mohammedan marriage custom i. 59. Rite to obtain children i. 136
- Arthur, King i. 187
- Ashanti. Husband not responsible for wife i. 275
 See Negroes
- Assam. Sowing festival ii. 171
 Lyinggams, birth of ancestress i. 17
 See Mikirs, Syntengs
- Aston, W. G., quoted i. 248
- Athapascans. Puberty customs i. 88. Rebirth i. 219
- Assineboin, Dene and Carriers. Licentiousness ii. 233
- Tacullies. Funeral custom i. 220
- Athelstan i. 11 n
- Athene, ægis of i. 108
- Attis i. 17, 167, 168
- Aubrey, John, quoted i. 159
- Augilæ. Marriage customs ii. 131
- Augustine, St. cited i. 20, 149
- Aurora Island. Child as "echo" of deceased i. 213. Superstition i. 37 n.
 See Melanesia
- Auseans. Licentiousness ii. 131
- Australia. Beliefs as to cause of conception i. 52, 85, 119, 237-244; ii. 274-279. Father re-born in son i. 198. Jump up Whitefellow i. 234. Kangaroo-flesh given to cause fertility i. 54. Marriage customs and sexual relations ii. 223-228. Menstruation, speculations on ii. 273. Organisation i. 236, 294. Premature intercourse ii. 261. Puberty customs i. 96, 110; ii. 109. Subjection of girls i. 295. Transformation after death i. 164, 184. Twins, how caused i. 119; ii. 278. Warehouse of children i. 242, 243, 244. Wife resides with husband ii. 36 n
- Arunta, beliefs and practices i. 238-241
- Dieri. Marriage customs ii. 109
- New South Wales. Sexual relations, ii. 112
- Averrhoes, Case of pregnancy related by i. 24
- Awemba—see Bantu
- Aztecs. Children produced in realm of dead i. 245. Supernatural Birth i. 11, 17, 21
- BACCHUS i. 15
- Baële (Eastern Sahara). Marriage customs ii. 59
- Bakaïri. Child called "little father" i. 209 n. Marriage customs ii. 61. Supernatural Birth i. 15
- Balearic Islands. Marriage customs ii. 131
- Ballads, cited i. 158
- Balochis. *Jus Primæ Noctis* i. 304 n. Supernatural Birth i. 18
- Banks' Islands. Sexual morality ii. 148. Stones, fecundation by i. 119
- Bantu. Amulets, i. 121. Children of widow reckoned to deceased husband i. 315. Dolls i. 142. Licentiousness ii. 195-216. Marriage customs ii. 22, 23, 24, 113, 122. Medicine for barren women i. 39, 68 n. Premature intercourse ii. 265, 267. Puberty customs i. 94-96. Raising up seed to another i. 316. Rebirth i. 201. Souls, multiple i. 201, 202 n. Tales i. 23, 72. Transformation after death i. 165, 169, 172. Twins i. 163

- Bantu, Angola—see Congo
 Angoni and Achewa. Theory as to spirits of the dead i. 169, 249
 Awemba. Amulets i. 120. Naming children i. 214 n
 Azimba. Premature marriages ii. 266
 Baronga. Marriage customs ii. 207 n. Maternal uncle ii. 207. Sexual morality ii. 207
 Bechuana. Purification ceremony ii. 210
 Fans. Burial of child i. 227. Premature marriages ii. 269. Sexual morality ii. 215
 Herero. Organisation i. 275. Sexual morality ii. 137.
 Ondonga. Adultery i. 301
 Wayao and Mang'anja. Adultery i. 302; ii. 122. Marriage customs ii. 109, 266. Puberty customs ii. 122, 123, 266. Sexual morality ii. 121, 265
 Wazaramo. Fine husband on death of wife i. 276
 West Coast (see Congo). Premature marriages ii. 269. White people as spirits of dead i. 235
 See Basuto, Congo, Loango, Suahili, Uganda, Wanyika, Warundi, Zulus
 Barea. Maternal uncle i. 287. Sexual morality ii. 121.
 Bari. Rite to obtain children i. 139. White people as spirits of dead i. 235. Marriage customs ii. 21
 Barotse—see Bantu
 Basque. Marriage customs ii. 20
 Basuto. Licentiousness i. 316; ii. 208, 210, 267. Marriage customs ii. 22, 208 n. Raising up seed to another i. 316, 317. Rites to procure children i. 88, 121, 144. Supernatural Birth i. 72 n
 Bata, hero of Egyptian tale i. 14. 156
 Bataks—see Sumatra
 Bathing. Conception by i. 23, 24, 67, 75-87
 Baze. Maternal uncle i. 287. Sexual morality ii. 121
 Belgium. Prescriptions for sterility i. 62. Priapian statues, 64
 Ardennes. Sacred springs i. 64
 Hainault. Nut-trees, prognostication by i. 89 n
 Beni Amer. Blood-feud i. 274. Licentiousness ii. 199. Marriage customs ii. 21
 Benin—see Negroes
 Berbers. Sexual morality ii. 220
 Besisi. Rite to fertilise mangostin i. 116 n. Rice-harvest festival ii. 171
 Besom. Stepping over i. 133
 Bhishma, Raja i. 18.
 Birch as fecundator i. 103, 104, 107
 Birth Customs. Kwakiutl i. 113, 234. Maori i. 128, 212. Samoa i. 213
 Blackfeet. Adultery, punishment of ii. 231 n. Medicine men communicate prolific virtue i. 117. Pregnancy by wish i. 117
 Blood-covenant i. 258-262
 Blood drunk to obtain children, i. 70, 72, 73. Other practices, i. 73
 Blood-feud i. 272-277; ii. 97
 Bogos. Maternal uncle, i. 287
 Bohemia. Drink to obtain children i. 39. Licentiousness of ancient ii. 190
 Bonaventura, St., hymn cited i. 20
 Bonfires, leaping over i. 98
 Bontoc Igorots—see Luzon
 Borneo. Licentiousness ii. 128, 151-153. Life after death i. 174. Marriage customs i. 59; ii. 34-36. Pregnancy, opinion of the Bahau on duration of ii. 274. Premature marriages ii. 259. Sacrifices for children i. 86. Transformation after death i. 161
 Bororós. Licentiousness ii. 108. Marriage customs ii. 25, 272. Motherright ii. 25. Transformation after death i. 187

- Bosnia—see Slav
- Botocudos. Dead children eaten i. 231
- Bowditch Island. Marriage customs ii. 39
- Brames—see Negroes
- Brazil. Origin of Manioc i. 166, 229. Transformation after death i. 186
See Bakairí, Bororós, Tupis
- Bride-price i. 281, 282, 292, 301, 313; ii. 15, 19, 25 n. 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 37, 47, 51, 57, 58, 60, 63, 67, 68, 82, 83, 84, 88, 95, 96, 99, 118, 119, 150, 180, 215, 216, 258, 261, 270
- British Columbia, tribes of. Father not akin i. 280. Marriage customs ii. 89. Practices, magical, to produce children i. 47, 53, 55, 139. Puberty rites i. 88, 91. Supernatural Birth i. 4, 12, 18, 25. Re-birth i. 218. Sexual hospitality ii. 234. Twins i. 190
See Haida, Lillooet, Kwa-kiutl, Salish
- Britons, Ancient. Sexual relations ii. 131
- Brittany. Contract with Devil i. 36. Priapian statue i. 64. Sacred wells and springs i. 65, 80. Supernatural birth i. 16
- Buddha. Birth i. 21. Parables i. 193
- Buddhism, Transmigration in i. 192
- Burgundy. Story of Baroness de Montfort i. 189
- Buru—see Celebes
- Buryats. Licentiousness ii. 185
- Bury St. Edmunds, rite at i. 131
- Bushmen. Marriage customs ii. 61, 267. Sexual morality ii. 213. Transformation after death i. 165. Women hide from rain i. 88
- Byblus. Mourning for Adonis ii. 136
- CABBAGE-BED, Children from i. 41, 42
- Cæculus, founder of Præneste, i. 18
- Calabar. Water-serpent born again as boy i. 189. Old, Re-birth i. 201
- California. Visit to other world i. 222
See Hupa, Maidu, Pimas, Wishosk, Yana, Yokuts, Yurok
- Cambodia. Marriage customs ii. 47. Peahens, fructification of i. 151. Puberty rites i. 91
- Cañaris. Origin ii. 108
- Cantabrians. Marriage customs ii. 19
- Caroline Islands. Marriage customs ii. 36. Motherright i. 270. Wives, exchange of ii. 125
See Mortlock Islands
- Catalonia. Sacred olla i. 79
- Celebes. Marriage customs i. 59; ii. 57. Supernatural Birth i. 22
- Celts. Transmigration i. 194
- Ceylon. Polyandry ii. 166. Rite to obtain children, i. 140 n. Transmigration into buffaloes, i. 182. Sexual morality ii. 167
- Chaco—see Paraguay
- Charm, power of verbal i. 28
- Chastity, growth of ideal of ii. 102
- Chechen. Blood-feud on murder of son i. 273. Marriage customs ii. 17
- Cheremiss. Licentiousness ii. 186
- Cherkess. Marriage customs ii. 16
- Cherokees. Marriage customs ii. 69. Shape-shifting ii. 235 n
- Chevsur. Blood-feud on wife-murder i. 274. Marriage customs ii. 17
- Cheyenne—see Algonkins
- Chieftainship in motherright i. 283
- Children. Birth independent of sexual union i. 152, 237-240, 254; ii. 274-280. Magical Practices to obtain i. 30-155. Ndembo ii. 115. Origin of i. 41, 42; ii. 274-280. Subjecting wife to embraces of other men i. 307-318; ii. 134, 181,

- 187, 196, 214, 247. Value of ii. 244-248. Warehouse of i. 242-245
See Re-birth
- China. Marco Polo on licentious customs ii. 172 n. Marriage customs of aboriginal tribes ii. 44. Prescriptions against barrenness i. 36 n. 39, 46, 62, 117, 147. Re-birth i. 210. Sexual morality i. 311. Still-born child cut in pieces, i. 228. Supernatural Birth, i. 5, 11, 19, 21 n. 24, 25. Transformation after death i. 180. Trees growing on graves, i. 62
- Chingpaw. Licentiousness ii. 169. Marriage customs ii. 47. Re-carnation i. 182
- Chinook. Licentiousness ii. 230. Puberty rites i. 92
- Choctas. Maternal uncle i. 299
- Christening customs, i. 134, 224
- Christmas custom i. 107
- Chukchi. Dolls i. 147. Licentiousness ii. 181. Marriage customs ii. 43, 256. Naming child i. 211. Re-birth i. 211. Stone as fecundator i. 119. Transformation after death i. 180
- Circassians. Licentiousness ii. 188
- Clothing conveys fecundity, i. 113-116, 229
- Cochin China. Premature marriages ii. 257
- Cocoa-nuts given to barren women i. 34. Origin of tree i. 161
- Conall Cernach, birth i. 9
- Conchobar, birth i. 9. Exercised *jus primæ noctis* ii. 132
- Congo, tribes. Adultery i. 301. Father fined on death of child i. 276. Husband fined on death of wife i. 275, 276. Licentiousness ii. 113-117, 214. Life after death i. 235. Marriage of children of same father i. 265. Maternal uncle i. 277, 282-284. Medicine for barrenness i. 39. Motherright i. 262, 281-284. Premature intercourse ii. 268. Puberty rites i. 95. Sacred tree i. 44. Visiting husbands ii. 23
- Contact of magical substance, fecundation by i. 17
- Corpses, portions of, cure barrenness i. 13, 15, 75, 77
See Relics
- Cosmogonic myths i. 2, 74, 245 n; ii. 280
- Courland. Marriage customs i. 104
- Courtship, nocturnal. Europe ii. 20 n. Moluccas ii. 31. North America ii. 66, 85, 89, 90
- Cow. * Flesh or milk given to procure offspring i. 34, 61, 62
- Creation Legend of Batutsi i. 143. Of Yakuts ii. 180
See Cosmogonic Myths
- Creeks. Premature marriages ii. 272
- Creole story i. 161 n
- Crows. Licentiousness ii. 232. Sacred Spring i. 67 n
- Cuchulainn. Birth i. 9. Re-birth i. 196. Visit to Maive ii. 132
- Cupid and Psyche ii. 8
- Curse, power of i. 28
- Cyrus i. 11 n
- DAGHESTAN. Blood-feud on wife-murder i. 273
- Dahome—see Ewhe
- Dakota—see Sioux
- Damascus. Impregnation by wish i. 27
- Danae i. 17, 25
- Danâkil. Re-birth i. 232
- Dar-For. Marriage customs ii. 59
- Dinkas. Adultery i. 313. Divorce i. 314. Marriage customs i. 314; ii. 59. Paternity i. 313, 315
- Dionysus i. 15
- Divination to name child i. 199, 205, 206, 207, 211, 212, 213, 224

- Divorce i. 267, 288, 290, 304, 305, 314, 322 n. 324; ii. 4, 21, 30, 33, 38, 43, 61, 66, 69, 72, 76, 78, 83, 84, 104, 106, 108, 120, 124, 126, 128, 129, 138, 139, 140, 142, 152, 154, 156, 158, 170, 173, 175, 178, 183, 186, 194, 204, 205, 212, 215, 218, 220, 233, 242 n
- Drinking, pregnancy from i. 4, 12, 13, 33, 38, 39, 62, 63-73, 75, 114
- Druids i. 32
- Druses. Sexual morality ii. 223 n
- Dyaks—see Borneo
- EAR, conception by i. 20, 149, 151
- Easter customs i. 107
- Easter Island. Premature marriages ii. 262
- Easter-smack i. 107
- East Indian Islands—see Borneo, Celebes, Engano, Java, Moluccas, Nias, Papua, Sumatra
- Eating or drinking, pregnancy from i. 4-17, 32-73, 75
- Edeeyah. See Fernando Po
- Eggs. Marriage customs i. 58-60. Rites to procure children i. 57-61. Shells, treading on i. 112
- Egypt, Ancient. Apis, conception of i. 26. Gods, identity of father and son i. 197. Ibis, impregnation of i. 151. Marriage customs ii. 20 n. Prostitution, sacred ii. 263. Re-birth i. 205. Soul, composite i. 203, 204. Transformation after death i. 171. Two Brothers, story of the i. 13
See Osiris
- Egypt, Modern. Premature marriages ii. 264. Rites to obtain children i. 47, 69 n, 75, 131
- Engano. Licentiousness ii. 259. Marriage customs ii. 33
- England. Broomstick or pail, stepping over i. 133, 134. Cattle buried under fruit-trees i. 163 n. Children, absence of in pre-historic graves i. 228 n. Children, naming i. 225. Children, rites to procure i. 56, 129. Cradle, rocking empty i. 142. Game of Old Roger i. 159. Grave, planting roses on i. 160. Marriage customs i. 109, 133. Peahens, fecundation of i. 151. Proverbial expressions i. 70, 113. Rain at weddings i. 89. Sacred wells and springs i. 65. Transformation after death i. 187, 188
See Anglo-Saxons
- Eskimo. Barrenness, prescription against i. 115, 147. Eggs forbidden to girls i. 57. Festivals for the dead i. 215; ii. 146. Licentious customs ii. 140-147. Marriage customs ii. 77, 139, 271. Names, influence of i. 214; ii. 146. Polyandry ii. 142. Puberty rites i. 93. Re-birth i. 214, 218
- Esthonia. Premature intercourse ii. 257
- Etáin, wife of Cormac King of Ulaid i. 9
- Ethiopic tale of Supernatural Birth i. 7
- Etruscans. Licentiousness ii. 136
- Ewehe. Children, origin of ii. 279. Children, rites to obtain i. 86. Children, sold or pawned ii. 99 n. Metempsychosis i. 172. Organisation i. 285. Re-birth i. 201. Sexual morality ii. 120, 219. Soul, composite i. 201
See Togoland
- Eye. Impregnation by glance i. 26, 27, 148
- FANTI—see Gold Coast
- Fates. Hungarian Gipsy belief i. 48, 72. Aphrodite eldest of, Athens i. 130
- Father and son combat i. 270-273; ii. 64, 97-8
- Fatherright. Described as ownership of children ii. 100 n. Fosters indifference to paternity ii. 246. Rise of ii. 1-100. Review of evidence ii. 92-100

- Fernando Po. Marriage customs ii. 23, 59
- Fezzan. Prescription for sterility i. 54
- Fiji. Banana planted on child's grave i. 162. Children, rite to obtain i. 39. Father responsible for child's death i. 279 n. Licentious customs ii. 149. Maternal uncle i. 291
- Finchale Church i. 129
- Fir as fecundator i. 103, 104
- Fire. Bonfires i. 98. Conception by spark i. 18. Oven, warm, cures barrenness i. 98
- Fish, Agent in Supernatural Birth i. 8. Conceive by mouth i. 151. Swallowing promotes conception i. 48, 49, 50, 51. Marriage ceremonies i. 51
- Fishes, King of the, *märchen* i. 8
- Flesh-meat, fecundation by, i. 9, 53-57
- Flowers given for barrenness i, 35
- Fo-hi, founder of Chinese Empire i. 5
- Foot, conception by i. 19, 112
- Footprint. Conception by i. 19. Of Saint Remacle i. 64
- Formosa. Marriage customs ii. 12
- Foxes—see Musquakies
- France. Amulets i. 118. Carrion buried under tree i. 163 n. Churches, rites at i. 125, 126, 136. Graves, plants growing on i. 159. Hedgehog, treading on i. 112. Marriage superstition i. 89. Priapian statues and connected rites i. 63, 125. Proverbial expression i. 70. Rude stone monuments rocks and trees, rites at i. 125, 126, 127-129, 130 n. Wells and springs i. 65, 79, 80
- Frazer, Dr. J. G. On bonfire rites i. 100. On the Lupercal i. 102. On Midsummer Day rites ii. 192. On the sexual organisation of Pelew Islands ii. 179 n
- Friuli. Marriage custom i. 41
- Fruit or herb, fecundation by i. 4-6, 10, 13, 17, 32-41, 81
- Funeral customs. Children i. 221, 226, 227, 228, 231 n. Danakil i. 232. House-burial i. 229 n. 233 n. Tacullies i. 220
- GABOON. Husband not responsible for wife i. 275
- Galelarese beliefs as to twins i. 37
- Galicia. Bathing for barrenness i. 77. Eggs i. 61
- Gallas. Aloe planted on grave i. 162. Wife's illegitimate child, legal child of husband i. 322
- Gallinomero. Metempsychosis i. 185
- Ganguellas. Husband pays compensation on wife's death i. 276
- Garamantæ. Sexual relations ii. 131 n
- Garmanes. Children procured by charms i. 119 n
- Genghis Khan i. 26
- Germany. Amulets i. 118, 122. Barrenness, drinks for i. 39, 67. Bonfires i. 98. Bride must not give away shoes i. 116. Burial of foal i. 163. Child, naming i. 225. Children, sundry rites to procure i. 113. Eggshell, treading on i. 112. Girls refrain from drink after sour kraut i. 67. Marriage customs i. 104, 109. Peasant Customals i. 323. Pregnant woman, influence on trees i. 41 n. Sacred trees, children come from i. 42. Sacred wells and springs i. 66, 78. Shrovetide, striking women i. 103, 107. Transformation after death i. 166. Twins i. 37
- See Pomerania
- Gilyaks. Soul and future life i. 179
- Gindanes. Licentiousness ii. 131
- Gipsies. Amulets i. 118. Barren women, practices by i. 48, 57, 68, 71, 73, 75, 233. Boy-root,

- gathering i. 46. Father, position of i. 264. Marriage customs i. 109, 264; ii. 20. Supernatural Birth i. 12
- Gold. Premature marriages ii. 257
- Gold Coast. Children, right to pledge i. 278, 286. Children, rites to obtain i. 137. Fanti fathers i. 263, 286. Metempsychosis i. 172. Re-birth i, 200. Soul, composite i. 201. Tshis, sexual morality ii. 119
See Negroes
- Greece, Ancient. Death rite, i. 177 n. Hero, worship of i. 169 n. Marriage customs i. 41. Springs and streams giving fertility i. 83. Thesmophoria i. 102 n. Ulysses' marriage ii. 19
- Athens. Children of same father allowed to marry i. 265. Marriage customs i. 108. Rocks, rites at i. 130. Sexual relations i. 322; ii. 134 n
- Sparta. Marriage customs ii. 18. Sexual relations i. 322; ii. 134
- Greece, Modern. Impregnation by wish i. 28. Marriage customs, Kythnos ii. 19. Transformation, ballad, Lesbos i. 158
- Groot, Dr. J. J. M. De, i. 163
- Guanches. Sexual morality ii. 123
- Guiana—See Arawáks, Macusis
- Guinea. Re-birth i. 199. See Negroes
- HAIDA. Exogamy i. 280. Marriage customs ii. 85. Maternal uncle ii. 208 n. Organisation i. 296; ii. 85, 86. Puberty rites i. 92. Reincarnation i. 186, 196, 219
See British Columbia
- Hand, conception by i. 19
- Hare's flesh for sterility i. 54
- Haussa Fulba. Sexual morality ii. 216
- Hawaii—see Sandwich Islands
- Hebrews. Abraham's marriage i. 265. Divorce ii. 5. Mother-right i. 265. Samson's marriage ii. 7. Tamar, David's daughter i. 265.
See Jews
- Hebrides. Sexual relations ii. 133 n
- Hedgehogs. i. 112
- Heliopolis. Licentiousness ii. 136
- Hephaistos i. 22
- Herero—see Bantu
- Hiawatha i. 22
- Hidatsa. Cavern of children i. 244. Licentiousness ii. 229, 232, 236
- Hindus, Ancient. Children, rites to procure i. 33, 61, 118, 123, 124, 141, 307. *Mahábhárata* i. 231 n; ii. 163. Marriage law ii. 254. Marriage rites i. 89, 132, 141. Reincarnation i. 182, 196
- Hindus, Modern. Aboriginal tribes, adoption of rites by ii. 155. Children, rites to procure i. 34, 51, 81, 141, 181, 208. Children, stillborn i. 209. Girl, firstborn, put to death i. 209. Husband and wife remarried i. 208. Husband's funeral rites on wife's pregnancy i. 208. *Jus Primæ Noctis* i. 304. Marriage law ii. 254. Marriage rites i. 208. Reincarnation i. 180, 209. Wife subjected to embraces of other men i. 307
See India
- Homa—see Soma
- Hopi (Moqui). Agriculture ii. 74. Marriage customs ii. 75. Metempsychosis i. 185. Sexual relations ii. 104. Supernatural Birth i. 4, 18
- Hospitality, Sexual, i. 313, 317; ii. 107, 121, 142, 148, 153, 155, 181, 187, 206, 208, 215, 218, 221, 222-224, 227, 223, 233, 234
- Hottentots. Heitsi-eibib i. 4. Premature marriages ii. 267. Puberty rite i. 88. Sexual morality ii. 212. Women, position of ii. 60

- Huitzilopochtli i. 17
- Hungary. Barrenness, rites to cure i. 40, 60, 67, 71, 73, 74, 75, 106. Twins i. 37
See Gipsies
- Hupa. Barren women, rite by i. 124 n. Marriage customs ii. 83. Supernatural Birth i. 27
- Hurons. Burial of babes i. 221, 232. Future life i. 186. Licentiousness ii. 105. Marriage customs ii. 66. Organisation i. 298. Visiting husbands ii. 65
- IBANI—see Niger
- Iceland. Naming child i. 224. Rain at weddings i. 89. Sterility, remedy for i. 62. Supernatural Birth i. 7. Transformation after death i. 157, 158
- Ignorance, Physiological, on conception ii. 249-281. On venereal disease ii. 277 n
- India. Amulets i. 118. Beena marriage ii. 41 n. Chastity test i. 135. Children, burial of (Panjab) i. 227, (Madras) 231 n. Children, rites to obtain i. 47, 50, 69, 71, 76, 80-82, 90, 116, 123, 124, 229, 230. Illatom, custom of ii. 41 n. *Játaka* i. 18, 193, 307. Licentiousness i. 304; ii. 156-160, 166 n, 167, 169. *Mahá-bhárata* i. 231 n; ii. 163. Marriage customs i. 109, 208; ii. 15, 40, 41, 46, 58, 161, 165, 167, 168 n. Phallic rites i. 123, 124, 306. Polyandry ii. 158, 161-164, 165. Puberty rites i. 93, 94. Re-birth and naming child i. 205-208. Reincarnation (Buddhist story) i. 193. Rukmini, death and transformation of i. 160. Supernatural Birth i. 5, 6, 11, 12, 18, 26, 49, 231 n
- Dosádh. Festival i. 35
- Gonds. Bringing back soul i. 50
- Khonds. Multiple souls i. 206
See Assam, Bhisma, Balochis, Kafirs, Khasis, Kols, Krishna, Ladak, Manipur, *Manu*, Mikirs, Nambutiri, Nâyars, Oraons, Parsees, Rájá Rasálú, Santals Sikkim, Siva,, Todas, Vishnu, Visvamitra
- Ingush. Tale of Chopá i. 271. Taboo of mother-in-law ii. 17
- Insects &c., taken to procure offspring i. 47
- Iowa—see Sioux
- Ireland. Apple-tree on grave i. 160 n. Licentiousness of Ancient ii. 132. Marriage customs of Ancient ii. 132. Supernatural Birth i. 9
See Conall Cernach, Conchobar, Cuchulainn, Saints.
- Iroquois. Child, seclusion of i. 98 n. Licentiousness ii. 105. Marriage customs ii. 66. Matrimonial life ii. 65, 67. Organisation i. 298; ii. 67. Re-birth and transformation i. 220. Souls multiple i. 220
See Cherokees
- Italy. Amulets i. 21. Ancient, burial of children i. 228. Barrenness, medicines for i. 36, 54. Children, other rites to procure i. 113, 114. Children, where found i. 42. Naming child i. 225. Proverbial expression i. 70. Re-birth i. 225 n. Sicilian tale of magical ox i. 163
See Friuli, Palermo, Perugia, Rome, Siena
- Ivory Coast. Adultery and paternity i. 318, 319; ii. 120. Dolls i. 142. Licentiousness ii. 120. Organisation of family i. 277, 278 n., 284
See Negroes, Niger
- JARROW Church i. 129
- Ja-Luo. Belief as to conception i. 98
- Japan. Children, medicine to obtain i. 39. Children of same father allowed to marry i. 265. Children, rites to obtain i. 113, 135, 147. De-

- scent originally matrilineal ii. 14. Eggshells i. 112. Ghost, word for i. 248. Marriage customs ii. 14. Phallic deities, festival i. 108. Sun, impregnation by i. 25. Transformation after death i. 178
- Játaka—see India
- Java. Child, burial of i. 227. Children, fish eaten to procure i. 49. Cult of cannon i. 123. Marriage customs i. 58
- Jealousy, marital i. 302; ii. 101-248
- Jesus Christ. Mediæval fancies respecting birth i. 19-21. Mohammedan tradition of birth i. 21. Origen's argument for Virgin Birth i. 151
- Jevon, Prof. F. B. i. 15
- Jews. Barren women, prescriptions for i. 67, 70, 77, 78, 84. Childbirth custom i. 40 n. Mandrake i. 45. Marriage rites i. 51, 58, 109. Sons, prescription to procure i. 52
See Hebrews
- Jupiter i. 15
- KABYLES. Rites to obtain children i. 131
- Kafirs of the Hindu-Kush. Licentiousness i. 303. Marriage customs ii. 58. Naming child i. 207
- Kaffirs—see Bantu
- Kalewala i. 22
- Kamtchadals. Children, practices to procure i. 71. Licentiousness ii. 183. Marriage customs ii. 42
- Kansa. Medicine to produce pregnancy i. 39. Sexual morality ii. 232
- Kathâkoça i. 11
- Kavirondo. Burial of child i. 227. All children of wife belong to husband i. 318
- Khasis. Divorce ii. 129. Matrimonial relations ii. 9, 10
- Kich—see Nilotic Tribes
- Kickapoos—see Algonkins
- Kinship. Terms in lower culture i. 293; ii. 112. Originally traced through one parent only i. 300. Examination of reasons for tracing through mother i. 300-325. Change of reckoning ii. 2, 92-100
See Motherright
- Kiowa. Marriage customs ii. 70
- Kirghiz. Birth of Genghis Khan i. 26. Tree growing on grave i. 158
- Black K. Supernatural Birth i. 23
- Kara K. rites practised by barren women i. 84, 113
- Kordofan. Licentiousness ii. 199
- Korea. Amulets i. 119 n
- Koran. Magical use of chapters i. 59, 68
- Koryaks. Marriage customs ii. 43. Naming child i. 212. Re-birth i. 212. Supernatural Birth i. 11. Wife, subjecting, to embrace of stranger ii. 181
- Krishna i. 160
- Krumirs. Hospitality rite ii. 221
- Kumiks. Blood-feud on murder of half-brother i. 273
- Kunâma. Blood-feud, incidence of i. 274. Father and uncle i. 287
- Kurdistan—see Armenia
- Kwakiutl. Birth customs i. 113, 234. Marriage customs ii. 88. Pregnancy from chewing gum i. 38. Sexual morality ii. 234. Sun, impregnation by i. 25. Twins i. 190
- Kythnos—see Greece
- LADAK. Metempsychosis i. 185
- Ladrone Islands. Sexual morality ii. 125
- Lapps. Naming and change of name i. 224
- Lenape. Supernatural Birth i. 13
- Lent. Bonfires, first Sunday i. 99
- Levirate i. 310, 314, 315, 324; ii. 187

- Lillooet. Marriage customs ii. 84. Puberty rites i. 92. Shamans cause fecundity i. 139 n. Twins i. 190
- Linga—see Phallic
- Loango. Maternal uncle i. 281. Puberty rites i. 95
See Congo
- Lourdes water, specific for barrenness i. 66
- Lucky Fool—see Wish
- Lupercal i. 100-106
- Luzon. Bontoc Igorots. Marriage customs ii. 26. Naming child i. 223. Igorots and Tagbanúa. Premature marriages ii. 262
- Luxemburg. Saint Lucia's arm-chair i. 130
- MABINOION i. 247, 287 n
- Macusis. Marriage customs ii. 63
- Madagascar. Barren women, rites by i. 67, 72, 124. Licentiousness ii. 153-155. Premature marriages ii. 263. Social organisation i. 324. Transformation after death i. 173
- Maghribin Saint i. 321
- Magyar—see Hungary
- Mahábhárata—see India
- Maidu. Barren women, rite by i. 124. Burial of stillborn child i. 228. Cosmogonic legend i. 245 n. Licentiousness ii. 232. Premature marriages ii. 271. Oankoitupéh, legend of i. 195. Organisation and marriage customs ii. 82. Transformation after death i. 166
- Malay Peninsula. Marriage customs (Selangor and Patani States) ii. 45. Metempsychosis i. 177. Polyandry (Sakai) ii. 171 n
See Besisi, Semang
- Man, Isle of. St. Maughold's well i. 66, 129
- Mana i. 28
- Manchu. Origin of dynasty i. 5. Wedding customs i. 41 n. 134
- Mandans—see Sioux
- Mandrake i. 44-46, 119
- Manioc, origin of i. 166, 229
- Manipur. Ancestor as snake i. 178. Bone-money paid on wife's death i. 278
- Mannhardt, W. on Bonfires i. 100. On the Lupercal i. 102. On Midsummer Day ii. 192
- Manu, Laws of i. 182, 196, 208, 308
- Maori. Birth customs i. 128, 212. Father responsible for child's death i. 279. Marriage customs ii. 39. Sexual morality ii. 172
- Märchen defined i. 2
- Mares. Impregnated by wind i. 149. Milk given to barren women i. 55, 62. Rites to impregnate i. 33 n
- Marquesas Islands. Marriage customs ii. 176. Puberty rites ii. 176. Supernatural Birth i. 26
- Marriage customs. Beena marriage ii. 11, 13, 14, 19, 20, 24, 27, 30-36, 38, 41-43, 51, 53, 55, 60-63, 67-72, 76, 77. Boy seated on bride's lap i. 141. Bride beaten i. 53; seated on bull's-hide i. 132; on man's coat i. 133; in St. Bede's Chair i. 129. Cabbages, planting of i. 42. Eggs, use of i. 58-60. Fir, use of i. 104. Food, ritual i. 39, 41, 42, 53. Grain, throwing i. 109. Old shoes i. 109. Rain i. 89. Rosemary i. 33. Sun, exposure to i. 89. Temporary marriages ii. 5. Visiting husbands ii. 7-27, 61
- Marshall Islands. Blood-feud, settling i. 226. Licentiousness ii. 124. Motherright i. 278. Premature intercourse (Yaluit) ii. 262
- Masai. Barrenness, prescriptions against i. 68, 110, 120. Death rites and transformation after death i. 171. Licentiousness ii. 193. Premature intercourse ii. 264

- Massagetai. Sexual morality ii. 130
- Masur women, prescription against barrenness i. 68
- Mbondemos. Premature marriages ii. 269.
- Melanesia. Chastity, value of ii. 148. Marriage customs (Rotuma) ii. 36. Sexual morality ii. 148-151
See Banks Islands, Fiji, New Caledonia, New Hebrides, Papua, Solomon Islands, Sulkas
- Menangkabau Malays. Matrimonial relations ii. 10. Supernatural Birth i. 6
- Menstruation, cause of ii. 263, 273
- Merine. Sexual morality ii. 200
- Mexico. Barrenness, cures for i. 40, 80, 146. Calabash-tree and tobacco, origin of i. 166. Mankind, origin of i. 74. Naming child i. 225. Sexual relations of Tarahumare ii. 239
- Middle Ages. Fancies respecting birth of Jesus Christ i. 19-21. Nostrums to obtain children i. 55. Peasant Customals (Germany) i. 323
- Midsummer Day rites i. 99; ii. 191
- Mikirs. Marriage customs ii. 46 n. Re-birth i. 212
- Milk against sterility i. 55, 62, 118, 120. Human i. 70
- Minahassa—see Celebes
- Mistletoe i. 32
- Mohammedan law. Kinship i. 287, 321. Marriage ii. 5, 6. Paternity i. 312, 321
- Mojave. Supernatural Birth i. 24
- Moluccas. Children, rites to procure i. 60, 85, 135, 139. Death in child-bed, rites i. 173. Licentious festivals ii. 126, 127. Marriage customs ii. 27-33. Sexual morality ii. 126, 138, 259. Star, conception by i. 98. Supernatural Birth i. 22, 98. Tree of Sorrow i. 160. Tree planted on grave i. 162. Transformation after death i. 174
- Monbuttu. Sexual morality ii. 200
- Montezuma i. 24
- Moon, fecundation by i. 26, 98
- Moquis—see Hopi
- Mordvins. Barren women, rites by i. 83. Licentiousness ii. 186. Marriage custom i. 58
- Morocco. Amulets i. 119. Barren women bathe i. 80
- Mortlock Islands. Marriage customs ii. 36. Motherright and local exogamy i. 269
- Mosquito Indians. Sexual morality ii. 239
- Mother-in-law taboo ii. 93
- Motherright i. 253-325; ii. 1-3. Bloodfeud in i. 272-275. Children of same father by different mothers not akin i. 264, 265. Father, alien position of i. 262-300; ii. 1. Father and son combat i. 269. Fatherright, transition to ii. 2, 92-100, 139. Husband and father, responsibility of i. 275-279. Paternity, uncertainty of, as reason for i. 300-325. Potestas in i. 281-300
- Mouth, conception by i. 12, 151. See Drinking, Eating
- Muetter i. 137
- Murray Islands—see Torres Straits
- Musquakies. Children, burial of i. 226, 232. Marriage customs ii. 68. Sexual relations (Foxes) ii. 233
- Myddfai, Physicians of i. 32
- NAMBÚTIRI Brahmans. Illatom, custom of ii. 41 n. Marriage rules i. 266. Nâyars, relations with i. 267, 269
- Naming child after ancestor i. 205-207, 211-213, 215, 217, 223-226. After saint i. 223 n

- Nandi. Circumcision rites i.
 110 n. Licentiousness ii.
 195 n. Premature intercourse
 ii. 265
- Nasamones. Marriage customs,
 sexual morality ii. 130
- Naskopies—see Algonkins
- Natchez ii. 69 n. Licentiousness
 ii. 106
- Nauru Island. Marriage customs
 ii. 38. Polyandry, licence ii.
 124
- Nâyars. Inheritance, rules of i.
 300. *Káranavan*, powers of
 i. 288. Social organisation i. 266
- Negroes. Adultery i. 319. Child-
 ren, sale of, by wife to
 husband ii. 99. Licentious-
 ness ii. 118, 119, 217, 218, 220.
 Life after death i. 200. Me-
 tempsychosis i. 172. Prema-
 ture intercourse and mar-
 riage ii. 269, 271. Re-birth i.
 200. Surinam, Bush Negroes
 of i. 286.
 See Ashanti, Calabar,
 Ewhe, Gaboon, Gold Coast,
 Ivory Coast, Niger, Senegal,
 Slave Coast
- Nenenot—see Algonkins
- Nestorians. Supernatural Birth
 i. 16
- Netherlands. Sexual hospitality
 i. 313
- New Britain. Premature mar-
 riages ii. 261 n
- New Caledonia. Barrenness,
 prescriptions against i. 147 n.
 Fertility of soil, rite to pro-
 duce i. 111 n. Premature
 intercourse ii. 261
- New England. Rocking empty
 cradle i. 142
- New Guinea—see Papua
- New Hebrides. Motherright i.
 270, 291. Premature mar-
 riages ii. 261. Sexual morality
 ii. 149
 See Aurora, Melanesia
- New Pomerania—see Papua,
 Sulkas
- New York. Rocking empty cradle
 i. 142
- Niam-niams. Sexual morality ii.
 202
- Nias. Life after death i. 176
- Niger, Nigeria. Amulets i. 120.
 Burial of children i. 226 n.
 Marriage customs i. 320; ii.
 24. Metempsychosis i. 172.
 Re-birth, i. 201 n
 See Negroes
- Nilotic tribes. Burial i. 233 n.
 Children, rites to obtain
 (Kich) i. 87 n. Licentiousness
 ii. 198, 199
 See Bari, Dinkas, Mon-
 buttu, Niam-niams
- Norway. Naming child i. 224.
 See Scandinavia
- Ntlakápamux—see British Co-
 lumbia
- Nubia. Premature marriages ii.
 264
- OJIBWAYS. Adultery ii. 231 n.
 Shape-shifting ii. 235 n
- Oráons. Licentious festival ii.
 159. Marriage rites i. 109
- Oromó. Rites by barren women
 i. 85
- Orpheus and Eurydice, Cali-
 fornian tale i. 222
- Osages Licentiousness ii. 233
- Oriris, as Bata i. 14 n. As corn
 &c. i. 167
- Ossetes. Marriage customs ii. 17.
 Sexual morality ii. 187
- PALERMO. Sacred spring i. 66
- Palestine, Ancient. Burial of
 children i. 228. Modern.
 Rites by barren women i. 67,
 84, 131
- Palm Sunday customs i. 107
- Panjab—see Hindus, India
- Papua. Maternal uncle i. 289.
 Motherright i. 265, 271, 279;
 ii. 36, 123. Naming child i.
 226. Sexual morality ii. 123,
 124. Supernatural Birth i. 18.
- Bismarck Archipelago. Marital
 jealousy i. 302. Premature
 marriages ii. 261.
 See Sulkas

- Papua. Tami Islands. Father responsible for child's death i. 279. Premature intercourse ii. 261.
- Paraguay. Sexual relations ii. 240. Marriage customs (Chaco) i. 90. Premature marriage (Guatos) ii. 272
- Parsees. Marriage rite i. 89
- Parsley i. 41, 42
- Parthenogenesis i. 31
- Paternity. Indifference to ii. 243, 249, 283. Legal not dependent on physical i. 304-325. Physical not understood i. 254; ii. 250-281. Social organisation retarded consideration of i. 256; ii. 285
- Pawnees. Bear re-born as child i. 189. Marriage customs ii. 70
- Arikara. Licentiousness ii. 229
- Skidi. Curative roots i. 47 n. Impregnation by meteor i. 26
- Pearl. Fecundation by i. 11
- Perseus i. 17
- Persia, Ancient. Soma-juice for barrenness i. 33. Supernatural Birth i. 12, 23. Zoroaster, birth of i. 12
- Persia, Modern. Amulet i. 119. Marriage rite i. 89
- Perugia. Cure for barrenness i. 66
- Peru, Ancient. Cavinna, origin of, from lake i. 222. Licentious festival ii. 241. Supernatural Birth i. 12
- Phallic amulets i. 121. Images i. 63, 123, 148. Worship i. 122, 148
- Philip, Breton legend of St. i. 16
- Picts. Sexual relations ii. 132
- Pimas. Supernatural Birth i. 24
- Pliny on Druids i. 32. Impregnation of partridges and mares i. 149. Mandrake i. 45. Phoenix i. 151
- Poggi Islands. Licentiousness ii. 128
- Poland. Children, blood drunk to procure i. 70. Transformation after death, i. 188
- Polyandry ii. 104 n. 109-112, 119, 123, 124, 130, 131, 134, 142, 158, 161-167, 171 n. 173 n. 174, 176, 181, 186
- Pomerania. Prescriptions for barrenness i. 62, 70
- Porto Rico. *Jus primæ noctis* ii. 108
- Potestas in Motherright i. 264, 281-300; ii. 120, 123, 137, 139, 150
- Potlatch ii. 88
- Priapus, Priapian statues—see Phallic
- Proserpine i. 15
- Prussians, Ancient. Marriage rite i. 53
- Pshavs. Licentious festival ii. 188
- Puberty. Rites (Boys) i. 110, 287; ii. 123, 193, 209, 225, 226, 227, 228. (Girls) i. 88, 90-98, 110; ii. 109, 121, 123, 176, 193, 196, 209, 255, 259, 266. Sexual intercourse before ii. 113, 116, 138, 172, 176, 193, 254-272
- Pueblo peoples. Organisation ii. 71. Supernatural Birth i. 4, 18, 24, 25
See Hopi, Sia, Zuñi
- QUEENSLAND—see Australia
- Quetzalcoatl i. 11, 21
- Quiche. Supernatural Birth i. 19
- RAIN, pregnancy by i. 24, 88
- Rájá Rasálú i. 5, 6
- Re-birth. Belief in i. 50, 195-244
Buddhist doctrine of i. 192.
Children, re-birth of ancestors i. 195-209, 211-213, 218-226; ii. 279. Or of members of same family i. 209-211, 221; ii. 280. Rites to obtain i. 69, 71, 75-77, 229-233. Lower animals and vegetables, re-born as human beings i. 189. Stories i. 11, 15, 156, 195, 196, 210, 218, 222, 231 n
- Reinach, M. Salomon i. 103
- Relics, fecundation by. Of saints and martyrs i. 16, 76. Of executed criminals i. 76
See Corpses

- Rhys, Sir John, i. 248
- Rice eaten by barren women i. 35
- Rome, Ancient. Marriage customs
i. 124, 133; ii. 258
See Cæculus, Lupercal, Sa-
bines, Servius Tullius
- Rosemary i. 33, 103, 107
- Rue i. 33 n
- Rügen. Rite to procure children
i. 67
- Russia. Barrenness, cures for i.
62, 70. Child, burial of still-
born i. 228. Licentiousness ii.
188, 191. Marriage customs
(ancient) ii. 189, 191; (modern)
i. 104, 109, 132-3. Midsummer
Day customs ii. 191. Palm
Sunday custom, i. 107
See Courland, Esthonia,
Mordvins, Samoyeds, Slavs,
Votiaks
- SABINES, Rape of the i. 105; ii.
226
- Sagas defined i. 2
- Saints. Celtic i. 10, 12. Ethiopic
i. 7. Invoked for and givers
of offspring i. 18, 36, 63, 64,
65, 76, 78, 83, 116, 125, 126,
127, 129, 130, 131, 136. Magh-
ribin i. 321. Tree on grave of
i. 158
- Salish—see British Columbia
- Saliva, conception by i. 12, 68, 73,
74. Proverbial expression i.
70
- Samoa. Birth custom i. 213.
Sexual morality ii. 175. Snipe
fecundated by wind i. 22.
Woman fecundated by sun i.
25
- Samoyeds. Premature marriages
ii. 258
- Sandwich Islands. Licentiousness
ii. 174. Premature marriages
ii. 263.
- Santals. Life after death i. 245.
Marriage custom ii. 41. Sexual
morality ii. 157
See India
- Saoshyant, i. 23
- Sardinia. Cures for barrenness i.
67
- Saxons, Transylvanian. Prescrip-
tions for barrenness i. 50, 54,
67, 77
- Scandinavians, Ancient. Doctrine
of souls i. 198 n. Eric Ha-
konsson i. 7. Sexual relations
ii. 133. Supernatural Birth i. 7
See Iceland
- Scotland. Women bathe in sacred
wells, &c. i. 78, 79. Trans-
formation after death i. 187
See Hebrides, Picts
- Sea-bathing for barrenness i. 67
- Semang. Birth ceremonies and
beliefs i. 55. Metempsychosis
i. 177
- Semele i. 15
- Semen imbibed or inhaled i. 12,
69, 151
- Seminoles, Marriage customs ii.
69
- Senecas—see Iroquois
- Senegal—see Negroes
- Serbs. Prescriptions for barren
women i. 39, 71, 83, 106
- Seri. Ignorance of paternity ii.
279. Marriage customs ii. 80.
Organisation ii. 78
- Servius Tullius i. 27
- Shan. Marriage custom i. 59
- Shêduir Van, Mongolian tale of i.
249
- Shekiani. Premature marriages
ii. 268
- Shih-King i. 19, 20 n
- Shoshones. Lending wives ii.
230
- Shrovetide rites i. 98, 103
- Sia. Licentiousness ii. 103.
Marriage customs ii. 76.
Medicine to cause pregnancy
i. 38. Supernatural Birth i. 4
- Siam. Impregnation by sun i. 25
- Siberia. Brides eat fruit i. 39.
Capercaillie, belief as to i.
152. Turks' marriage rite i.
89
See Buryats, Chukchi,
Gilyaks, Kirghiz, Koryaks,
Tunguz
- Siena. Palazzo Pubblico i. 20.
Children where found i. 42
- Signatures, doctrine of i. 45

- Sikkim. Barrenness, rite to cure i. 116. Eggs, an offer of marriage i. 59
- Simulation, rite to obtain children i. 139-147
- Sioux. Buffalo dance (Mandans) ii. 235. Licentiousness ii. 229; (Mandans) ii. 229, 231, 235. Marriage customs ii, 71. More souls than one i. 221. Organisation i. 299. Re-birth i. 221. Twins (Tetons) i. 222
See Crows, Hidatsa, Kansa
- Siva i. 26, 123. See India
- Slave Coast. Vow to obtain children i. 138
See Ewhe, Negroes, Yoruba
- Slavs. Child, burial of i. 228. Children, practices to obtain i. 39, 47, 54 n. 68 70, 71, 83, 106, 114, 233. Marriage customs i. 113 n. Sexual morality ii. 188-192
See Bohemia, Russia, Serbs
- Society Islands. Licentiousness ii. 175. Transformation after death i. 184
- Solomon Islands. Metempsychosis i. 182. Sexual morality ii. 148
See Melanesia
- Soma given to barren woman i. 33
- Sommonocodon, Siamese deity i. 25
- Son, Father re-born in i. 195-199
- Soul, composite i. 201-206, 215, 220, 221
- Spokanes. Marriage customs ii. 84
- Springs, Sacred—see Wells
- Star, fecundation by i. 12, 98
- Stones, fecundation by 1, 4, 11, 119, 121
- Stones, Standing and Rocks, rites at to procure children i. 78, 126, 127, 128, 129, 135
- Streams that procure fecundity i. 79, 83, 84, 130
- Styria. Prescriptions for barrenness i. 39, 62
- Suahili. Maternal uncle i. 288. Sexual morality ii. 204
- Sulkas. Marriage custom i. 96. Rite to cause conception i. 112
See Papua
- Sumatra. Burial of child i. 227. Engano, belief concerning i. 150. Husband and wife rarely dwell together (Orang Mama) i. 264. Maternal uncle i. 289. Marriage customs i. 59; ii. 51-57. Motherright, decay of ii. 98, 99. Premature marriages (Achehnese) ii. 259
- Sun. Impregnation by i. 25, 89. Puberty customs in relation to i. 90-98
- Supernatural Birth. Stories i. 1-29. World-wide and not derived from one centre i. 28. Relation between stories and magical practices i. 30. Origin of in physiological ignorance i. 253; ii. 281
- Sweden. Marriage custom i. 141
- Switzerland. Jocular practice by women at vintage i. 148. Jocular tribunal on old maids i. 80 n
- Syntengs. Divorce ii. 129. Matrimonial relations ii. 8
- TAGALAS. Twins i. 37
- Takelma. Marriage customs ii. 83. Puberty rites i. 93
- Talaner Islands. Compensation for wife's adultery i. 278. Marriage customs ii. 33
- Taluti—see Society Islands
- Tamar and Amnon i. 265
- Tanah - Papua. Supernatural Birth i. 17
- Tartars. Marriage customs i. 89; ii. 17
- Taveta. Licentiousness ii. 196. Marriage customs ii. 197
- Teton—see Sioux
- Thliukit—see British Columbia
- Thompson Indians (Ntlakápa mux)—see British Columbia
- Tibet. Hat-choosing festival ii. 171. Polyandry ii. 164
- Timor. Marriage customs ii. 34, 57
- Tinneh—see Athapascans

- Tirol. Marriage ceremonies i. 58.
Oven, warm, cures barrenness i. 98
- Todas. Father, word for ii. 280.
Licentiousness ii. 158-160.
Polyandry ii. 158. Pregnancy rite ii. 158. Puberty rite ii. 255. Supernatural Birth i. 18
- Togoland. Pregnancy, duration of ii. 275 n. Underjaws of dead, material for children i. 246; ii. 279. See Eweh
- Tonga Islands. Sexual morality ii. 125
- Tonkin, tribes of. Adoption of children i. 148. Licentiousness ii. 170. Marriage customs ii. 48-51
- Torres Straits Islands. Children, women eat pigeons to obtain i. 56. Marriage customs ii. 37, 261. Maternal uncle i. 291. Metamorphosis after death i. 183, 189. Puberty customs i. 96
- Totemism and totemic clans i. 257. In Australia i. 237-239, 242
- Transference, doctrine of i. 73
- Transformation after death i. 13, 156-189, 234-236. Wide distribution and archaic character of belief i. 190. Relation between, and Transmigration i. 246-252
- Transmigration of Souls. Buddhist doctrine i. 192. Celtic doctrine i. 194. Relation between, and Transformation i. 246-252
- Transylvania—see Gipsy, Hungary, Saxons
- Trees, Sacred i. 42, 44, 113, 127, 128, 129, 161. Burying cattle &c., under trees i. 163 n. Planting trees on graves i. 161. Transformation into trees i. 158-168
- Troglodytæ. Licentiousness ii. 131
- Tuareg. Licentiousness ii. 220
- Tunguz. Sexual morality ii. 182
- Tunis. Rites to obtain children i. 130
- Tupis. Father takes new name on birth of son i. 209 n. Supernatural Birth i. 8
- Turcomans. Marriage customs ii. 16, 257
- Turkestan. Licentiousness ii. 186
- Turks—see Siberia
- Tusayan. Sacred spring i. 66
- Tuscany—see Italy
- Twins. Birth i. 113, 163. Legend of (Hopi) i. 5. Origin of i. 37, 55, 67, 119, 150, 190, 222
- UGANDA. Adultery ii. 198. Amulets i. 120. Children, naming i. 214 n. Husband fined on wife's death in childbed i. 275. King, rites on death of (Bahima) i. 170. Sexual morality ii. 198 n
See Ja-Luo, Kavirondo
- Ulysses' marriage ii. 16
- Ungava, Indians of. Premature marriages ii. 271. Sexual relations ii. 233, 234
- VÄINÄMÖINEN i. 22
- Virginia. Sexual morality ii. 107
- Virginity. Little value in lower culture i. 31. Valued by certain tribes i. 302; ii. 21, 119, 137, 258, 268. Growth in value ii. 93, 102, 243
- Vishnu i. 307
- Vishnu Purana i. 6
- Visiting husbands ii. 7, 11, 12, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 21, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 38, 48, 61, 65
- Visvâmitra i. 6
- Votiaks. Sexual morality ii. 187
- Votive offerings i. 137
- Vows for children i. 137
- WALES. *Galanas* and *savaad* i. 274. Rite at Whitchurch i. 135. Superstitions i. 51, 151
- Wanderobbo. Children, rites to obtain i. 87. Licentiousness ii. 195 n
- Wanyika. Maternal uncle i. 288
- Warehouse of children i. 242-245

- Warundi. Amulets i. 120
 Wayao—see Bantu
 Wells and springs giving fecundity
 i. 63-67, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84,
 136
 Wichita. Marriage customs ii. 70.
 Supernatural Birth i. 17
 Wind, impregnation by i. 22, 35,
 149
 Winnibago—see Sioux
 Wish, impregnation by i. 27, 52,
 117
 Wishosk. Impregnation by wish
 i. 27
 Wives. Exchange of ii. 66, 113,
 122, 142, 144, 146, 148, 171,
 195, 209, 220, 227, 228, 233,
 234, 242 n. Partnership in i.
 312; ii. 109, 130, 133 n. 138,
 145, 181
 See Polyandry
 Women, Isle of i. 35, 150
 Wyandots—see Iroquois
- YAKUTS. Creation legend ii. 180.
 Licentiousness ii. 179. Mar-
 riage customs ii. 15, 180
 Yana. Supernatural Birth i. 19 n
 Yap. Licentiousness ii. 177.
 Marriage customs ii. 38
- Yehl i. 4, 156
 Yezidis. Sexual morality ii. 223 n
 Ymir i. 2
 Yokuts. Life after death i. 185.
 Marriage customs ii. 84
 Yorubas. Children, rites to obtain
 i. 86. Fatherright i. 265 n.
 Metempsychosis i. 172. Re-
 birth of ancestor i. 199, 202.
 Sexual customs ii. 218
 Yu, Chinese Emperor i. 11
 Yurok. Marriage customs ii. 84
 Yurupari. Supernatural Birth i.
 23
- ZAGREUS i. 15
 Zanzibar. Heretical law of legiti-
 macy i. 321
 Záparos. Licentiousness ii. 107
 Zoroaster—see Persia
 Zulus. Supernatural Birth i. 23,
 72. Transformation after
 death i. 169
 See Bantu
 Zuñis. Family life ii. 73. Mar-
 riage customs ii. 72. Pre-
 mature marriages ii. 271.
 Sexual morality ii. 104. Super-
 natural Birth i. 25



**PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET**

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

